

*THE SECOND
GREAT WAR*



GEN. THE HON. SIR HAROLD ALEXANDER, G.C.B., D.S.O.

*Portrait by Capt. Neville Lewis; exhibited at the National Portrait Gallery, London, Summer 1943.
Reproduced by permission of the Government of South Africa*

THE SECOND GREAT WAR

A Standard History

Edited by

SIR JOHN HAMMERTON

Editor of *The Great War*, *World War 1914-18*, *Europe's Fight for Freedom*, etc.

Military Editor

Maj.-Gen. SIR CHARLES GWYNN, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.



Volume Six

Pages 2097—2588

Published by

THE WAVERLEY BOOK COMPANY LTD.

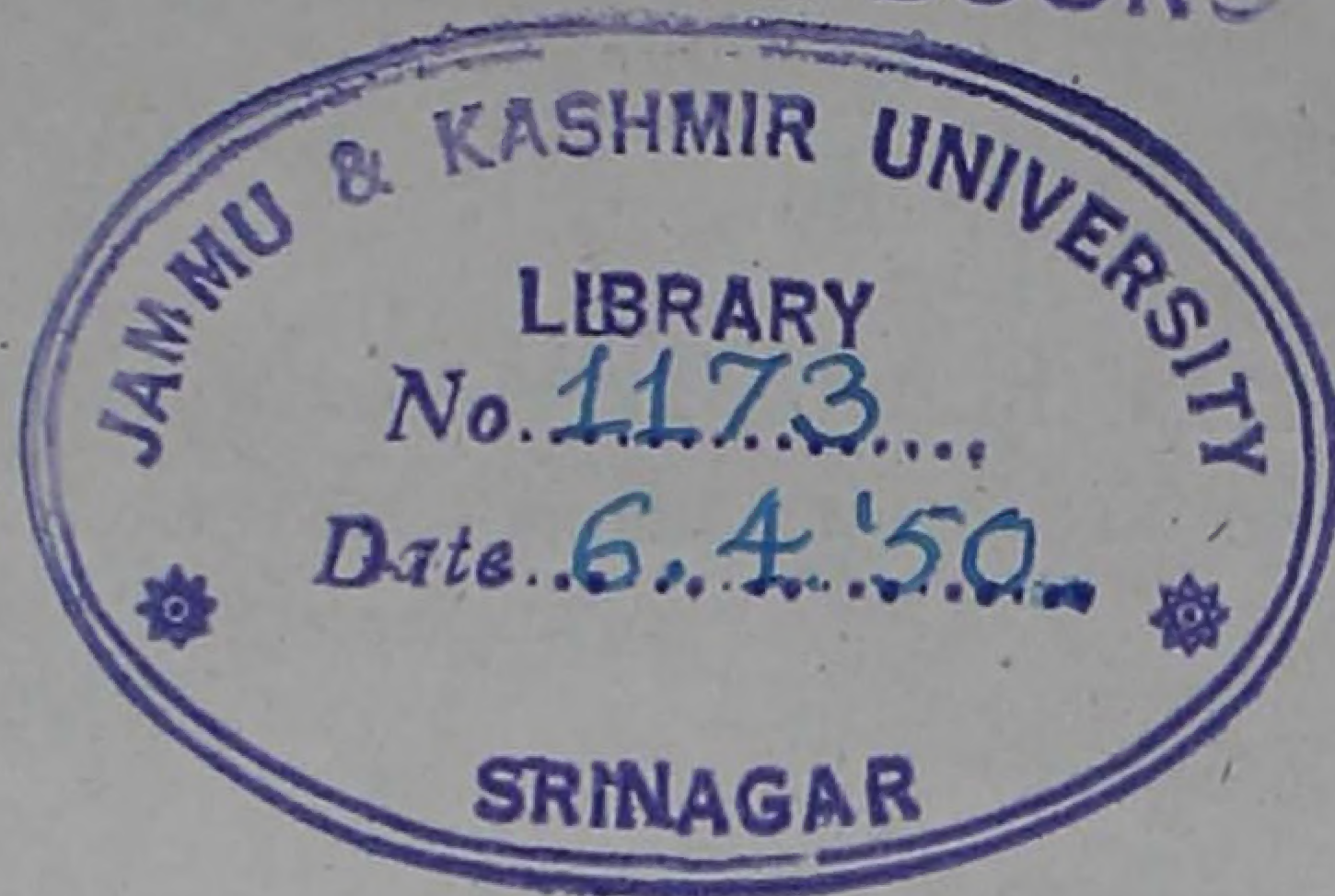
in association with

THE AMALGAMATED PRESS LTD.

Farringdon Street, London, E.C.4



REFERENCE BOOKS



St 82
Rshah

940.53
H 1793.6

12809

✓

CONTENTS OF VOLUME SIX

LIST OF CHAPTERS

211. *page* 2099
WAR COMES CLOSER TO AUSTRALIA: AFTER THE JAPANESE ONSLAUGHT
212. *page* 2109
TESTING TIME FOR THE HOME FRONT IN FIRST SIX MONTHS OF 1942
213. *page* 2117
BRITAIN'S NEW TACTICS IN AREA BOMBING, JANUARY-JUNE, 1942
214. *page* 2127
U-BOAT ATTACK SWITCHED TO THE WESTERN ATLANTIC
215. *page* 2141
SIX MONTHS OF GIGANTIC EFFORT IN THE UNITED STATES
216. *page* 2149
LATIN AMERICA: WAR GROUPINGS AND REACTIONS
217. *page* 2161
TWELVE MONTHS WHICH MARKED THE TURNING OF THE TIDE IN GERMANY
218. *page* 2169
NAZI-OCCUPIED EUROPE: DENMARK, NORWAY, BELGIUM AND HOLLAND
219. *page* 2181
VICHY FRANCE AND THE OCCUPIED REGION, JANUARY-JUNE, 1942
220. *page* 2189
FREE BELGIUM AND HOLLAND, FIGHTING FRANCE AND NORWAY
221. *page* 2195
CANADA, SOUTH AFRICA AND NEW ZEALAND PREPARE FOR THE OFFENSIVE
222. *page* 2204
POLITICAL TRENDS IN THE NEAR AND MIDDLE EAST
223. *page* 2216
DOMESTIC POLICIES IN INDIA DURING 1942
224. *page* 2225
LIBYAN CAMPAIGN: ROMMEL'S ADVANCE TO EL ALAMEIN
225. *page* 2239
CAMPAIGN IN MADAGASCAR, MAY-NOVEMBER, 1942
226. *page* 2251
BRITISH COMMANDO RAIDS OF 1942
227. *page* 2261
SUMMER CAMPAIGN IN RUSSIA, MAY-JULY, 1942
228. *page* 2269
WEST AFRICA'S VITAL ROLE IN 1942
229. *page* 2275
MALTA, GIBRALTAR AND CYPRUS
230. *page* 2287
CHINA IN THE RANKS OF THE UNITED NATIONS
231. *page* 2296
JAPAN IN 1942: TWELVE MONTHS' TOTAL WAR
232. *page* 2307
JAPAN'S OPERATIONS IN THE PACIFIC, FIRST HALF OF 1942
233. *page* 2317
AMERICA'S STRATEGY IN HER FIRST TWELVE MONTHS OF WAR
234. *page* 2327
HOME FRONT IN ITALY, JULY 1941-DECEMBER 1942
235. *page* 2334
FINLAND AS AN AXIS SATELLITE
236. *page* 2339
HUNGARY, RUMANIA AND BULGARIA, JULY 1941-DECEMBER 1942
237. *page* 2345
NEUTRAL EUROPE: SWITZERLAND, SWEDEN, PORTUGAL, SPAIN AND EIRE
238. *page* 2351
RECORD AND REVIEW OF MAIN EVENTS, JANUARY-JUNE, 1942

LIST OF CHAPTERS (Contd.)

239. *page* 2358
HOME FRONT IN BRITAIN, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
240. *page* 2372
AIR WAR IN NORTH AFRICA AND MEDITERRANEAN, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
241. *page* 2387
DARK DAYS FOR ALLIES IN THE WAR AT SEA
242. *page* 2395
ALLIED MERCHANT SHIPPING LOSSES REACH THEIR PEAK
243. *page* 2405
DIEPPE: A RECONNAISSANCE IN FORCE
244. *page* 2413
THE SIEGE OF STALINGRAD
245. *page* 2422
THE CAUCASUS CAMPAIGN, JULY-NOVEMBER, 1942
246. *page* 2431
POLITICAL TRENDS IN THE MIDDLE EAST, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
247. *page* 2441
GROWING WAR EFFORT OF THE DOMINIONS, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
248. *page* 2453
THE COLONIES' WAR EFFORT, SEPTEMBER 1939-DECEMBER 1942
249. *page* 2463
ALLIED OPERATIONS IN NEW GUINEA, 1942
250. *page* 2479
AMERICAN OPERATIONS ON GUADALCANAL, AUGUST 1942-FEBRUARY 1943
251. *page* 2489
THE UNITED STATES AT WAR, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
252. *page* 2497
THE RUSSIAN WINTER OFFENSIVE, NOVEMBER 19-DECEMBER 31, 1942
253. *page* 2503
THE RUSSIAN HOME FRONT, JANUARY-DECEMBER, 1942
254. *page* 2517
AIR WAR IN EUROPE AND THE FAR EAST, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
255. *page* 2526
THE BATTLE OF EGYPT, OCTOBER 23-NOVEMBER 5, 1942
256. *page* 2539
THE RACE FOR TUNIS: NOVEMBER-DECEMBER, 1942
257. *page* 2548
FROM ALAMEIN TO TRIPOLI IN 80 DAYS
258. *page* 2562
VICHY AND OCCUPIED FRANCE, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942
259. *page* 2568
OCCUPIED EUROPE: CZECHOSLOVAKIA, POLAND, GREECE AND YUGOSLAVIA
260. *page* 2575
FREE CZECHS, YUGOSLAVS, GREEKS AND POLES
261. *page* 2581
RECORD OF MAIN EVENTS, JULY-DECEMBER, 1942

HISTORIC DOCUMENTS

(The number of the page on which each document appears is given in brackets)

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>CCXLVIII Anglo-Soviet-Iranian Treaty of Alliance, signed at Teheran, January 29, 1942. (2107)</p> | <p>CCLII Statement by the Finnish Premier on Finland's policy towards Germany and Great Britain, November 29, 1941. (2338)</p> |
| <p>CCXLIX Treaty of Alliance between the Soviet Union and the United Kingdom, signed in London, May 26, 1942. (2107)</p> | <p>CCLIII Resolution of the United States Congress declaring war upon Bulgaria, Hungary and Rumania, June 3, 1942. (2338)</p> |
| <p>CCL Agreement between the United Kingdom and the United States implementing the Lease-Lend programme, signed at Washington, February 23, 1942. (2159)</p> | <p>CCLIV Hitler's statement to the Reichstag, telling of the declaration of war upon the United States and the agreement with Italy and Japan to make common war on the United States and Britain, December 11, 1941 (2338)</p> |
| <p>CCLI Britain's Ultimatums to the Governments of Finland, Hungary and Rumania, November 28, 1941. (2338)</p> | |

- CCLV Mussolini's announcement that Italy took her stand with Germany and Japan against the U.S.A., December 11, 1941. (2338)
- CCLVI Report of the Barlow Commission on the distribution of the industrial population, January 31, 1940. (2370)
- CCLVII Report of the Scott Committee on Land Utilization in rural areas, August 15, 1942. (2370)

- CCLVIII Report of the Uthwatt Committee on compensation and betterment in respect of public control of the use of land, September 10, 1942. (2371)
- CCLIX Broadcast by Mr. Churchill on the Fall of Singapore, February 15, 1942. (2515)
- CCLX Mr. Churchill at the Mansion House on the Battle of Egypt, November 10, 1942. (2515)

DIARY OF THE WAR, 1942

March-April (2139)

May-June (2259)

July-August (2315)

September-October (2474)

November-December (2561)

MAPS AND PLANS

	Page
Alaska : New International Highway	2319
Australia : Japanese menace to	2104, 2463
Burma : British campaign, December 1942-May 1943	2223
China : Showing Japanese-occupied territory ..	2288
Dieppe : Illustrating Combined Operations raid, August 1942	2408
Europe : Showing the neutral countries in 1942	2345
Japan : 'Co-prosperity sphere'	2307
" Extent of Japanese operations in Pacific and Indian Oceans	2311
Lofoten Is. : Illustrating Commando Raids ..	2251
Madagascar : Course of military operations, May-November, 1942	2244
" Capture of Diego Suarez	2240
Middle East : Relief map showing Russian connexions with Persia, Turkey, Syria and Iraq	2205
" " Area of Anglo-Soviet Co-operation ..	2431
North Africa : Rommel's advance to El Alamein (July 1942)	2235
" " The Battle of Egypt	2531
" " From El Alamein to Tripoli	2555

	Page
North Africa (contd.)	
" " Allied landings in Oran area ..	2543
" " Military operations in Tunisia, November-December, 1942 ..	2547
Pacific : Guadalcanal	2482, 2486
" Japanese Menace to Australia	2104
" Japanese Operations in	2311
" Papua, The Buna-Kokoda road	2467
" Papua : Battle of the Owen Stanleys ..	2471
Russia : Summer campaign, May-July, 1942 ..	2267
" Caucasus, oilfields and pipe-lines ..	2425
" Caucasus, illustrating Axis drive (summer 1942)	2355
" Leningrad area invested by Germans ..	2355
" Sevastopol, showing the forts	2260
" Stalingrad and environs	2418
" Stalingrad, German offensive against ..	2355
" Stalingrad, Russian counter-offensive (map in colour)	2495
" Supply Routes, Northern	2353
" Supply Routes, Southern	2205
" Voronezh area invested by Germans ..	2355
West Africa : United Nations' territories	2270

SPECIAL PLATES IN COLOUR

Gen. the Hon. Sir Harold Alexander ..	<i>frontispiece</i>
The Dean of Canterbury Surveys his Ravaged Cathedral	<i>facing</i> 2114
Work in Britain's Steelworks and Armament Factories	<i>following</i> 2114
New Badges of British and Allied Services ..	<i>facing</i> 2115
Launch of U.S.S. 'Iowa' (direct-colour photography by Dmitri Kessel)	<i>facing</i> 2190
Scenes of Raid Damage in English Cities (from paintings by Firemen Artists)	<i>following</i> 2190
Graves of American Heroes of Pearl Harbour ..	<i>facing</i> 2191
London's Searchlights and Sound Locators Manned by A.T.S.	<i>facing</i> 2494

Railway Station, Alamein (painting by Philip Bawcombe)	<i>following</i> 2494
25-pounder Gun in Action on the Alamein Front (painting by J. Berry)	<i>following</i> 2494
General Sir Bernard Montgomery, K.C.B., D.S.O.	<i>following</i> 2494
Russian Counter-offensive at Stalingrad, November-December, 1942	<i>facing</i> 2495
Lord Louis Mountbatten with his Staff ..	<i>facing</i> 2570
Churchill Tanks on Manoeuvres in Britain ..	<i>following</i> 2570
Royal Marines in Training for Invasion ..	<i>following</i> 2570
Badges of Ships of the Royal Navy lost in 1942 ..	<i>facing</i> 2571

CHAPTERS CLASSIFIED ACCORDING TO SUBJECT—Vols. 1 to 6

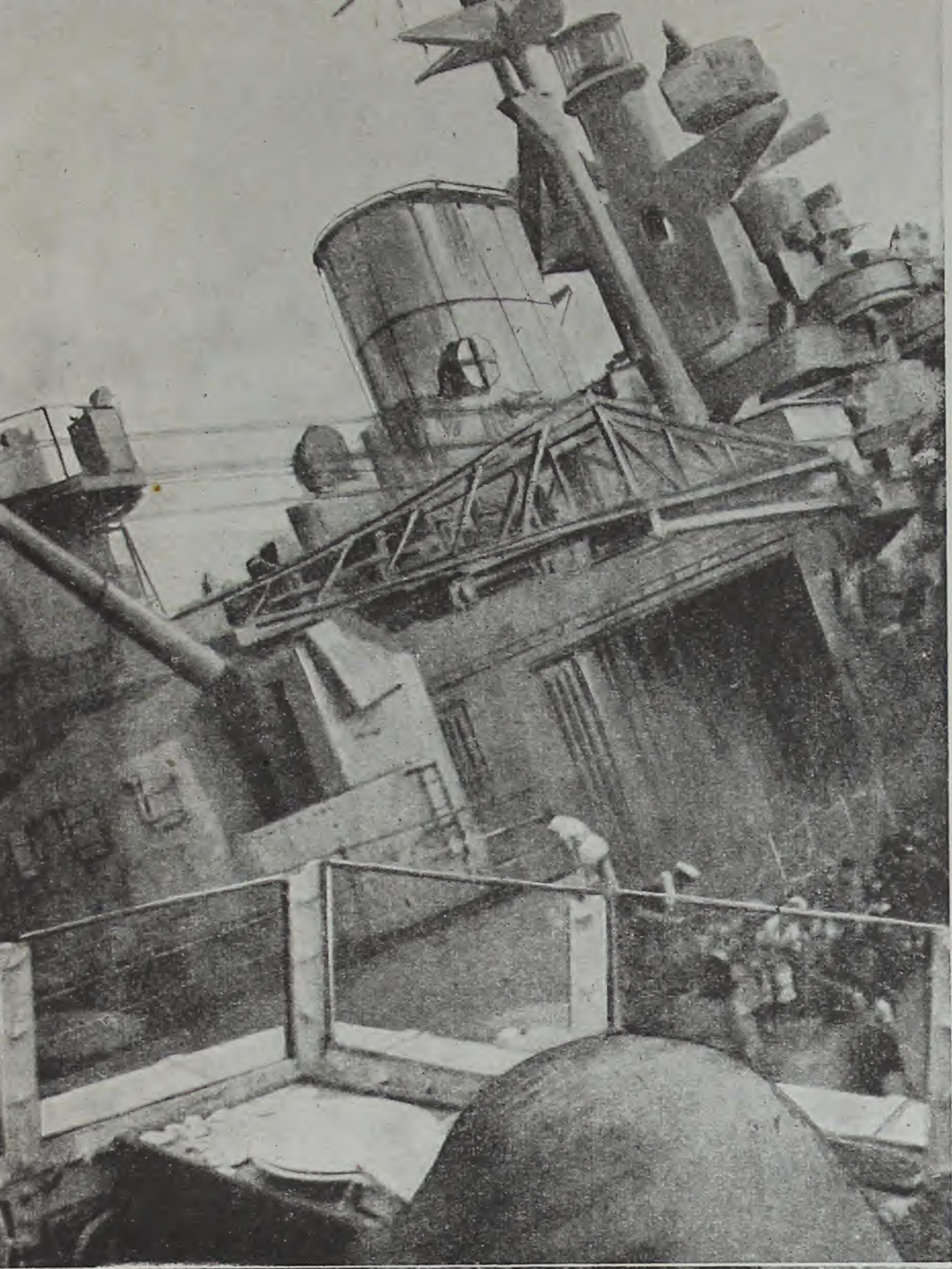
Chapter	Page	Chapter	Page
Events that Led to the War		The War at Sea (Contd.)	
1. Forces and factors that made for war (1919-39) ..	3	36. Intensified Enemy Action by Mine, Raider and Submarine ..	387
2. Danzig (1920-39) ..	11	48. Naval Operations during the closing weeks of 1939 ..	505
The Campaign in Poland		45. Victory of the River Plate: End of the 'Graf Spee' (December 1939) ..	475
3. The Onslaught on Poland ..	17	57. Naval Operations in the first weeks of 1940 ..	595
5. The Retreat to the Rivers ..	36	61. Summary of Achievements during February 1940 ..	645
9. Russia Intervenes ..	75	71. Beating the Magnetic Mine (March 1940) ..	723
14. Warsaw's Heroic Siege and Fall ..	125	63. Rescue of the 'Altmark' prisoners (February 1940) ..	668
16. The Curtain Falls ..	145	80. The Royal Navy Goes in at Narvik (April 1940) ..	809
142. The Campaign in Poland: an Analytical Survey ..	1494	81. The Invasion of Norway (April 8-May 10, 1940) ..	819
Russo-German Relations		104. Naval Operations, June and July 1940 ..	1083
19. The Russo-German Pact, August 23, 1939 ..	177	105. Actions at Oran and Dakar, July 1940 ..	1097
The Russo-Finnish Campaigns		116. Britain's Navy Meets the Axis Challenge ..	1218
41. Finland Stems the Russian Invasion (December 1939) ..	444	125. The Sea Affair during the Eventful Month of November 1940 ..	1311
50. Finland's Second Month of War ..	523	138. Naval Operations in Four Oceans: Events during December 1940 ..	1455
62. The Fight for the Karelian Isthmus ..	653	154. Our Warfare at Sea in the Opening Months of 1941 ..	1599
74. The Finns Make Peace (March 1940) ..	747	155. Victory of Cape Matapan, March 28, 1941 ..	1605
143. The Campaign of 1939-40 Reviewed ..	1506	173. Sea Affair, April-June, 1941, and Destruction of the 'Bismarck' ..	1747
235. Finland as an Axis Satellite ..	2334	189. Naval Disaster in the Far East ..	1895
Invasion of Denmark and Norway		209. Allies' Uphill Task in the Pacific ..	2081
78. Germany Invades Denmark and Norway (April 1940) ..	783	214. U-boat Attack switched to the Western Atlantic ..	2127
81. The Navy's Part in Opposing Invasion ..	819	241. Dark Days for the Allies in the War at Sea, 1942 ..	2387
Invasion of the Low Countries		The Merchant Navy	
83. The Nazi Invasion of Holland ..	836	26. Britain's Fourth Line of Defence ..	269
84. The Nazis cross the Maas ..	847	47. Unrestricted Sea Warfare ..	495
85. Surrender of Belgium ..	863	66. Britain's Merchant Shipping on a War Basis ..	695
86. Britain goes to the aid of Belgium ..	873	73. Totalitarian War on British and Neutral Shipping ..	741
88. B.E.F. in Flanders ..	891	102. After the Loss of the Channel Ports ..	1055
92. Nazi Air Tactics in the Low Countries ..	935	117. August-September, 1940 ..	1228
144. German Conquest of Holland: a Revaluation ..	1513	134. Maintaining Vital Atlantic Supplies at the end of 1940 ..	1407
145. The Campaign in Belgium, a Restatement: (1) to the Allied Retreat ..	1524	174. Grave Shipping Situation of 1941 ..	1761
146. The Campaign in Belgium: (2) after the Nazi Break-through at Sedan ..	1531	190. Battle of the Atlantic (July-December, 1941) ..	1901
The Campaign in France		242. Allied Merchant Shipping Losses reach their Peak (July 1942) ..	2395
4. Britain and France Prepare ..	29	War in the Air	
11. Carrying the War into Germany ..	97	8. Britain's Air Force at War by Land and Sea ..	69
15. Britain's New Armies take the Field ..	133	22. A Month's Tale of Raid and Reconnaissance ..	223
18. French Thrust into the Rhineland ..	165	39. Last Two Months of 1939 ..	425
21. The British Army Crosses to France ..	208	65. Developments in January and February 1940 ..	687
29. Britain's Expeditionary Force stands to Arms ..	307	79. Intensified Air War, March-May, 1940 ..	801
33. France's War Effort ..	352	92. Nazi Air Tactics in the Low Countries ..	935
37. Britain's Army in the Line on the Western Front ..	405	107. Opening of the Nazi Air Offensive against Britain ..	1125
60. The Western Front in the first two months of 1940 ..	631	110. Battle of Britain, Phase I ..	1153
72. France awaits the Onslaught, January-March, 1940 ..	733	114. Battle of Britain, Phase II ..	1193
147. Lord Gort's Dispatches: (1) Organization and Marshalling of the B.E.F. ..	1541	115. Battle of Britain, Phase III ..	1205
84. Break-through on the Meuse ..	847	119. Battle of Britain, Last Phase ..	1243
87. On the Eve of Dunkirk ..	879	127. The Aerial Offensive against the Axis: last five months of 1940 ..	1331
89. British Defence of Boulogne and Calais ..	901	128. Night Bombing of Britain, November-December, 1940 ..	1343
150. Full Story of Calais Force, May 1940 ..	1565	167. Air War on our Ports and Industries (January-June, 1941) ..	1692
90. Evacuation of the B.E.F. from Dunkirk ..	913	168. R.A.F. Raids on Germany and Italy (January-June, 1941) ..	1705
148. Lord Gort's Dispatches: (2) the Fighting and the Dunkirk Retreat ..	1548	192. British Bombing Policy after Hitler's attack on Russia (July-December, 1941) ..	1922
91. Battle of France Opens ..	923	213. Britain's New Tactics in Area Bombing, January-June, 1942 ..	2117
93. B.E.F. in the Battle of the Rivers ..	945	240. Air War in North Africa and Mediterranean, July-December, 1942 ..	2372
95. Closing Stages of the Battle of France ..	966	254. Air War: Europe and the Far East, July-December, 1942 ..	2517
149. The 51st (Highland) Division and the 1st Armoured Division in the Battle of France ..	1559	Combined Operations	
96. The Collapse of France ..	985	188. Commando Raids during 1941 ..	1887
97. Final Evacuation of B.E.F. from France ..	995	226. British Commando Raids of 1942 ..	2251
98. Franco-German, Franco-Italian Armistice ..	1003	243. Dieppe: a Reconnaissance in Force ..	2405
Italy and the War			
55. Italy's Policy as a Non-Belligerent ..	573		
94. Italy Declares War, June 10, 1940 ..	960		
108. First Developments in Africa ..	1132		
234. Home Front in Italy, July-December, 1942 ..	2327		
The War at Sea			
10. Tackling the U-boats ..	87		
23. Keeping the Seas Open for Britain's Food Supplies ..	233		

Chapter	Page
The Home Front	
7. Civil Defence against the New Warfare	55
12. Trials and Triumphs of the Mass Evacuation ..	107
25. Co-ordination and Readjustment	256
34. Organization of War Supplies	364
38. Women's Effort in the Early Stages of the War	413
List of Women's Services	424
42. Control and Rationing of Britain's Food	
Supplies	455
52. British Agriculture in the First Period of the	
War	538
53. Survey at the Turn of the Year	547
82. The Early Months of 1940	829
99. War Effort Intensifies, May 1940	1023
106. Britain makes ready to meet Nazi Invasion ..	1109
122. How Britain Carried on throughout the Air	
Battle	1275
141. Settling down to Total War, December 1940 ..	1487
169. Review of Home Front (January-June, 1941)..	1713
191. Gigantic Effort for Greater Arms Production	
(July-December, 1941)	1913
212. Testing Time for the Home Front in first six	
months of 1942	2109
239. Home Front in Britain, July-December, 1942..	2358
British Dominions and Colonies	
20. The Empire makes Common Cause in the	
Crusade against Aggression	193
56. The Empire Musters its Forces	584
77. Building up a Striking Force in the Middle East	
113. War Effort during Summer of 1940	775
132. Empire Air Training Scheme: the First Year's	
Work	1183
170. Empire's Aid to Britain approaches Full Flood	
187. War Draws Nearer (July-December, 1941) ..	1388
211. War Comes Closer to Australia: after the	
Japanese Onslaught	1725
221. Canada, South Africa and New Zealand prepare	
for the Offensive	1881
228. West Africa's Vital Role in 1942.. .. .	2099
247. Growing War Effort of the Dominions, July-	
December, 1942.. .. .	2195
248. Colonies' War Effort, September 1939-Decem-	
ber 1942	2269
	2441
	2453
Indian Empire	
135. India's War Effort: a Review of the First Year	1417
171. A Year of Stress: War Effort during 1941 ..	1732
223. Domestic Policies during 1942	2216
United States of America	
6. America Looks on: the Clash of Sentiment	
and Policy	47
28. America Lifts the Arms Embargo	296
64. America's Precarious Neutrality	675
101. The End of Isolation	1047
136. Stand for Free Democracy: second half of 1940	1429
172. War Draws Nearer (January-June, 1941), ..	1737
196. Preparations to meet the Japanese Challenge	
(July-November, 1941)	1961
215. Six Months of Gigantic Effort	2141
233. America's Strategy in her First Twelve Months	
of War	2317
251. The United States at War (July- December, 1942)	2489
Latin America	
216. War Groupings and Reactions during 1942 ..	2149
Enemy-occupied Countries	
32. Czechoslovakia under the Nazi Heel.. .. .	343
68. Czechoslovakia in Nazi Hands	710
46. Three Months of German Rule in Poland.. ..	489
67. Poland's People under the Nazi Harrow	701
111. Life in France, Belgium and Holland.. .. .	1167
112. Hitler's 'New Order' in Czechoslovakia,	
Poland, Norway and Denmark	1173
133. Vichy and German-occupied France after the	
French Armistice	1395
175. France under the Men of Vichy	1767
202. Six Months of Intrigue and Vacillation in France	2014
219. Vichy France and the Occupied Region, January-	
June, 1942	2181
258. Vichy and Occupied France, July-December,	
1942	2562
137. Nazi Policy in Norway, Denmark and Poland	
(end of 1940)	1446

Chapter	Page
Enemy-occupied Countries (Contd.)	
139. Nazi Policy in Holland, Belgium and Czecho-	
slovakia (end of 1940)	1465
177. Increasing Brutality in Norway, Holland and	
Belgium, January-June, 1941.. .. .	1787
218. Denmark, Norway, Belgium and Holland, July	
1941-December, 1942	2169
186. In Conquered Greece and Yugoslavia (April-	
December, 1941)	1874
259. Czechoslovakia, Poland, Greece and Yugoslavia	
(to end of 1942)	2568
Neutral Europe	
13. Neutral Countries in the First Phase of the War	113
27. Growing Menace of Nazi Aggression	284
40. Plight of Finland and the Scandinavian Coun-	
tries (November-December, 1939).. .. .	435
43. Neutrals in the West: First Phase	463
109. Reactions during first half of 1940	1145
237. Switzerland, Sweden, Portugal, Spain and Eire	
during 1942	2345
The Balkans	
54. Diplomatic War: Axis v. Allies.. .. .	557
75. Tension in the Balkans.. .. .	760
103. Vacillating Policies after French Defeat	1071
123. Axis Politics in Summer and Autumn of 1940	1288
156. Balkan Strategy, Winter and Spring of 1940-41	1610
236. Hungary, Rumania and Bulgaria, July 1941-	
December, 1942.. .. .	2339
Greek and Yugoslav Campaigns	
124. Italy Invades Greece: first five weeks of the	
campaign	1295
129. Greco-Italian Struggle: how the Greeks drove	
out the Invaders	1353
152. Italo-Greek Campaign: from capture of Klisura	
to German Invasion	1581
158. Germany comes to the aid of Italy in Greece ..	1623
157. Swift German Conquest of Yugoslavia, April	
6-17, 1941	1614
Russo-German War	
180. Russia on the Eve of the Nazi Invasion	1813
181. Campaign up to the Fall of Smolensk (June-	
August, 1941)	1820
182. Encirclement of Leningrad and Fall of Kiev ..	1833
183. Moscow Offensives (October and November	
1941)	1843
193. Soviet Counter-offensive of December 1941 ..	1935
194. Russian Home Front (June-December, 1941)..	1947
204. Russian Winter Offensive (1941-42)	2031
227. Summer Campaign in Russia, May-July, 1942..	2261
244. The Siege of Stalingrad.. .. .	2413
245. The Caucasus Campaign, July-November, 1942	2422
252. The Russian Winter Offensive, November 19-	
December 31, 1942	2497
253. Russian Home Front, January-December, 1942	2503
Turkey	
69. Widespread influence of the Ankara Pact	
(signed October 1939)	713
70. Guardian of the Narrows	718
185. Relations with Allies and Axis in 1941	1864
The Campaigns in North Africa	
130. Mediterranean Strategy before the opening of	
the Libyan campaign	1365
131. Wavell's Campaign in Libya: the Advance to	
Bardia	1373
153. Wavell's Libyan Campaign: to the capture of	
Benghazi, February 1941	1589
161. Rommel's Advance on Egypt (March-May,	
1941)	1644
162. Defence of Tobruk (April-December, 1941) ..	1649
201. Auchinleck's Offensive and the Sidi Rezegh	
battles (November 1941-January 1942).. ..	1998
224. Rommel's Advance to El Alamein	2225
255. The Battle of Egypt, October 23-November 4,	
1942	2526
257. The Pursuit to Tripoli	2548
256. The Race for Tunis: November-December, 1942	2539
Madagascar	
225. The Campaign in Madagascar, May-November,	
1942	2239

CHAPTERS CLASSIFIED ACCORDING TO SUBJECT—Vols. 1 to 6 (Contd.)

Chapter		Page	Chapter		Page
Germany			Iraq, Syria, Persia (Contd.)		
17.	Hitler's Great Peace Offensive Fails	153	246.	Political Trends in Middle East, July–December, 1942	2431
24.	Two Months of Hitler's Blunders	248	Gibraltar, Malta, Crete, Cyprus		
35.	Inside Germany during the First Four Months	374	159.	Grim Battle of Crete, May 19–June 1, 1941	1630
51.	The New Nazi Religion	535	160.	Britain's Mediterranean Outposts, 1940–41	1639
58.	Before the Spring Offensive of 1940	607	229.	Malta, Gibraltar and Cyprus in 1942	2275
100.	Reaction to Spring Offensive of 1940	1033	East African Campaigns		
126.	Nazi Doubts and Fears after the Battle of Britain	1323	163.	Italy Loses her Dream of Empire (January–May, 1941)	1659
179.	Nazi Policy before Attack on Russia (January–June, 1941)	1806	164.	Restoration of Abyssinia (January–December, 1941)	1666
217.	The Turning of the Tide (June 1941–June 1942)	2161	Free French and Other Allies		
War in the Far East			120.	Free French Fought on after Franco-German Armistice	1255
140.	Japan's Policy during 1940	1475	176.	Free and Fighting French to end of 1941	1780
178.	Menace of Japanese Encroachment	1797	121.	Czechs, Poles, Belgians, Dutch and Norwegians	1267
195.	Japan makes ready to Strike	1955	220.	Free Belgium and Holland, Fighting France and Norway in 1942	2189
197.	The Attack on Pearl Harbour	1969	260.	Free Czechs, Yugoslavs, Greeks and Poles	2575
198.	Britain at Bay in the Pacific (December 1941)	1977	Economic Warfare		
199.	Defence of Hongkong (December 1941)	1987	30.	A Review of the First Two Months of War	316
200.	China and Japan, 1929–39	1992	76.	Tightening up the Blockade of Germany, November 1939–March 1940	766
205.	Malayan Campaign and Fall of Singapore	2039	Propaganda		
206.	Loss of Burma (December 1941–May 1942)	2049	59.	How Nazi Lies were Refuted	615
207.	Japan's Attack on Netherlands East Indies	2062	Personalities of the War		
208.	Battle of Bali and Fight for Java	2067	31.	Men who led the Fighting Forces in the First Months	331
210.	Campaign in the Philippines	2087	44.	Britain's Statesmen Leaders in the First Period	469
230.	China in the Ranks of the United Nations	2287	Review of the War		
231.	Japan in 1942: Twelve Months' Total War	2296	49.	Position at the end of 1939	511
232.	Japan's Operations in the Pacific, first half of 1942	2307	118.	The First Year	1235
249.	Australia and the Campaign in Papua, July–December, 1942	2463	151.	Record of Main Events, January–December, 1940	1572
250.	The U.S. Campaign in Guadalcanal, August–December, 1942	2479	203.	Record of Main Events, January–December, 1941	2018
Iraq, Syria, Persia			238.	Record of Main Events, January–June, 1942	2351
165.	Suppression of Rashid Ali's Revolt in Iraq	1679	261.	Record of Main Events, July–December, 1942	2581
166.	Liberation of Syria (June–July, 1941)	1684			
184.	Britain and Russia Take Control in Persia, August 1941	1858			
222.	Political Trends in Near and Middle East, January–June, 1942	2204			

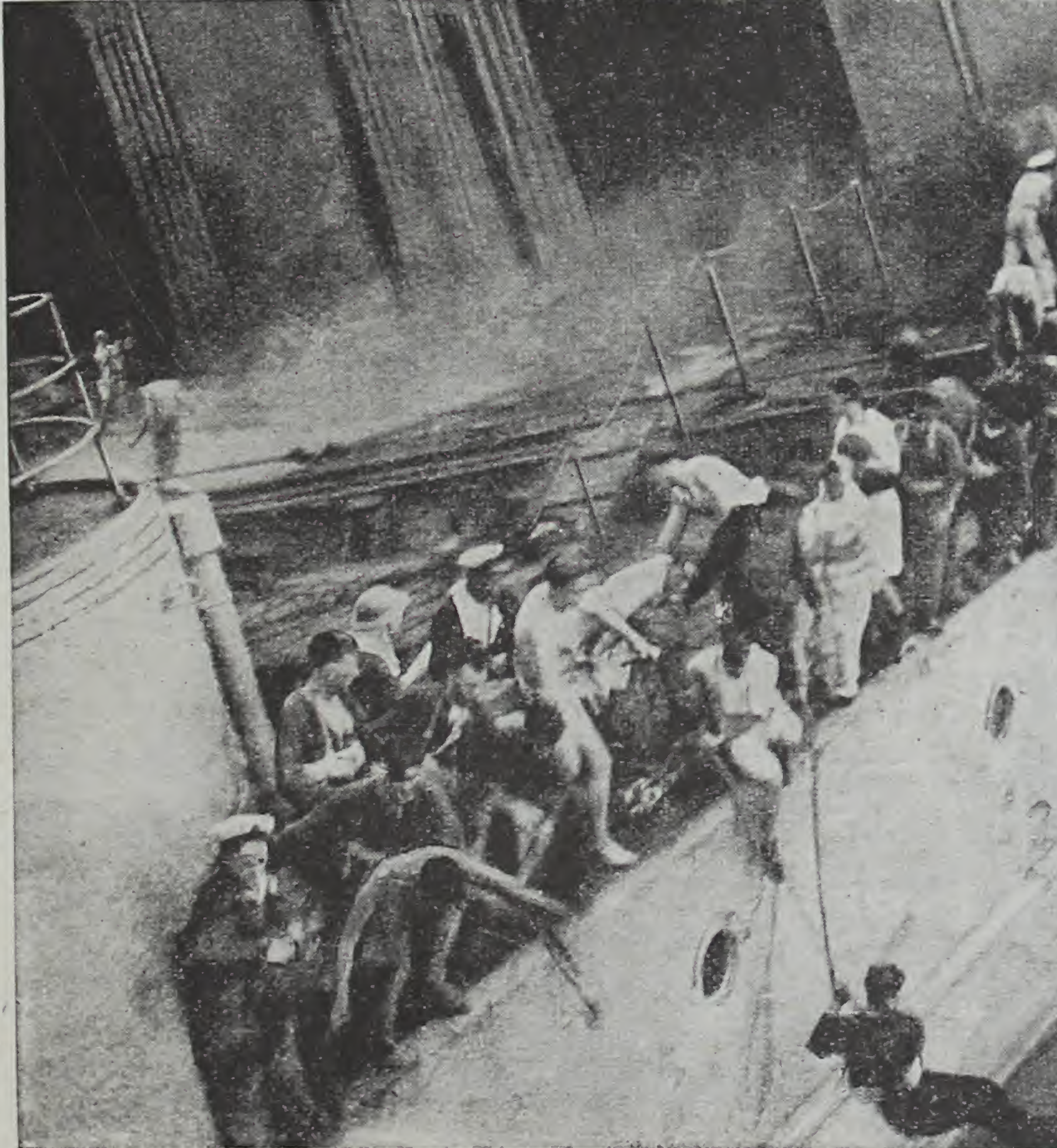
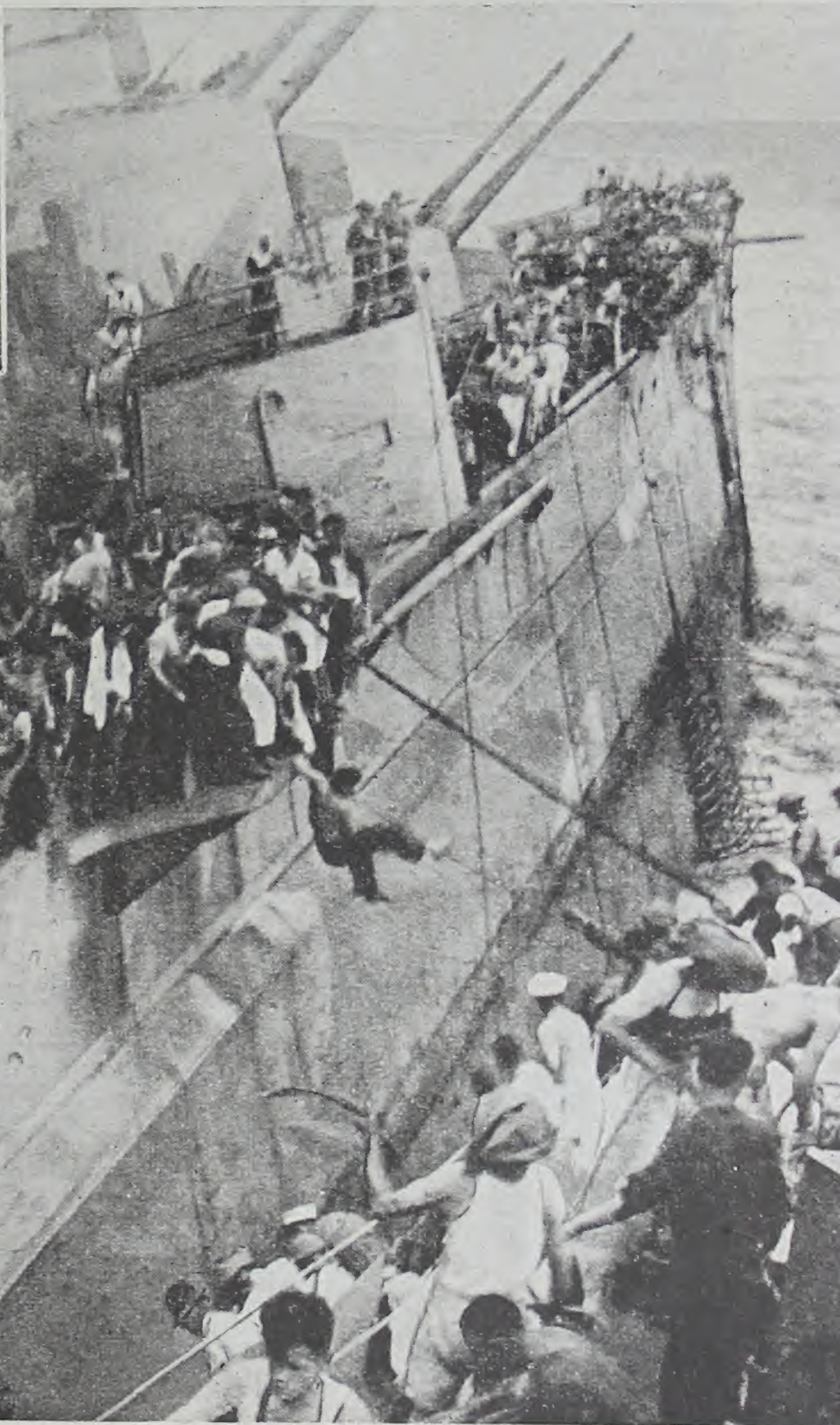


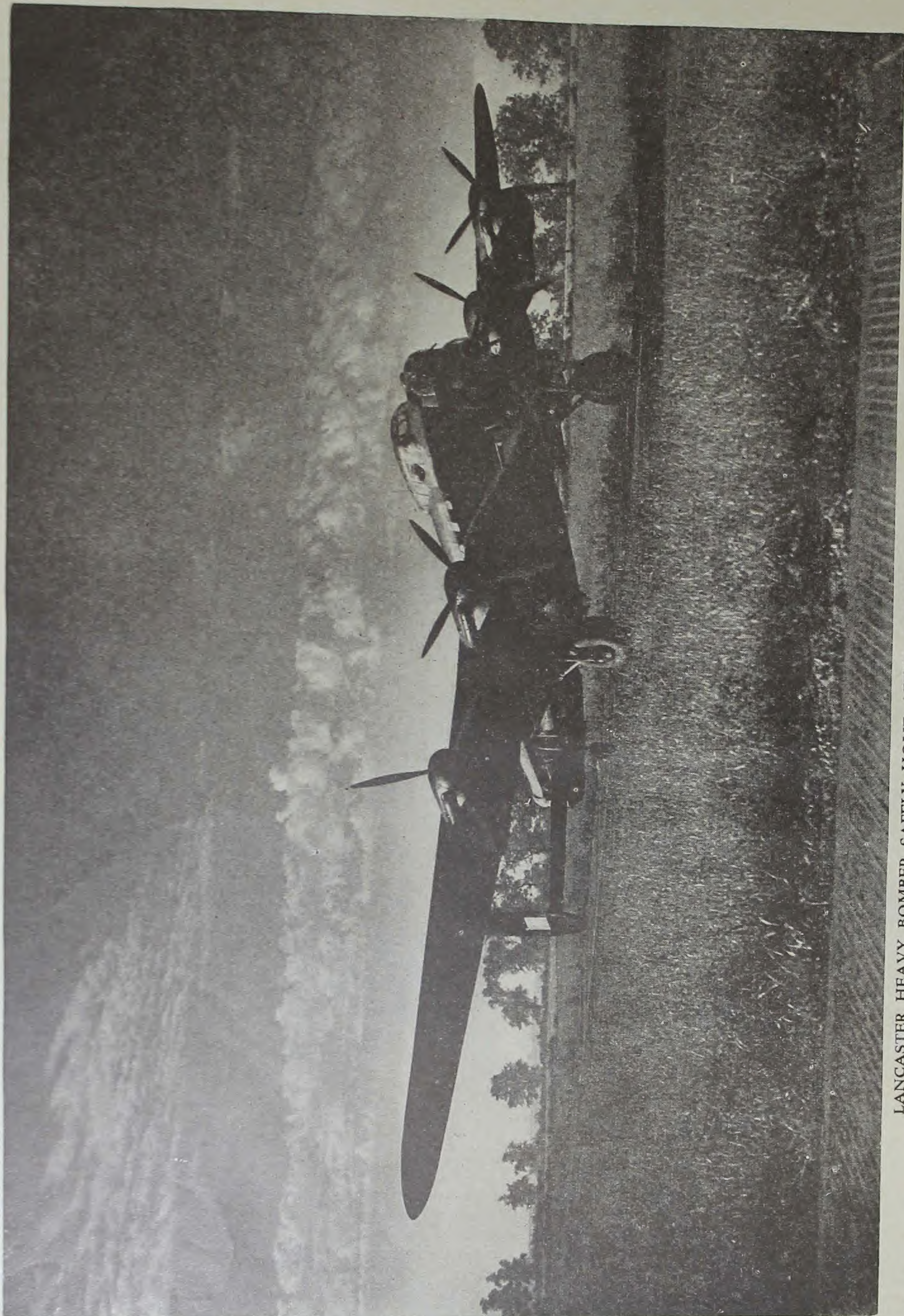
BLOW THAT SHOCKED THE EMPIRE

On December 2, 1941, the battleship 'Prince of Wales' with other units of the Eastern Fleet arrived at Singapore (see illus., p. 1906), whence 'The Times' correspondent cabled that the effect on Japanese policy would be eagerly watched. That policy was made clear on the 7th, when Japan attacked Hawaii, the Philippines, Hongkong, Siam and Malaya. On the 8th Rear-Admiral Sir Tom Phillips (C.-in-C. Eastern Fleet) took out the 'Prince of Wales' and the battle-cruiser 'Repulse' to intercept Japanese transports moving towards the Kra Isthmus. After leaving he learnt that no fighter escort would be available, but cloudy weather offered some concealment. When later the weather cleared, and he had been sighted by enemy aircraft, Sir Tom Phillips turned back. Receiving a report of enemy landings at Kuantan, he sent off his own planes to investigate; the result was negative, and he told his aircraft to return to Singapore. Then it was that our warships were attacked by Japanese bombers and torpedo-planes: H.M.S. 'Repulse,' after repeated hits, sank at 12.30 p.m. on December 10 (local time); the 'Prince of Wales' went down about an hour after. These photographs show the last moments of the latter vessel as, listing heavily, she is abandoned by her complement. Of 2,925 in the two warships all but 595 were saved. Sir Tom Phillips perished, and Captain J. G. Leach, of the 'Prince of Wales.' Captain W. G. Tennant, of the 'Repulse,' was rescued.

Photos, Associated Press

2 G





LANCASTER HEAVY BOMBER SAFELY HOME AFTER A RAID

The Avro Lancaster four-engined heavy bomber was first reported in action on the occasion of the Augsburg raid of April 17, 1942, when twelve flew across Germany in daylight at a height of 25-30 feet to bomb the target. The bomber weighs 60,000 lb., has a speed of about 300 m.p.h., and has a range of about 3,000 miles. The armament is ten Browning .303 machine-guns in four turrets. Normally the crew numbers six.

Photo. Barratts

WAR COMES CLOSER TO AUSTRALIA: AFTER THE JAPANESE ONSLAUGHT

Pungent Criticisms—Curtin's 'Look to America' Message—Allied S.W. Pacific Command—Lack of Preparedness—Call for Closer Collaboration with Britain—Pacific War Council—Mr. Casey Goes to Cairo—Man-power Problems—Reorganization of the Armed Forces—After the Fall of Singapore—First Japanese Bombings of Australia—Invasion of New Guinea—Allied Bombers Hit Back—Battle of the Coral Sea—Position at end of June 1942

FEELING in the Dominion after six months of war with Japan might well be gauged by the views expressed by Sir Keith Murdoch, first Director-General of Australia's Ministry of Information and her foremost newspaper proprietor. In the British House of Commons on June 4, 1942, Mr. Churchill was asked by a Member whether the decision to accept battle in the island of Singapore was a military or a political decision, and, if the former, whether General Wavell recommended it. Mr. Attlee, Secretary of State for the Dominions, replied that the decision was taken on military grounds and was the unanimous decision of His Majesty's Government, their military advisers and the commanders on the spot. The further question was then asked: "Is the Minister aware that Sir Keith Murdoch has reported that he had every sympathy with General Wavell, and had reason to believe that it was a political decision, not a military one? Is that absolutely untrue? Many people believe that General Wavell was overruled." Mr. Attlee said: "I am not prepared to check up on statements made by individuals."

The opinion of Sir Keith Murdoch could not be dismissed so summarily, for it represented that of at least a large proportion of well-informed Australians.

Australia Anticipated Invasion Whether the Secretary of State was wise in not "checking up" on statements made by

such men is, perhaps, a matter of opinion. Had he investigated, he would have found that Australia was bitterly disappointed with the outcome of the battles for Singapore and Java, and was, in fact, awaiting with determination, but with also a great deal of well-founded apprehension, a Japanese assault on the Australian mainland.

In the Daily Mail of February 19, 1942, Sir Keith Murdoch, in an article cabled from Melbourne, said:

"The disasters to our power in the East are not so easily explainable as Mr. Churchill says. They are not merely the flowing of Japanese arms through the broken dam. There were grave miscalculations and mis-

conceptions by London Service leaders. If these had not occurred, and the quality of our implements had been of the type required, we would still be in Malaya."

On March 16, in the same newspaper, Sir Keith Murdoch stated:

"We in Australia are expecting a Japanese assault. Whether it will be an attack on bases like Wyndham, Darwin, Moresby, and Townsville; whether it will be a descent upon the south-west, or whether it will be a mass movement against the great eastern



WAR AT AUSTRALIA'S DOOR

By March 1942, when posters such as this were issued to stimulate the war effort, Australia had come to a full realization of her peril, with the enemy fast consolidating himself in the island bulwark whence he could strike at the Dominion.

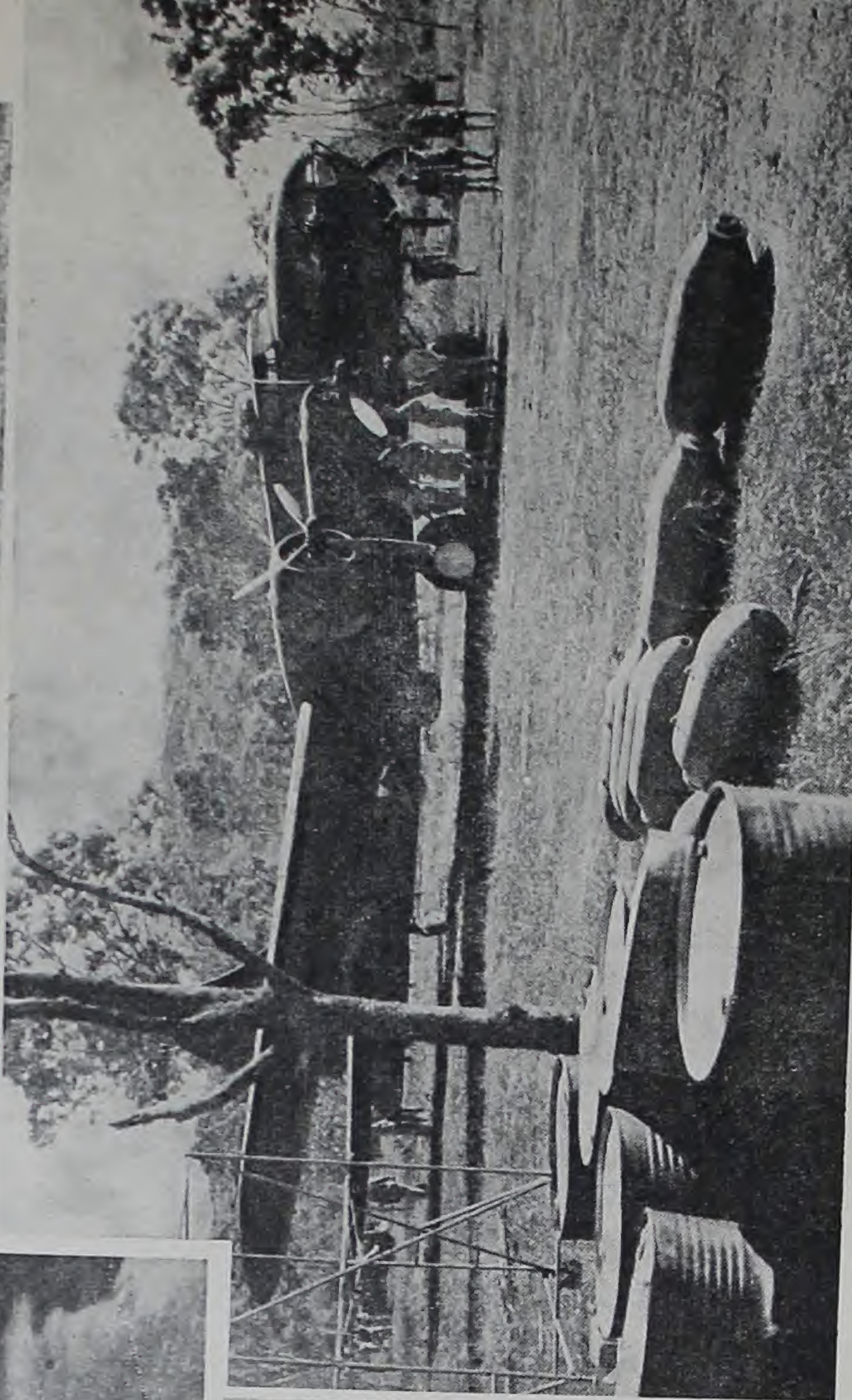
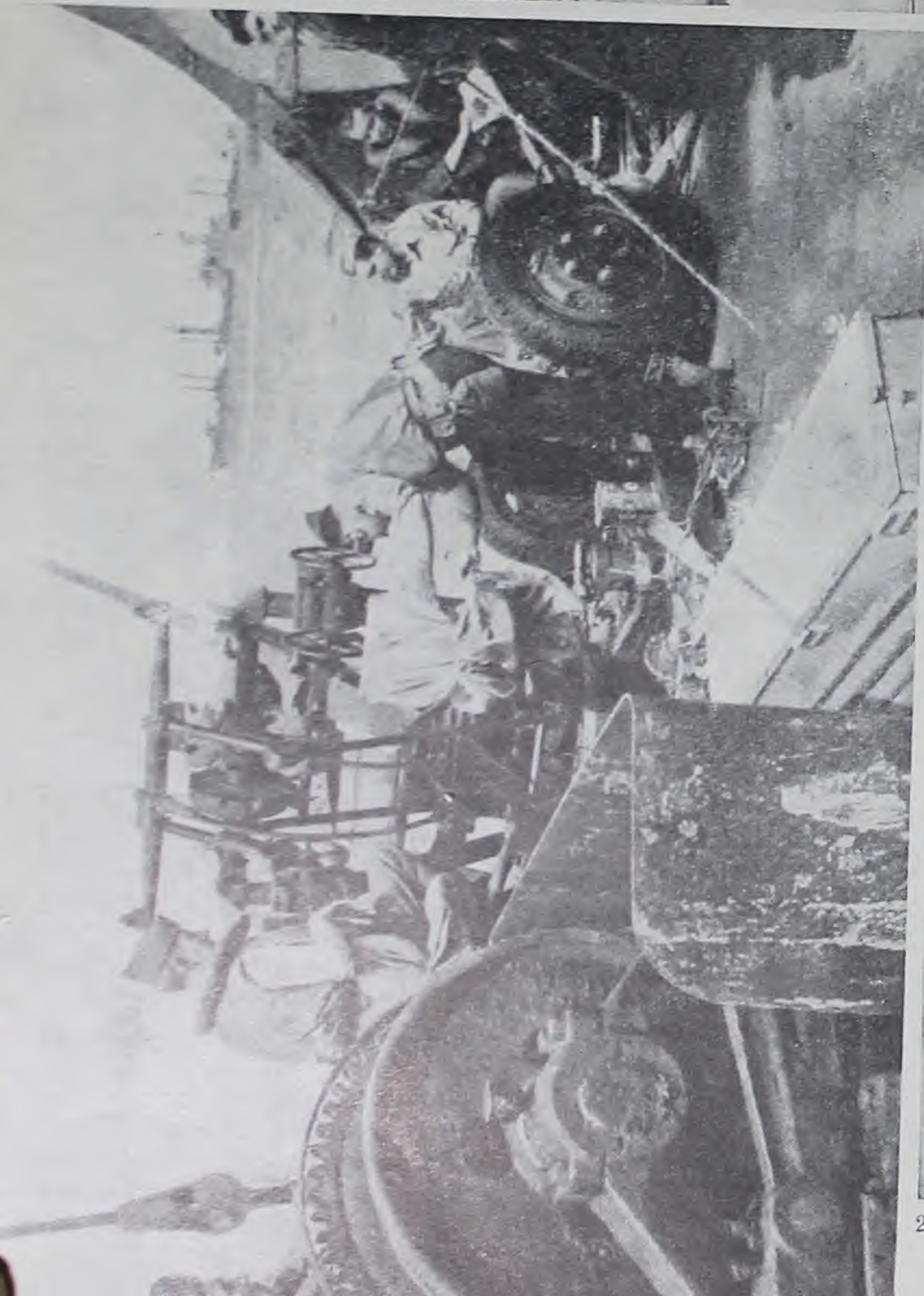
block we do not know. But we are working day and night in preparation for the lot."

Actually, as later events proved and as Government spokesmen were to confirm, this was a fair enough statement of the position. Against this kind of background Australia put her shoulder to the wheel in an hour of acute crisis. Probably future historians will say it was the supreme hour of her crisis, because Australia will never be weaker than she was between December 7, 1941,

when Japan went to war, and June 30, 1942. She was not wholly unprepared. She had been at war with Germany and Italy from the outset. But, like America, she was unprepared for both the type and the weight of Japan's offensive. Her home defences were of the slenderest. Her Navy was working for Britain; she had practically no home-based aircraft, and the pick of her fighting men were in the Middle East. Industrially she was extending, but she was a long, long way from her peak, and almost everything her factories turned out was exported immediately.

Still, she was not doing all she could, by any means, to meet man-power requirements. Plans adequate to meet them were not evolved. Yet it was obvious to the **Man-power Government's critics, Problems** both at home and abroad, that certain measures would have to be carried through with a ruthlessness and speed which might arouse considerable opposition. Included in these measures were rationalization of the manufacturing industry and the reconstruction of the distribution, commerce, and finance industries. American critics, listening to Australia asking America and Britain for fresh forces to strengthen the Allied position in the Pacific and, therefore, more securely to protect Australia, hinted that the more Australia could show she was making a maximum contribution herself, the greater would be her chance of getting increased assistance.

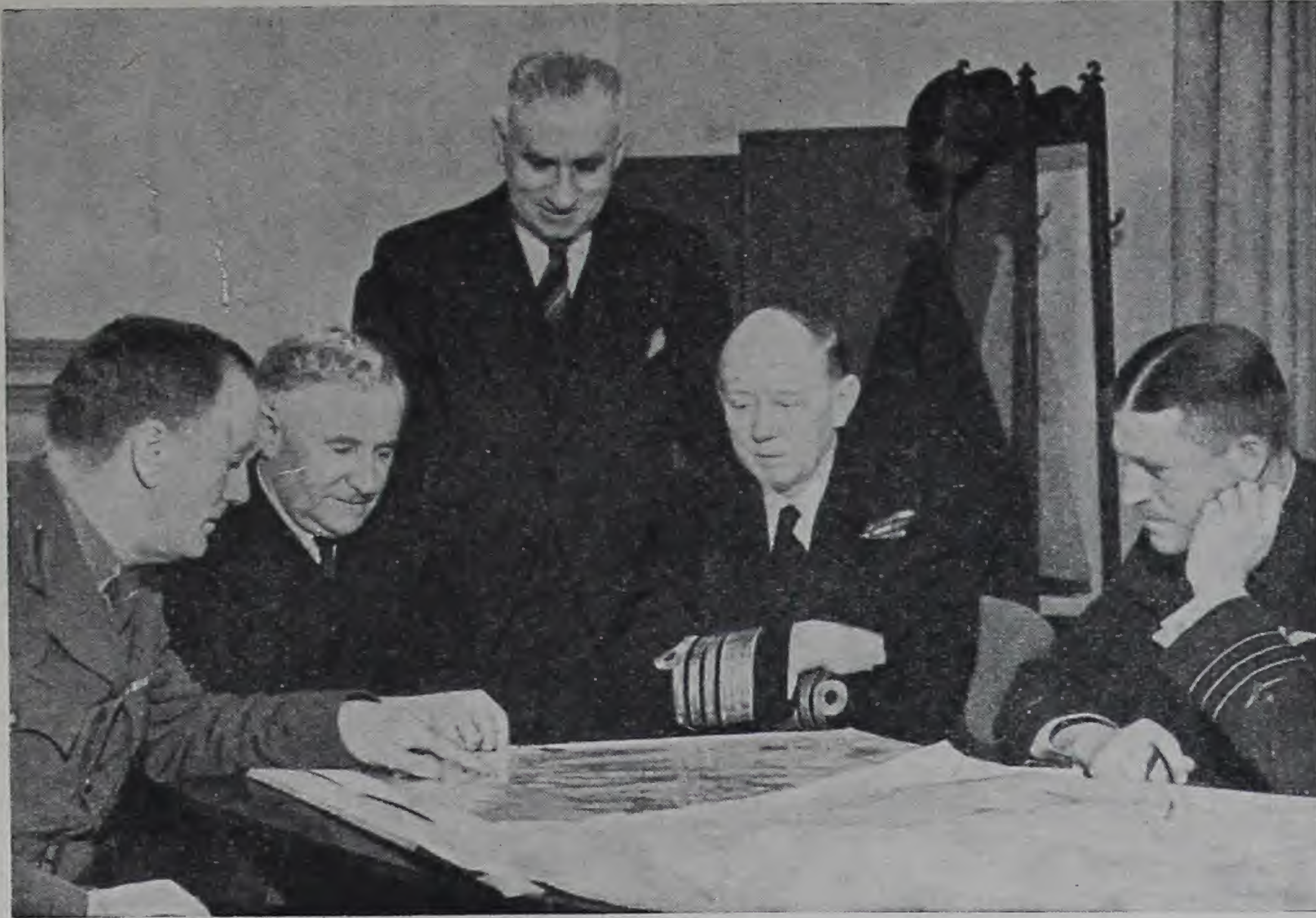
All the same, it was because she was to a certain extent self-reliant in the industrial sense that Australia (and through her New Zealand) did not feel as hopeless as she would have felt had she succumbed in the years before 1939 to the arguments of those economic theorists who urged that Australia, like New Zealand, should concentrate on primary rather than on secondary industries. No one of course can say now it was a bad thing that Australia disobeyed such economic theories and ventured to drown the bleat of her 114,000,000 sheep in the roar of blast furnaces, the hum of millions of factory



BUILDING UP AN AMERICAN STRIKING FORCE IN AUSTRALIA

When General Douglas MacArthur reached Australia (March 17, 1942) American transports had been for some weeks crossing the Pacific, and quantities of arms and equipment continued to come in under Lease-Lend. Top, left, anti-aircraft crew on a U.S. transport which reached Australia in mid-March; top, right, U.S. troops disembarking. Left, unsealing medium and light tanks after unloading. Above, American and Australian officers examine a newly delivered B-17 (Flying Fortress) bomber.

Photos, Planet News; Keystone; Associated Press



AUSTRALIA REPRESENTED IN BRITISH WAR CABINET

Sir Earle Page (second from left) was Australia's representative up till May 1942, when he was succeeded by Mr. S. M. Bruce. With him in London were Australia's Defence Representatives: left, Colonel A. Wardell, Military Liaison Officer; Major P. E. Coleman, Defence Adviser to Sir Earle Page (standing); Admiral Sir Ragnar Colvin; and Wing-Commander E. G. Knox-Knight (extreme right).

Photo, Topical Press

machine wheels, the clang of hammers on steel plates, the slap and clack of numberless production belts. (And no one of course can ignore the enormous post-war problems this rapid industrialization will create.)

These are the sort of facts which must be borne in mind when one considers the statement of Australia's Prime Minister, Mr. Curtin (who is leader of the Labour Party), that 'Australia Looks to America', that the Dominion should look to America. It was made on December 27, 1941, in the course of a New Year's message to the Australian people on the defence of the Pacific. More than any other statement this caused the keenest controversy in Australia and abroad: it was misunderstood in America and in Britain as much as in Australia. Some thought it meant that Australia's Government was contemplating a break-away from the Empire. Perhaps this interpretation was easy enough for the majority of people, because they did not know the paucity of Australia's defences. Consequently, they could not know that Mr. Curtin was talking purely from the standpoint of defence. What he meant was that for her immediate salvation Australia would have to look to America, since Britain had her hands full.

This meaning was understood by the United Kingdom and United States Governments, both later implying official recognition of it. On January 3,

1942, by a joint announcement by President Roosevelt and Mr. Churchill, a unified command of the south-west Pacific area was set up under General Wavell with Major-General Brett (U.S.) as Deputy, and General Pownall as Chief of Staff. Admiral Hart (U.S.) was to be C-in-C. naval forces in the same area;

General Chiang Kai-shek was to be C-in-C. land and air forces in the Chinese area (including Indo-China and Siam). And on March 17 General MacArthur arrived in Australia, by air, to take up the Allied Command, as well as direction of the final struggle in the Philippines. Major-General Brett was appointed Deputy to MacArthur, and head of the U.S. Air Force.

A panoramic survey of the first six months of war in the Pacific falls into two sections. The first deals with reactions on the home front; the second with engagements with the enemy. Undoubtedly the first reaction was one of dismay. Australia did not, any more than America, believe Japan capable of such a monstrous, unforgettable act of treachery as she perpetrated at Pearl Harbour on December 7, 1941, when in Washington Japan's Ambassador and her special envoy were pretending to seek a solution to the diplomatic deadlock, but were actually buying time with hypocrisy and falsehoods to enable Japan's war lords to move forces secretly to battle stations. A few days before the blow fell Australia's Minister to Tokyo, Sir John Latham, on a visit to the Commonwealth from Tokyo, stated publicly that he did not fear war in the Pacific, and he saw no need to imagine it would come.

The chief concern, of course, was the almost entire lack of preparedness for



GENERAL MACARTHUR CONFERS WITH MR. CURTIN

Appointed Allied Commander in the S.W. Pacific, General Douglas MacArthur flew from the Philippines and reached Australia on March 17, 1942. Here (left) he is having his first consultation with the Australian Premier, Mr. J. Curtin, at Canberra shortly after.

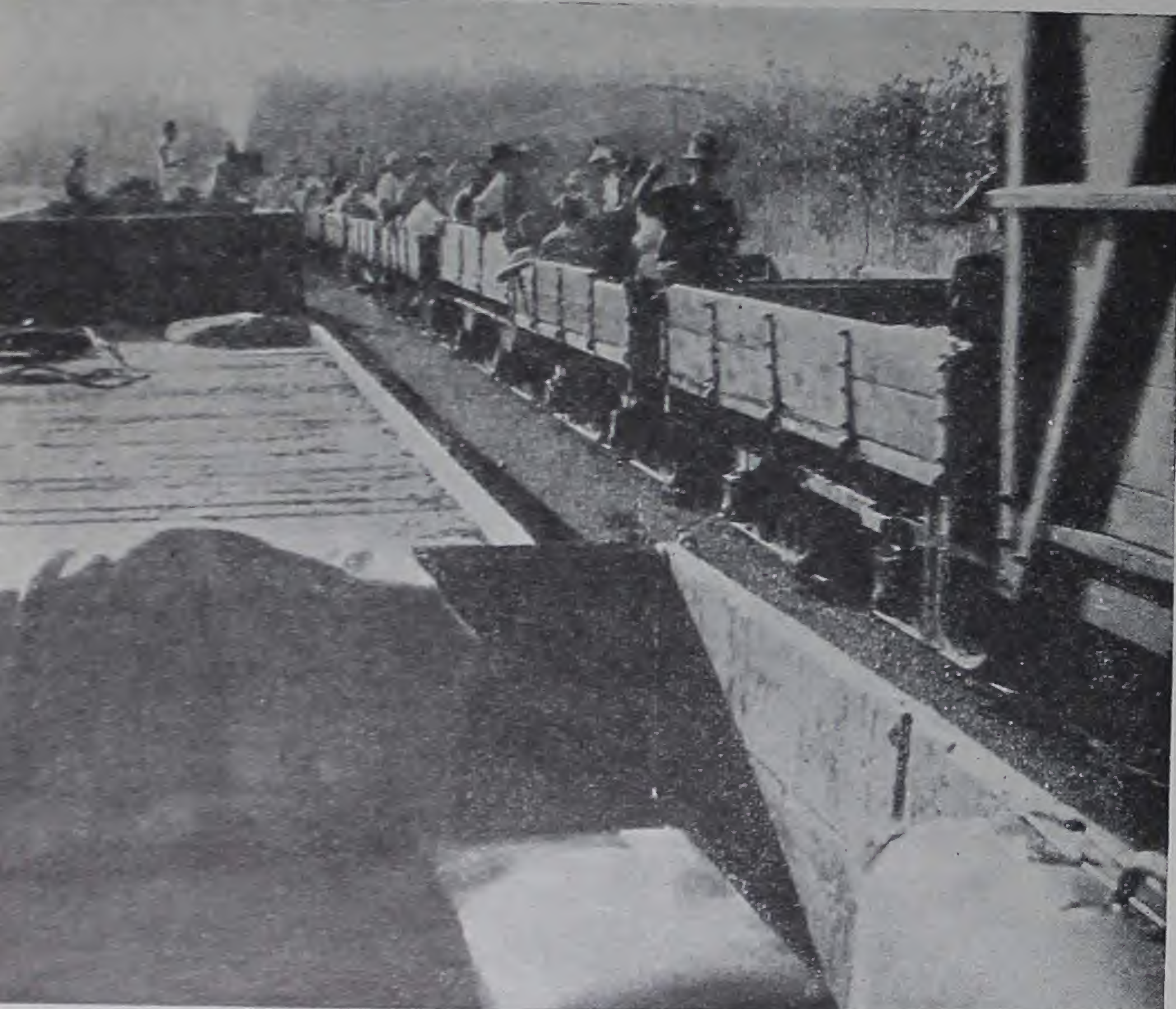
Photo, Sport & General



PORT DARWIN—FIRST TARGET FOR JAPANESE BOMBERS

The first bombs to fall on Australia were dropped on Port Darwin on February 19, 1942. Top photograph shows (left) a merchant ship exploding after a bomb hit; right background, a hospital ship afire. In foreground is an American destroyer. Considerable damage was done to harbour installations by this surprise raid. Below, evacuation of civilians after the raid.

Photos, Wide World; Keystone



such a catastrophe. Compared with an ideal state of readiness, Australia was almost as bare as a billiards ball. The reason mainly was her generosity in meeting the demands on her manpower, industry and Services made by the war raging in the Northern hemisphere. Another reason was that the ideas which London, Washington and Canberra had in December about the intelligence and efficiency of the

Japanese were all awry. They were scrapped within the first two months of war; but the task of replacing them with new ideas was not easy. Politically it was a job which caused much heart-burning. Coordination of the closest type was recognized as a prime essential. How best to achieve this? Sir Earle Page, leader of the Australian Country Party and a member of the Australian War Cabinet, came to

London: following consultation with Whitehall, he concluded that the best means of achieving success was by "common planning" before consultation at the Ministerial level."

Although the way in which Sir Earle Page's conclusion was expressed was not universally accepted, the core of what he said was approved. In *The Times* of January 21 the Rt. Hon. R. G. Menzies, asking whether we could have Empire control of an Empire war, said: "The logical case for an Empire Cabinet of some sort is complete, yet remains the most complex of problems." He was satisfied that a permanent Australian representative on the British War Cabinet would by no means produce that perfect result at which Australians were aiming. At the same time there would be great positive advantages arising out of his presence in the British War Cabinet.

Various State Premiers urged closer collaboration; the Press advocated it in various forms, ranging from an Imperial War Council, or Conference, to a Pacific War Council. Finally, the latter was set up in Washington—on March 30—with a counterpart in London. (See Chapter 215). On the Pacific Council in Washington, Australia and New Zealand are represented by Ministers—New Zealand by the Rt. Hon. Walter Nash, and Australia by Sir Owen Dixon. Mr. R. G. Casey, Britain's Minister of State in Cairo, was until March 19, 1942—Australian Minister in Washington. His acceptance of the position, and membership of the British War Cabinet, displeased Mr. Curtin and a large section of the Australian people because at that particular time it was felt his services to Australia were almost indispensable.

Mr. Curtin's disapproval of the appointment resulted in the issue on March 21 from No. 10, Downing Street, of the text of messages exchanged between Mr. Churchill and Mr. Curtin. It was thought generally in Australia that Mr. Churchill was animated by only the highest motives; that his intention probably was to give an Imperial colour to his War Cabinet because of the impracticability of setting up an Imperial Conference in London. Such a Conference was not only impracticable, but Canada made it plain that she had no desire for one. Because this view was taken of Mr. Casey's appointment there was a good deal of regret that it should have been marred somewhat by its sequel.

Since Mr. Casey immediately took up his duties as Minister of State in

Cairo his work for Australia in Washington was shouldered temporarily by Dr. Evatt, who, as Australia's Minister for External Affairs, was *en route* to London. Later, Sir Owen Dixon took over. Besides playing an important part in the creation of this international machinery for the easier prosecution of the war in the Pacific, Australia sought to readjust old machinery at home and to create new.

War at Australia's front door brought home to the people, to the State Governments, and to the Federal Government the urgent need for a greater industrial effort,

Australia's a new approach to the 'Dunkirk' man-power problem, and a far higher degree of austerity. For instance, after Mr. Curtin put into words what every Australian felt when he described the fall of Singapore as "Australia's Dunkirk," a complete mobilization of the country's resources was announced on February 17. Among other things this involved the prohibition of the manufacture of non-essential goods, and women were asked to take over men's jobs. A reduction in the sale of beer and spirits was a typical obvious change that came across the face of the Continent, and this change was deepened by the reduction in the number of race meetings allowed. Men streamed out of offices, factories and from the land. Women passed them going the other way.

American convoys began reaching Australia at the end of February.

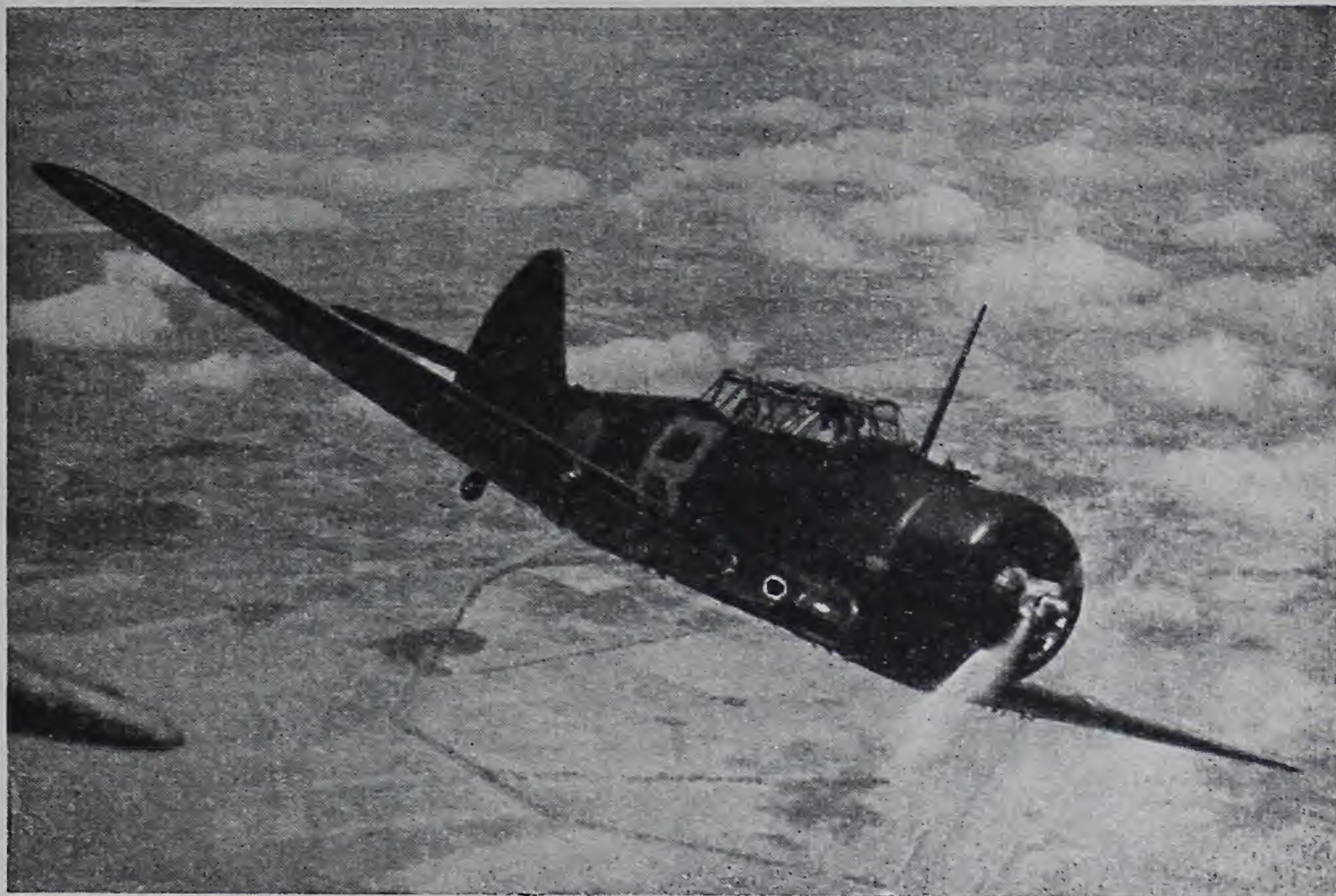
Quantities of American equipment arrived on a lease-lend basis. From the start it was plain enough to observers that the impact of this neighbourly invasion would have profound psychological repercussions. On the first occasion that Australia had been invaded in such a way it was by Asiatics: that was in the gold-rush days of 1850. A great deal of good flowed from that "invasion." An impetus was given to Australia's intellectual development and, generally, the experience enriched her. Between then and the first six months of the war in the Pacific there had been no comparable "invasion." Only small wavelets of immigration from Britain and the European Continent had to be dealt with; and the Commonwealth was visited by few Americans, mostly tourists.

In March the A.I.F. militia and permanent army were combined in one homogeneous force. After MacArthur's appointment General Blamey, then

in a new U.S. naval command, separate from MacArthur's command.

These military announcements were followed by a broadcast to the United Kingdom by Mr. Curtin, who spoke "from the land that is preparing to meet an invasion." By this time the Japanese were pressing down rapidly. With what they had, the Australians were pushing north as fast as they could.

Singapore, with the unexpectedness of a thunderbolt, fell on February 15, the surrender being signed at 7 p.m. local time, 12.30 p.m. British time. General Percival said the cause was shortage of water, petrol, food, ammunition. What General Gordon Bennett, who led the Australians, thought the fall was due to has not been published, although he escaped and, after adventures, turned up in Australia, there writing a report which was forwarded to Whitehall. A special correspondent of *The Times*, telling a deplorable story of ineptitude and neglect in which the absence of



AUSTRALIAN-BUILT AIRCRAFT AND SMALL-ARMS

Top, Australia was largely dependent, at the outbreak of the war with Japan, on Wirraway aircraft, based on a type designed for training and built in the Dominion. The Owen sub-machine gun (left, being packed for issue) was invented by Evelyn Owen, of the A.I.F. It fires at the rate of 600 rounds per minute and resembles the Sten gun.

Photos, Australian Official ; Sport & General



second in command in the Middle East, was appointed C.-in-C. of the land forces in Australia. And on April 19 MacArthur's headquarters issued a statement on the new command in the S.W. Pacific area. New Zealand, on April 23, made it clear that these new commands in no way involved New Zealand, because New Zealand was declared to be

forceful leadership played a large part, said :

"Until more aeroplanes are made available to the Allied forces in the Pacific so that they can gain edge over the Japanese in the air, it is going to be difficult to hold the Japanese at sea and on the ground. It is not the Japanese who are strong in the air, it is the Allies who are weak."

Japan's success rested on air and naval supremacy. Her air force was a surprise, technically and numerically. The Allied forces met Japan's airmen



JAPANESE MENACE TO AUSTRALIA

The Japanese conquest of the chain of islands to the north and east deprived Australia of her natural shield against invasion. Henceforth fighter and bomber aircraft could be flown in stages from Japan to Timor, New Guinea, and the Solomons, and the war had come to Australia's 'front door.' But General MacArthur decided to meet the enemy in New Guinea, and fight out the issue there.

Specially drawn for THE SECOND GREAT WAR by Félix Gardon

with only Brewster Buffalos, Hudsons and some Australian-made trainer craft called Wirraways. The Allies had only a handful of high-flying bombers, while the Japanese had low-flying ones and plenty of dive-bombers. Most reliable estimates indicate that half the Allied air force was destroyed on the ground in the first onslaught.

In a naval sense the blow at Pearl Harbour temporarily knocked out the bottom of the Allied position. Every battleship and most of the aircraft were put out of action. The "Repulse" and the "Prince of Wales," sunk by Japanese aircraft off the Malayan coast on December 10, 1941,

were the strongest British units in the Pacific. With Japan mistress of the seas and the skies it became clear, with the fall of Singapore, that the Allies never had a chance on land short of a line immediately north of Australia and running through the Netherlands East Indies, Java, Timor and New Guinea. In Malaya the Allies had in the field two Indian divisions, two Australian brigades, some British battalions, and some garrison troops. No exact official figure is available; but the total force is believed to have numbered between 60,000 and 95,000 men. With this force, the Allies attempted to hold an area larger than England against an expert, fanatical army, trained on entirely new lines in jungle warfare, equipped in an entirely new way, and immunized for jungle warfare.

Almost before Australians realized it the Malayan campaign was over.

Australia, like New Zealand and South Africa, declared war on Japan on December 9 (24 hours after the British Government had declared Britain to be at war with Japan). Putting infiltration tactics into operation instantly, a comparatively small Japanese force, estimated to be about two divisions strong, began to constrain the British and Dominion forces to withdraw from one strong point to another, from one line to another, until at last Singapore was reached: and from Singapore there was nowhere else to withdraw, except across sea, and there were not enough ships to take away the troops who found themselves cut off and trapped.

The first major withdrawal in which Australians took part was enforced on December 10, when the Japanese took Kota Bharu aerodrome, and the Imperial Forces retired southward. There were only a handful of Australians at Hongkong when, on December 13, the Japanese demand for its surrender was refused—a refusal repeated on December 17 by the Governor, Sir Mark Young. (The water supply cut off, Hongkong surrendered on December 25.) By December 16 Japan had gained ground in Kedah, in Malaya; while in Burma the British withdrew from Victoria Point.

From then on the position went from bad to worse. Australia had been sending volunteers to Malaya for a year before Japan struck. These troops, together with British and Indian regulars, had trained for this hour. Now all the visions of a quick, glorious defeat of the Japanese were evaporating

with the speed of water in a shallow pan in a tropical sun. Penang was evacuated on December 19. Japan's conquest of Malaya was complete when Singapore capitulated on February 15.

With little variation this story, dismally enough, applies to the invasion of the Dutch Islands, begun on December 16. Methodically, the Japanese began at the north and finished up in the south. It was this southward drive which offered a direct threat to Australia; by the end of January the threat was acute.

Bombs were dropped on Australia for the first time on February 19, when Japanese aircraft swooped on Port Darwin. Meeting with little opposition, having the advantage of surprise, they did considerable damage to installations and ships in the harbour, besides inflicting casualties. After that there were air-raids on Broome, on the west coast, and Townsville, on the east coast. The fear was that Japan would take Port Moresby in New Guinea—which would give her the key position north of Australia and from which a grand assault on the Commonwealth might be launched.

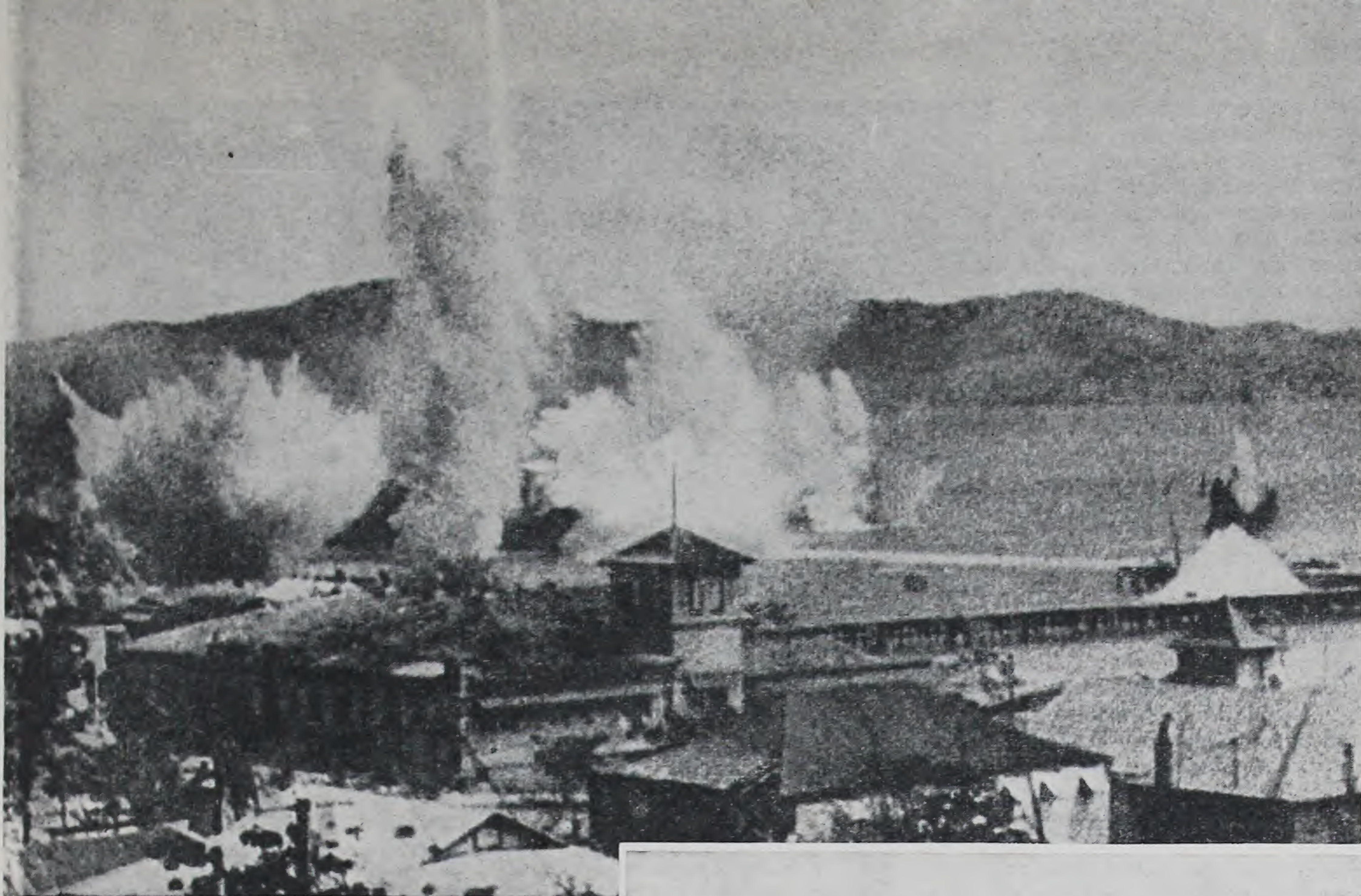
General Bennett on March 2 told Australia that a "Japanese attack is coming very quickly." As this warning came after the battle of the Java Sea (February 27) Australians were ready to believe it. In

Gordon Bennett's Warning

the late afternoon a small Allied squadron sighted and engaged a Japanese fleet protecting an invasion convoy. Although outnumbered, the Allied ships continued the engagement for three days until their entire force was wiped out—five cruisers, six destroyers and the Australian sloop H.M.A.S. "Yarra."

Dutch forces evacuated Batavia on March 5. During March the Japanese bombed Port Moresby on 15 separate days, with the idea of blasting Australians out of it. On March 8 they landed in force at Salamaua and Lae in New Guinea. The Rising Sun flag was flying boldly now over innumerable islands and a vast amount of territory—from Tongking Gulf to the Java Sea. Imperial and Allied forces had retreated steadily in the face of the invader.

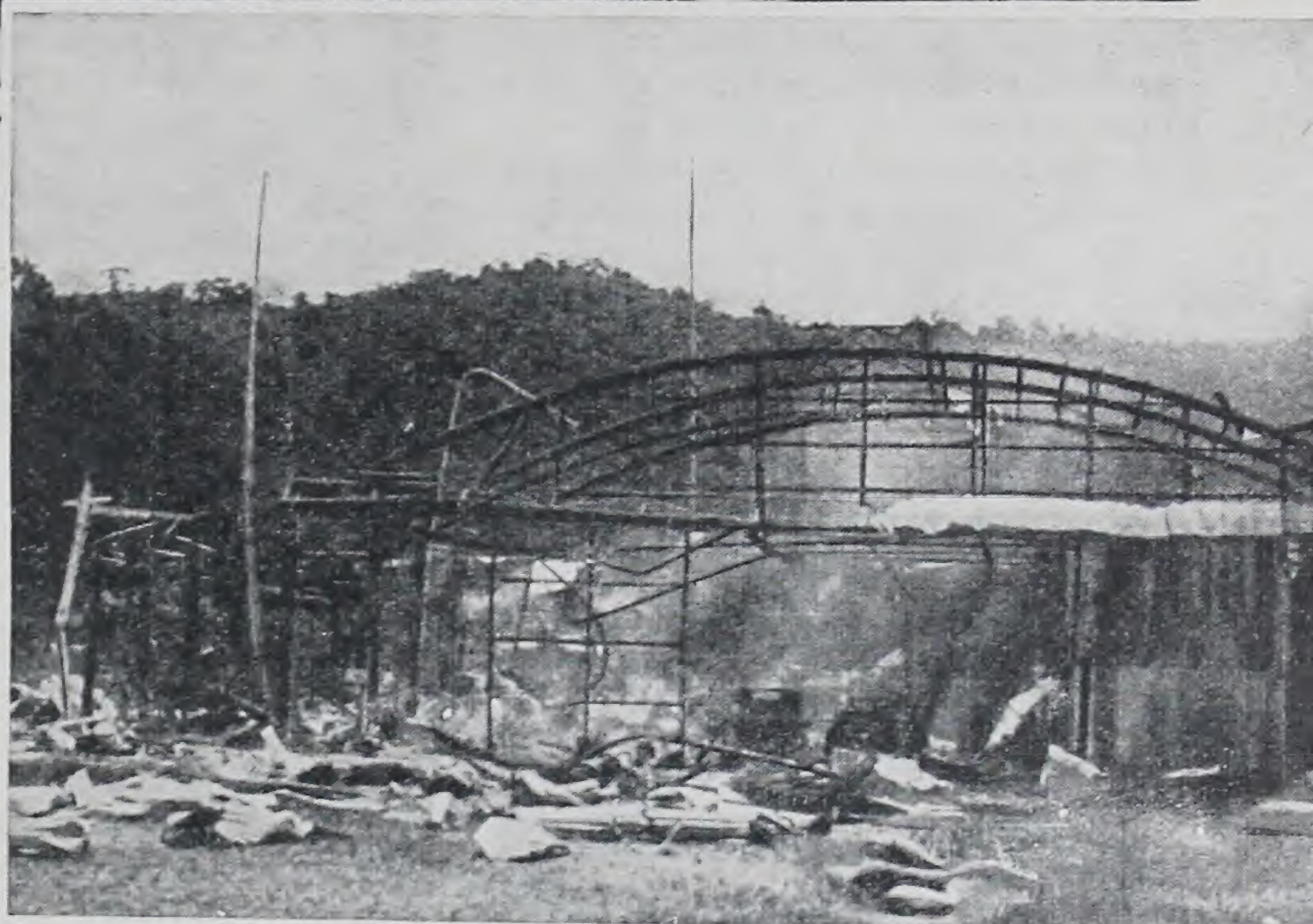
Australians who were alarmed by the tragic cavalcade of events had their thoughts expressed for them, on March 9, by Dr. van Mook, Lieut. Governor-General of the Netherlands East Indies, who on reaching Adelaide said: "There should be an end to destroying and retreating." It was easier to say this than to do it, although next day a vivid flash of encouragement shot through the dark clouds overhanging the Pacific as Allied aircraft, based on Australia, put out of action seven ships of a



WHERE AUSTRALIA'S BATTLE WAS TO BE FOUGHT

General Douglas MacArthur, on reaching Australia in March 1942, determined that the battle for the Dominion should be fought out in New Guinea, and not on Australian soil. New Guinea, divided in sovereignty between the Netherlands and Australia, has an area of about 315,000 square miles. Top, in the harbour at Port Moresby a merchantman is almost hidden by splashes from near bomb hits during one of the frequent Japanese raids. Below, U.S. officers examining wreckage of enemy Zero fighter shot down in the mountains. Right, bombed hangar of Mandated Airlines at Salamaua. Lower right, an American officer visits a Papuan village.

Photos, Keystone ; Associated Press ; Central Press



Japanese invasion fleet heading for Port Moresby. It was the first large crippling blow from the air delivered against the Japanese in that section of the Pacific front. Stimulated by their success, the Allies launched new air raids against Salamaua, Lae and Rabaul.

These raids surprised and puzzled the enemy. They were unexpected and the Japanese could not guess accurately how much they were representative of the defensive power of Australia. They also imbued the Australian Federal Government with a renewed spirit of the offensive. Mr. Curtin, broadcasting to America on March 13, declared: "Our minds are set on attack." Five days later Washington announced successful Allied attacks on Japanese shipping and land installations in New Guinea: 23 ships were put out of action, including four warships; five transports were sunk, and five warships were damaged for the loss of one aircraft.

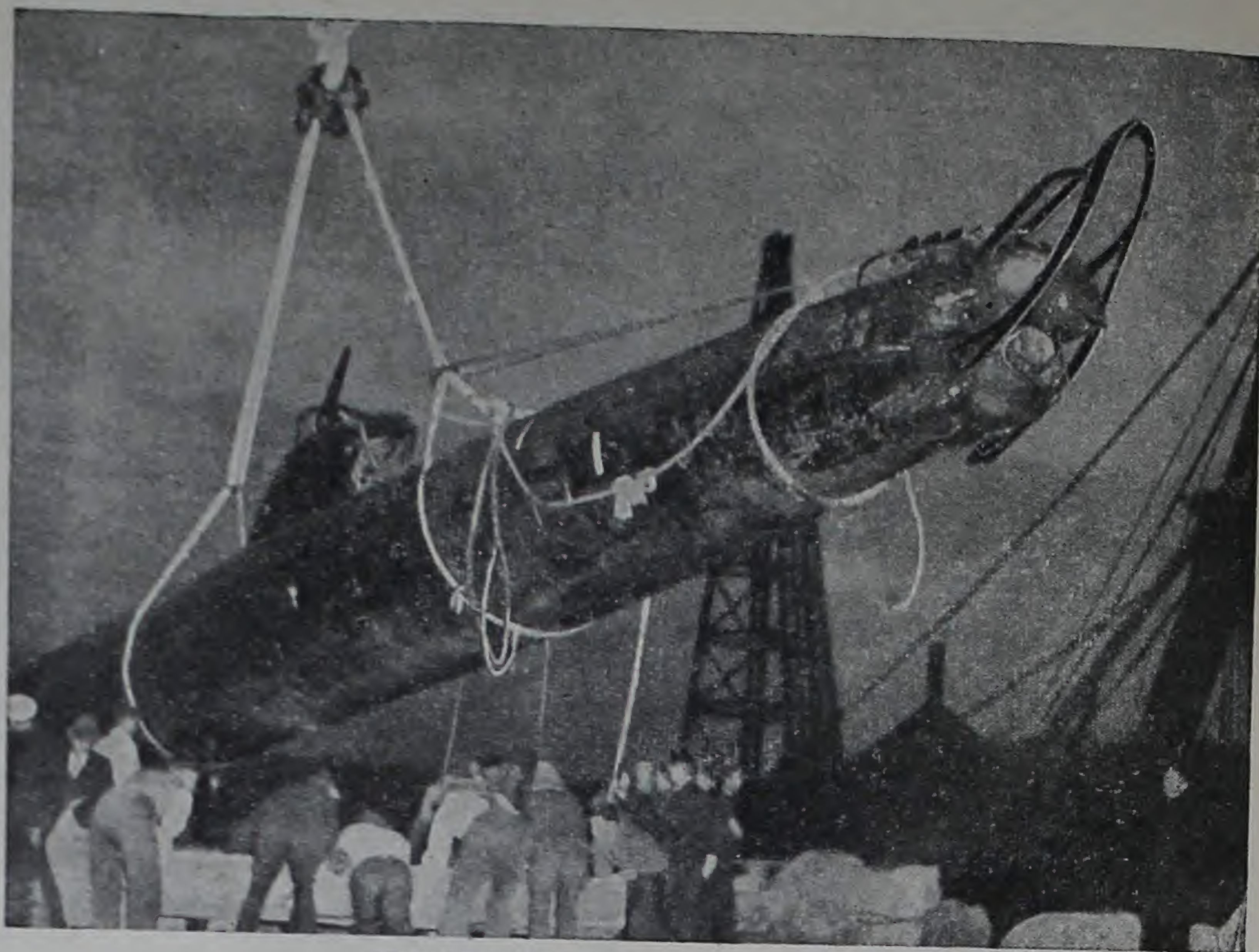
To paraphrase a road sign familiar to motorists, Japan read these signs as: "Halt. Major danger ahead." From March 18 Japan did not cease trying to worm her way into a position where she would dominate all the territory,



DR. HERBERT V. EVATT

Australia's Minister for External Affairs, Dr. Evatt took over for a time the duties in Washington laid down by Mr. R. G. Casey when the latter became Minister of State in Cairo. On May 2, 1942, Dr. Evatt came to London and, as accredited representative, attended meetings of the War Cabinet and Pacific War Council. He arrived back in Australia on June 21.

Photo, Associated Press



NEW TACTICS IN UNDER-SEA WARFARE

First used in the attack on Pearl Harbour, midget submarines of the type here seen were employed again in the futile raid on shipping in Sydney Harbour during the night of May 31-June 1, 1942. There are no engines proper, and the batteries for the propulsion motors have to be charged by the parent ship from which the submarine is launched. The vessel seen above is being raised from Sydney Harbour, where it was sunk by the port defences.

Photo, Keystone

swinging in an arc from Thailand to New Guinea, which lies like a scimitar poised above Australia. Her last great attempt in the first six months of the war was made between May 4 and May 9, when the Battle of the Coral Sea was fought. Actually, this significant naval and air battle (in which air power was decisive) began off the Solomon Islands on May 4. A part of a Japanese invasion fleet was intercepted by U.S. naval and air forces. On May 7 the battle was resumed in the Coral Sea and resulted in the Japanese fleet withdrawing north. Japanese losses were seven major warships sunk, two probably sunk, and more than 20 damaged; U.S. losses were the aircraft-carrier "Lexington," one destroyer and one tanker.

At the end of June Japan's defensive orbit could be traced from the Aleutians in the north Pacific to Java. Yet the struggle was concentrated in the central Pacific, or Oceania. Here there are about 3,500 islands. The principal Powers participating were Japan, America, Australia and New Zealand. It was the opinion of military experts in the English-speaking countries that, although a brake had been put on Japan's juggernaut, the crucial battles were ahead; superiority in combined sea and air power would be decisive.

Before the war America's principal interests in the Pacific centred upon the defence of her western coast and Alaska.

The pivotal point in all her naval strategy was the Panama Canal, link between the Pacific and the Atlantic. Added to this were her trade routes to the Far East, Australia and South America. Strategically, Britain's main defensive base was Singapore, that wonderful naval base (not remotely resembling a fortress) driven like a huge steel stake into the cross-roads on the Straits of Malacca. It guarded Australia and New Zealand and was the key to the ocean gateways to India.

At the end of the first six months a glance at the strategic pattern showed the Japanese were satisfied that control of New Guinea was a vital factor if they were successfully to attempt a large-scale invasion of Australia. On the other hand, the Allies knew that New Guinea must be recaptured and freed entirely from Japanese forces before a firm defensive line could be drawn north of Australia between Timor Island and New Guinea. They were satisfied—not in theory, but as a result of perilous experience—that New Guinea was a stepping-stone between themselves and Japan, and that Java was only second in importance.

To prove these strategic facts Japan had taken, temporarily, supreme command over a radius of more than 3,000 miles at a cost to Australia of approximately 20,000 casualties (all Services) killed, wounded, prisoners or missing.

EPOCH-MAKING TREATIES WITH THE U.S.S.R.

On May 26, 1942 the alliance between Britain and Russia was consummated by the signing of a Treaty of Collaboration and Mutual Assistance. The second Part, dealing with common action to preserve peace in the post-war period, was to run for 20 years. In January both Britain and Russia had concluded a Treaty with Persia, the text of which is also given here.

ANGLO-SOVIET-IRANIAN TREATY OF ALLIANCE, SIGNED AT TEHERAN ON JANUARY 29, 1942.

THE preamble states that it is based on the principles of the Atlantic Charter and results from the desire of the three parties to strengthen the bonds of friendship and mutual understanding. Treaty contains nine articles:

Article 1. Britain and the U.S.S.R. undertake to respect the territorial integrity, sovereignty and political independence of Iran.

Article 2. Establishes an alliance between the two Powers and Iran.

Article 3. The Allied Powers undertake to defend Iran from aggression by Germany or any other Power. Iran undertakes to co-operate with the Allies by all the means at its command, but the assistance of the Iranian forces will be limited to maintaining internal security. Furthermore the Allies receive the right to maintain, guard and in certain circumstances control all means of communication, and will receive all assistance and facilities in obtaining material and recruiting labour; at the same time the Allies will give full consideration to the essential needs of Iran.

Article 4. Permits the Allies to maintain in Iran such land, sea and air forces as they consider necessary; their presence on Iranian territory will not constitute a military occupation and will disturb as little as possible the normal life of the country.

Article 5. Lays down that the Allied forces shall be withdrawn not later than six months after hostilities cease.

Article 6. Binds Britain and the U.S.S.R. not to adopt in their relations with other countries an attitude prejudicial to the territorial integrity or political independence of Iran, nor to conclude treaties inconsistent with the present treaty. Iran will be consulted in all matters affecting her direct interests and will on her side likewise undertake similar obligations towards the Allies.

Article 7. The Allied Powers undertake to safeguard as far as possible the economic existence of the Iranian people against privations and difficulties arising out of the war.

Article 8. Lays down that the provisions of the treaty are equally binding as bilateral obligations between Iran and each of the Allied Powers.

Article 9. Lays down that the treaty remains in force until withdrawal of the British and Russian forces from Iran.

TREATY OF ALLIANCE IN THE WAR AGAINST HITLERITE GERMANY AND HER ASSOCIATES IN EUROPE AND OF COLLABORATION AND MUTUAL ASSISTANCE THEREAFTER BETWEEN THE UNION OF SOVIET SOCIALIST REPUBLICS AND THE UNITED KINGDOM OF GREAT BRITAIN AND NORTHERN IRELAND. LONDON, MAY 26, 1942.

HIS Majesty The King of Great Britain, Ireland, and the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Emperor of India, and the Presidium of the Supreme Council of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics:

Have decided to conclude a treaty for that purpose and have appointed as their Plenipotentiaries:

His Majesty The King of Great Britain, Ireland, and the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Emperor of India,

For the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland: The Right Honourable Anthony Eden, M.P., His Majesty's Principal Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs;

The Presidium of the Supreme Council of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics: M. Vyacheslav Mikhailovich Molotov, People's Commissar for Foreign Affairs,

Who, having communicated their full powers, found in good and due form, have agreed as follows:

PART I.

Article I. In virtue of the alliance established between the United Kingdom and the Union of Soviet Socialist

Republics, the High Contracting Parties mutually undertake to afford one another military and other assistance and support of all kinds in the war against Germany and all those States which are associated with her in acts of aggression in Europe.

Article II. The High Contracting Parties undertake not to enter into any negotiations with the Hitlerite Government or any other Government in Germany that does not clearly renounce all aggressive intentions, and not to negotiate or conclude except by mutual consent any armistice or peace treaty with Germany or any other State associated with her in acts of aggression in Europe.

PART II.

Article III. (1) The High Contracting Parties declare their desire to unite with other like-minded States in adopting proposals for common action to preserve peace and resist aggression in the post-war period.

(2) Pending the adoption of such proposals, they will after the termination of hostilities take all the measures in their power to render impossible a repetition of aggression and violation of the peace by Germany or any of the States associated with her in acts of aggression in Europe.

Article IV. Should one of the High Contracting Parties during the post-war period become involved in hostilities with Germany or any of the States mentioned in Article III (2) in consequence of an attack by that State against that Party, the other High Contracting Party will at once give to the Contracting Party so involved in hostilities all the military and other support and assistance in his power.

This Article shall remain in force until the High Contracting Parties, by mutual consent, shall recognize that it is superseded by the adoption of the proposals contemplated in Article III (1). In default of the adoption of such proposals, it shall remain in force for a period of 20 years, and thereafter until terminated by either High Contracting Party, as provided in Article VIII.

Article V. The High Contracting Parties, having regard to the interests and the security of each of them, agree to work together in close and friendly collaboration after the re-establishment of peace for the organization of security and economic prosperity in Europe. They will take into account the interests of the United Nations in these objects, and they will act in accordance with the two principles of not seeking territorial aggrandizement for themselves and of non-interference in the internal affairs of other States.

Article VI. The High Contracting Parties agree to render one another all possible economic assistance after the war.

Article VII. Each High Contracting Party undertakes not to conclude any alliance and not to take part in any coalition directed against the other High Contracting Party.

Article VIII. The present treaty is subject to ratification in the shortest possible time, and the instruments of ratification shall be exchanged in Moscow as soon as possible.

It comes into force immediately on the exchange of the instruments of ratification, and shall thereupon replace the agreement between the Government of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics and His Majesty's Government in the United Kingdom, signed at Moscow on July 12, 1941.

Part I of the present treaty shall remain in force until the re-establishment of peace between the High Contracting Parties and Germany and the Powers associated with her in acts of aggression in Europe.

Part II of the present treaty shall remain in force for a period of 20 years. Thereafter, unless 12 months' notice has been given by either party to terminate the treaty at the end of the said period of 20 years, it shall continue in force until 12 months after either High Contracting Party shall have given notice to the other in writing of his intention to terminate it.


ROYAL NAVAL SERVICE




the Wrens and free a man to join the fleet

TO THE DIRECTOR W.R.N.S.
50 CHANCERY CROSS LONDON SW1

DIG FOR VICTORY



Another Mechanised Army



There are half a million Railwaymen on the Home Front . . . their equipment, their specialised training and unrivalled transport knowledge are contributing vitally to the National Cause

You can Rely on BRITISH RAILWAYS

THE ENEMY LISTENS



saves Soldier's Lives



BACK UP THE FIGHTING FORCES

POSTERS INFORMED, EXHORTED & INSPIRED

Continuing our documentary record of war-time Britain, here is a further selection from the many Home front posters which helped to sustain and increase the war effort. In the main the appeals were robust, forthright and well directed, though there were lapses (not here illustrated) on to lower levels. Note the striking example issued by the British Railways; and the significant slogan stencilled on goods for export. (See also pp. 551, 828, 1183, 1417, 1489.)

FRUSTRATE HIS KNAVISH TRICKS !!!



PREVENT SABOTAGE

(Fire and Wrecking)

Report suspicious persons & things **AT ONCE**

WHAT MOTORISTS MUST DO

BY DAY

Park your car off the main highway, close to the kerb.

Obey promptly any instructions from police or air raid wardens.

Go to the nearest shelter, or take cover.

AT NIGHT

Do the same as by day, but **SWITCH OFF YOUR HEADLAMP.** Leave rear and side lights on.



ERNEST BEVIN SAYS—

"We must have Exports"

IF YOU ARE WORKING FOR EXPORT YOU ARE WORKING FOR VICTORY

ISSUED BY THE EXPORT COUNCIL, BOARD OF TRADE, AUGUST 1940



Put out WASTE PAPER

it is used for **AMMUNITION** and other vital needs



BRITAIN DELIVERS THE GOODS



in a raid—

Don't stand and stare at the sky. Take cover at once



TESTING TIME FOR THE HOME FRONT: FIRST SIX MONTHS OF 1942

This Chapter covers the period January to June, 1942, a time of disappointment and disaster that called for and found wise and discerning leadership and a ready response on the part of the Nation. Opening with Mr. Churchill's account of his stewardship, on his return from Washington, it closes with his reply to his critics again on July 2, on the motion of censure

HAVING reached with Mr. Roosevelt what was described by the President's secretary as "a complete understanding on joint planning for present and future military and naval operations," Mr. Churchill left Washington for home early in January 1942. On the way back he spent a brief holiday in Florida and from there proceeded to Bermuda, where he inspected the base recently leased to the U.S. and delivered a short address to the legislative assembly (see illus., p. 1918). Then on January 16 he set off again in a British Airways flying-boat, made the crossing of 3,365 miles in just under 18 hours, and arrived at Plymouth on January 17. A few hours later he was back at his desk in Downing Street.

The Premier's statement on his consultations with the American President was eagerly awaited, more particularly since the news from every theatre of war contributed to the

Vote of Confidence burden of the critics. It was made to the House of Commons on January 27—a long speech, the first of a long debate marked throughout by speaking of the most forthright description. "Since my return to this country," began the Premier, "I have come to the conclusion that I must ask to be sustained by a vote of confidence from the House of Commons." This was a thoroughly normal, constitutional, democratic procedure. A debate on the war had been asked for; he had arranged that it should be carried on in the fullest and freest manner for three whole days. Any member would be able to say anything he thought fit about or against the administration, the composition or personalities of the Government, subject only to the reservation about military secrets. The House would fail in its duty if it did not insist upon freedom of debate and a clear and honest vote. "It is because things have gone badly, and worse is to come, that I demand a vote of confidence."

Then Mr. Churchill proceeded to his review. He began with a glowing tribute to the glorious achievements of the Russian armies; he went on to

describe the "strange, sombre battle of the desert where our men have met the enemy for the first time . . . upon the whole . . . with equal weapons." Next he touched on the war with the vast military empire of Japan. He spoke of the gigantic munitions output of the British Isles, of the shipping situation, of the organization of China's four-and-a-half years' single-handed stand, of the great company of nations who were now united against the Axis. There had been terrific changes in the past three months, particularly the last three weeks. Some of the more important of these dated from his recent meeting with Mr. Roosevelt in Washington. The vanguard of the American Army had already arrived in the United Kingdom; U.S. air squadrons were coming to take part in the defence of Britain and the bombing offensive against Germany; the U.S. Navy was so linked in

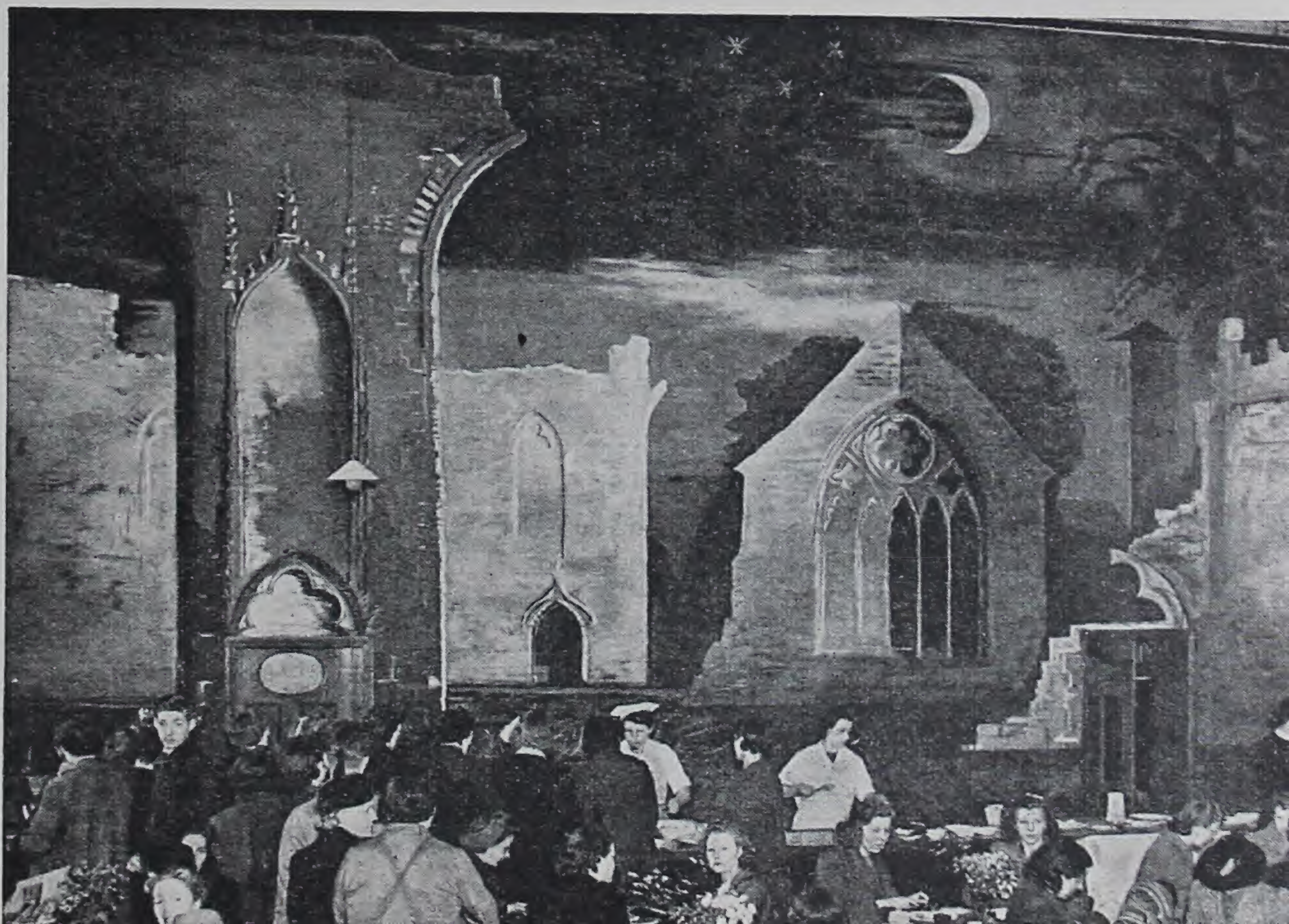
intimate union with the Admiralty in both the Atlantic and Pacific that henceforth naval movements would be planned together as if the two Navies were one fleet. Yet another great change had been the formation of the League of 26 Nations, based on the principle of the Atlantic Charter. The Premier and President had taken steps for the defence of Australasia and the British and Dutch possessions in the East Indies against Japanese aggression. Finally they had established a vast common pool of raw materials and shipping, of weapons and munitions.

"Therefore," concluded the Premier, "I feel entitled to come to the House of Commons, whose servant I am, and ask them not to press me to act against my conscience and better judgement and make scapegoats in order to improve my own position; not to press me to do things which might be clamoured for at the moment but which will not help in our war effort; but, on the contrary, to

IN THE 'BRITISH RESTAURANT' AT MERTON, SURREY

It was decorated by pupils of the Slade School of Art to designs by John Piper, representing the ruins of Merton Abbey. Born of the severe air raids which tore down and blasted away not only peoples' homes but many catering establishments where they might have gone for meals, the 'British Restaurants' set up by the Food Ministry won instant success and appreciation. The 1,000th restaurant was opened at Slough on August 23, 1941, by Lord Woolton, Minister of Food.

Photo, "The Times."



give me their encouragement and their aid. I have never ventured to predict the future. I stand by my original programme, 'Blood, toil, tears and sweat,' which is all I have ever offered and to which is added five months later, 'Many shortcomings, mistakes, and disappointments.' But it is because I see the light gleaming behind the clouds and brightening upon our path that I make so bold now as to demand a declaration of the confidence of the House of Commons as an additional weapon in the armoury of the United Nations."

First to follow the Premier in the debate was Mr. Pethick-Lawrence, who began with a caustic reference to those who for various reasons had been paying lip-service to Mr. Churchill's leadership while at the same time seeking to undermine it. He hoped the Premier would, after proper investigation, cause a drastic purge to be made of these backsliders. But for the rest, like nearly every other speaker, he was in anxious vein, and the note of criticism was seldom absent. Why had the "Prince of Wales" and the "Repulse" been sent to eastern waters without proper air protection? he inquired. Mr. Erskine-Hill asked how it was that in Malaya they seemed to be so certain before Pearl Harbour that there was nothing to worry about; Sir H. Williams delivered a vitriolic attack on the Civil Service; Mr. Henderson Stewart scoffed at the Prime Minister's disclosure that production was now better than it had been; what really mattered was that it was not big enough, and had not been properly conducted.

AFTER A YEAR OF CLOTHES RATIONING

New books of clothing coupons were issued as from June 1, 1942, containing 60 coupons intended to last until July 31, 1943 (later extended to August 31). A quarter of a million tons of shipping had been saved on textiles alone during the first 12 months of the rationing scheme.



AIRCRAFT PRODUCTION

Col. J. J. Llewellyn, P.C., C.B.E., M.C. Appointed President of the Board of Trade on February 4, 1942, he was formerly Parliamentary Secretary to the Minister of Aircraft Production. Later in the month he became Minister of Aircraft Production, his place at the Board of Trade being taken by Dr. Hugh Dalton.

Photos, Sport & General; Topical Press

On the second day Mr. Attlee, Lord Privy Seal, formally moved a vote of confidence in the Government. The debate was opened by Sir J. Wardlaw-Milne; he acknowledged the immense service which Mr. Churchill had rendered in visiting America, but for the rest he was outspokenly critical, particularly over the situation that had been revealed in the Far East: he expressed extreme disgust at the flights of fancy indulged in by officials at Singapore and by some of the recent communiqués from Cairo. Coming then to the home front, he expressed the view that in their desire and determination to win the war the Government as a whole



SECRETARY FOR WAR

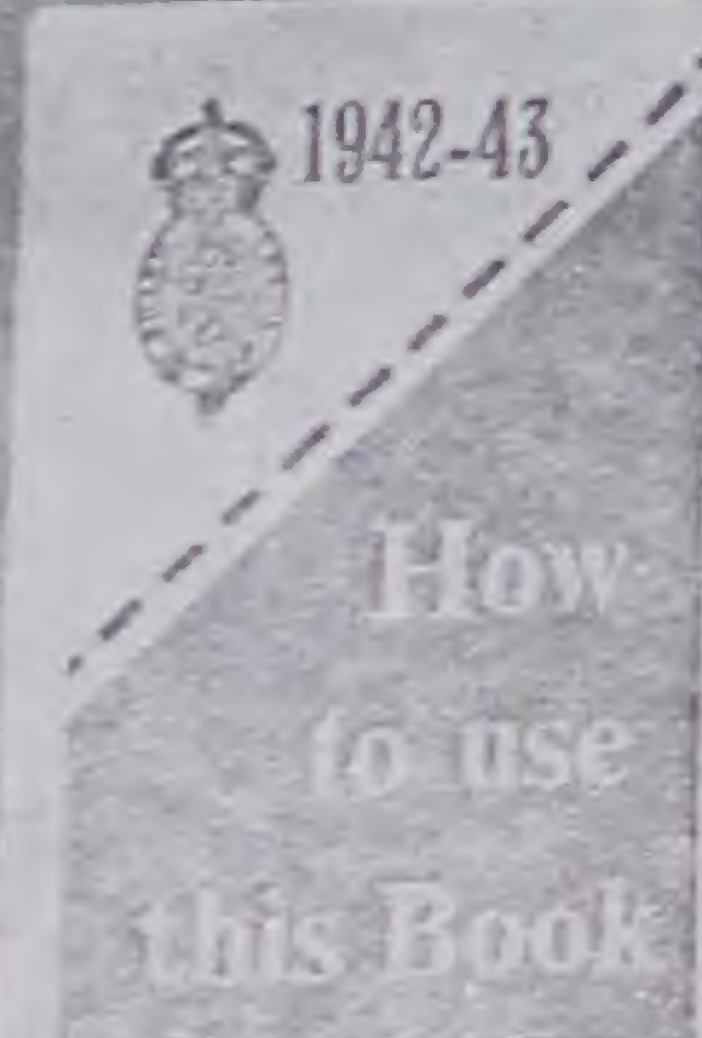
Sir James Grigg, K.C.B., K.C.S.I. From his Civil Service post of Permanent Under-Secretary at the War Office he was appointed Secretary for War in succession to Captain Margesson on February 22, 1942. Before going to the War Office in 1939 he had been Finance Member of the Government of India.

was to him a great shining light, and that was why he supported it, but in other matters sometimes it was no better than a gas jet.

Another anxious note was struck by Mr. Grahame White, who declared that there was a growing feeling among both civilians and soldiers that they would like to have a clear idea of the kind of peace they were fighting for; there were still some people, he averred, who felt that they had not got a frightful lot to lose. Mr. Shinwell followed in bellicose mood; in particular he expressed the deepest concern over the shipping situation. Then Major Randolph Churchill defended his father's team in a spirited speech. Perhaps it was not a very good Government, he said; but then, "Is it a very good House of Commons?"

On the third day there were more critical speeches, the most notable being those by Mr. Hore-Belisha and Earl Winterton. Then Mr. Churchill replied. It had been a full and free debate, he said; no criticism had been hampered or stifled—such a debate, indeed, as would have been impossible in any other country conducting a war. But because of this freedom the House of Commons had a great responsibility. Point by point he answered his critics on the battles by sea and land, on the less dramatic but equally important events of the production front. Then he came to the naval disaster in which our two great warships had gone down. After a wholehearted defence of

**Premier's
Reply
to Critics**



1. Fill in your name, address and National Registration Number (copied from your Identity Card) in the spaces provided on the front cover.
2. When shopping, you must not cut out the coupons yourself, but must hand your book to the shopkeeper and let him cut them out. IT IS ILLEGAL FOR THE SHOPKEEPER TO ACCEPT LOOSE COUPONS.
3. When ordering goods by post, do not send this book—cut the coupons out, sign your name clearly on the back, and send them with your order. Each of the coupons counts one only, despite the various numbers on them.
4. If you join the Navy, Army or Air Force, take this book with you—it will be asked for. If you go abroad, you must hand your book to the Immigration Officer before you embark. The Clothing Books of deceased persons must be handed to the Registrar of Births and Deaths when the death is notified.
5. This book is the property of H.M. Government, and may only be used by or on behalf of the person to whom it is issued. TAKE CARE NOT TO LOSE IT.

READ THE ABOVE INSTRUCTIONS CAREFULLY



Sir Tom Phillips' action in Malaya, he came to his conclusion. "I offer no apologies. I offer no excuses. I make no promises. . . . I have finished. Let every man act now in accordance with what he thinks is his duty, in harmony with his heart and conscience." The House divided and the voting revealed 464 for the vote of confidence, with Mr. Maxton as the solitary occupant of the "no" lobby.

Overwhelmingly large as was the Government's majority, it did not indicate anything more than the Commons' belief that in that grim hour Mr. Churchill was the only possible captain of the ship of state. It was a personal triumph, not an affirmation of confidence in the men who were the Premier's aides in his tremendous tasks. So it was not surprising that the debate was followed by a partial reconstruction of the Cabinet. On February 4 it was announced from 10, Downing Street, that Lord Beaverbrook had been appointed Minister of Production, his place as Minister of Supply being taken by Sir Andrew Duncan; at the same time Col. J. J. Llewellyn had become President of the Board of Trade, but the new arrangement apparently did not work satisfactorily, since a fortnight later, on February 19, following the grave tidings of the invasion of Burma, the fall of Singapore, and the escape of the Nazi warships from Brest, a reconstitution of the War Cabinet was announced. Mr. Attlee became Deputy Prime Minister and Secretary for the Dominions; Sir Stafford Cripps assumed the duties of Leader of the House of Commons, while holding the portfolio of Lord Privy Seal; Mr. Oliver Lyttelton would



UTILITY 'LIGHTER'

Owing to short supplies of matches the petrol lighter came into even greater demand, and various Government patterns were put on the market at the controlled price of 6s. 6d. at the end of 1941. They were made mainly of plastics, and used little metal.

return from Cairo to assume general direction of production as Minister of State; Sir Kingsley Wood was omitted from the new War Cabinet, although he continued to act as Chancellor of the Exchequer. Lord Beaverbrook and Mr. Greenwood were dropped from the Government altogether.

Yet more changes were to come. On February 22 the rather surprising appointment was announced of Sir James Grigg, a permanent Civil Servant, to the post of Secretary for War;

at the same time Lord Cranborne became Colonial Secretary and Leader of the House of Lords; Dr. Hugh Dalton, President of the Board of Trade; Lord Portal, Minister of Works and Buildings; Col. Llewellyn, Minister of Aircraft Production; and Lord Wolmer, Minister for Economic Warfare. Another list of ministerial changes was published on March 4, the most interesting appointment being that of Sir William Jowitt as Paymaster-General—in itself a sinecure post, but it was

stated that Sir William would carry out the duties hitherto performed by Mr. Greenwood in connexion with the study of post-war problems. Then on March 12 the Premier informed the House of Commons that Mr. Lyttelton was being appointed Minister of Production with general responsibility for the whole field of production. A number of minor ministerial changes were also announced.

To Sir Stafford Cripps fell the delicate task of taking to India the British Government's proposals for a plan to end the deadlock with Congress and other political parties, which was frustrating the Indian war effort.

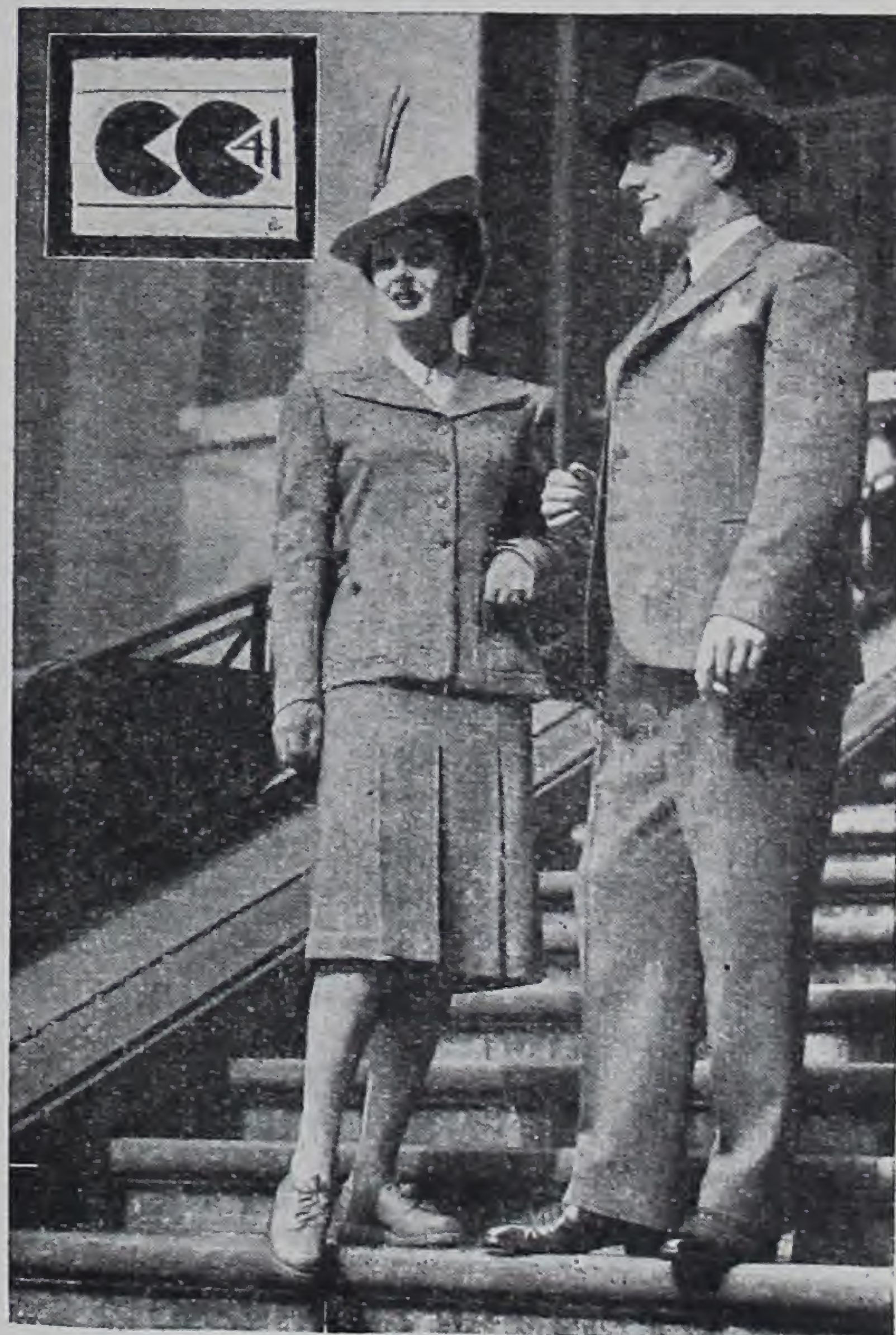
Deadlock in India

Sir Stafford reached Delhi on March 23 and had talks with many personalities representing the chief parties. A draft Declaration was published on the 30th, offering the setting up of an elected All-India constituent assembly as soon as hostilities ended, this body to draw up a Constitution for a Union of provinces and states having full Dominion status. For a time it seemed as if the principal parties might come to agreement and accept the proposals in substance, but Gandhi took up an absurd and unrealistic attitude, and

MADE FROM UTILITY CLOTHS

The sponsoring by the British Government of textile materials which could be made up into serviceable and attractive clothes for men and women at reasonable (controlled) prices proved a great boon. Here are typical examples. Inset is the official label which distinguished Utility garments.

Photo, "New York Times"



BOON TO THE HOUSEWIFE

More urgent demands on shipping space forbade the importing of feeding stuffs for poultry, and, in consequence, the supply of shell eggs fell off alarmingly. In the summer of 1942 supplies of dried egg in powder form were made available for domestic consumers. A package, equivalent to 12 eggs, cost 1s. 9d. Inset, a Product Group marking for controlled confectionery.



AWAY WITH THE RAILINGS!

The removal of railings from streets and parks provided metal for the foundries to turn into weapons, and saved the importation of scrap, of which half a million tons per annum used to be obtained from the U.S.A. alone. To pedestrians and bus passengers it opened up vistas such as this—Park Lane, Hyde Park, in Spring, 1942, with crocuses in full flower.

Photo, Fox

the Moslem League leaders also would not relax their demands, so that early in April the Draft was withdrawn and Sir Stafford returned to London, having carried out his onerous mission with great tact and skill. (See Chapter 223.)

Opening his War Budget for the year 1942-43 in the House of Commons on April 14, Sir Kingsley Wood drew a picture of a country which, in spite

Britain's
Financial
Soundness

of an immense load of
taxation and borrowing,
was still financially
sound. He claimed

that the Government's economic policy was being justified by its fruits. Prices had been successfully stabilized; the price of the main staple foods showed some reduction; and though in clothing there had been a gradual increase, the Government was taking direct control of prices, and Utility clothing was to be fostered. Rents had been practically stationary since the outbreak of war, and railway fares were now stabilized. As a result, the cost of living index was 29 per cent above pre-war, as compared with 28 per cent in April 1941. For the coming year the Chancellor estimated the expenditure at £5,286,479,000, while the revenue, it was anticipated, would amount to £2,627,100,000, leaving a deficiency of £2,659,379,000. The Purchase Tax on a number of "luxury

articles" was doubled, another twopence a pint was put on beer, the duty on tobacco was increased and Entertainment Tax was doubled from May 10. The Chancellor revealed that during the past year the number of wage-earners paying income tax had increased to 5,500,000, and they had paid £125,000,000, of which £60,000,000 was in respect of post-war credits; there would be improvements in the method of collection of tax from wage-earners in receipt of fluctuating wages.

The function of the post-war credit was a double one: it provided a nest-egg for the taxpayer who had been mulcted of some of the reliefs to which he had been entitled in previous years, and it cut down spending power. In the year 1941-42 it had amounted to nearly half of the total tax bill of £125,000,000, a remarkable sum. For a married man with one child, on a weekly average wage of £6, the credit amounted to £16 10s. for the year. Along with the assessment for his 1942-43 tax the citizen received a neat certificate showing the amount of the post-war credit for the past year and an explanation as to how the amount was made up. Eleven million certificates were issued.

Then there was the minor problem of the wife's share when she, too, was gainfully occupied and taxable. Normally the certificate was to be sent to the husband (when the couple were assessed together), and would include the wife's share as well as his own.

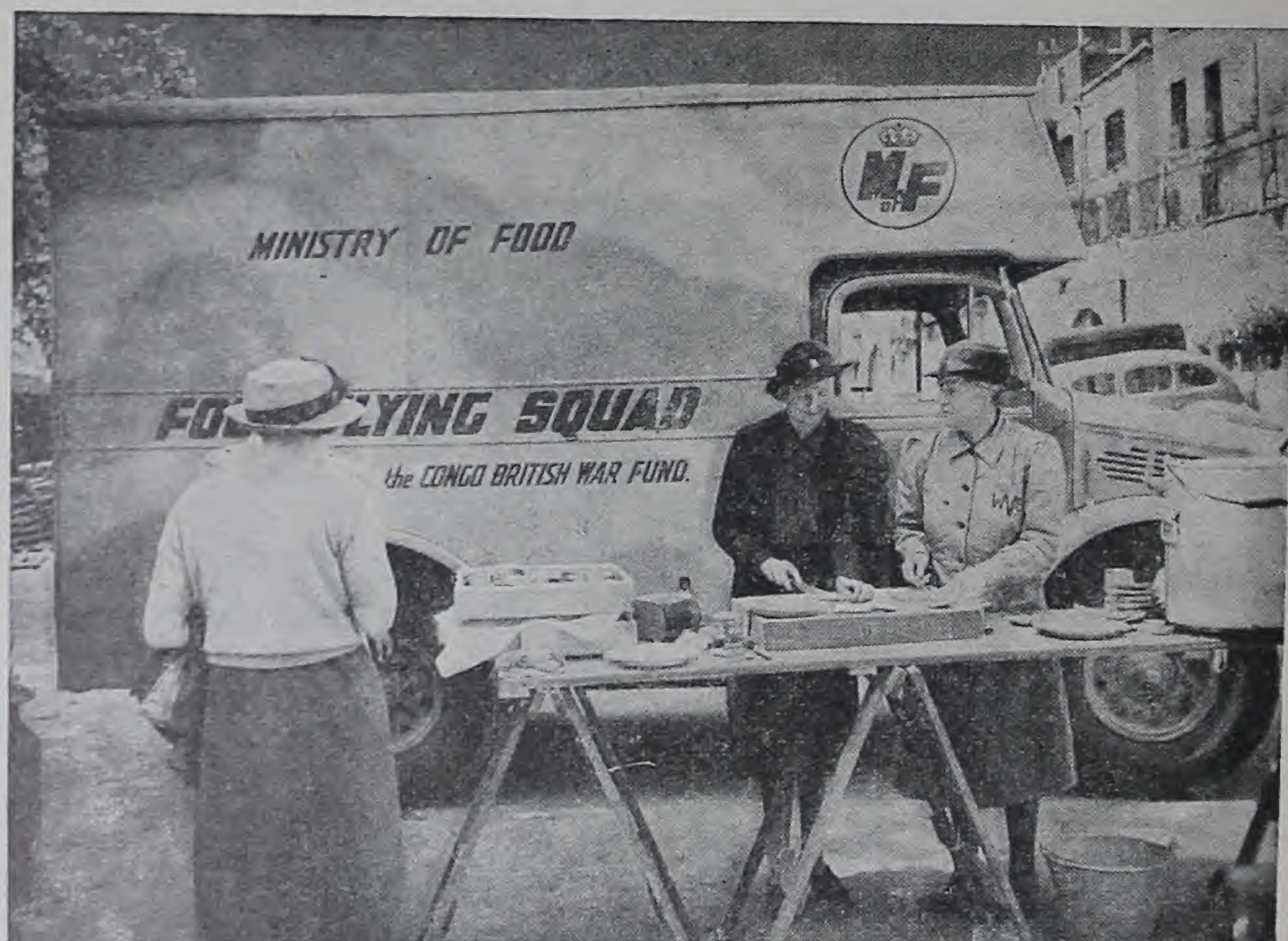
Where the wife had a separate income and desired some of the credit in her name this could be arranged. Should husband and wife be unable to agree on the amount to go to each, then the Inspector of Taxes would divide the credit according to the amount of their respective incomes.

Speaking on January 6, Lord Woolton, Minister of Food, had stated that the beginning of a new year found the British people "fighting fit," and there was every reason to believe they would remain so. Prices of a number of vital food-

Satisfactory
Food
Situation

stuffs had been controlled; control of distribution had gone hand in hand with price control. As a result of these measures, coupled with food subsidies now totalling about £100,000,000 a year, the cost of food had become stable, and food had been directed to those whose needs were greatest, viz. children and adolescents, expectant and nursing mothers, industrial and agricultural workers. Coal miners would soon receive similar consideration. More than 1,100 British Restaurants were in operation and others were constantly added.

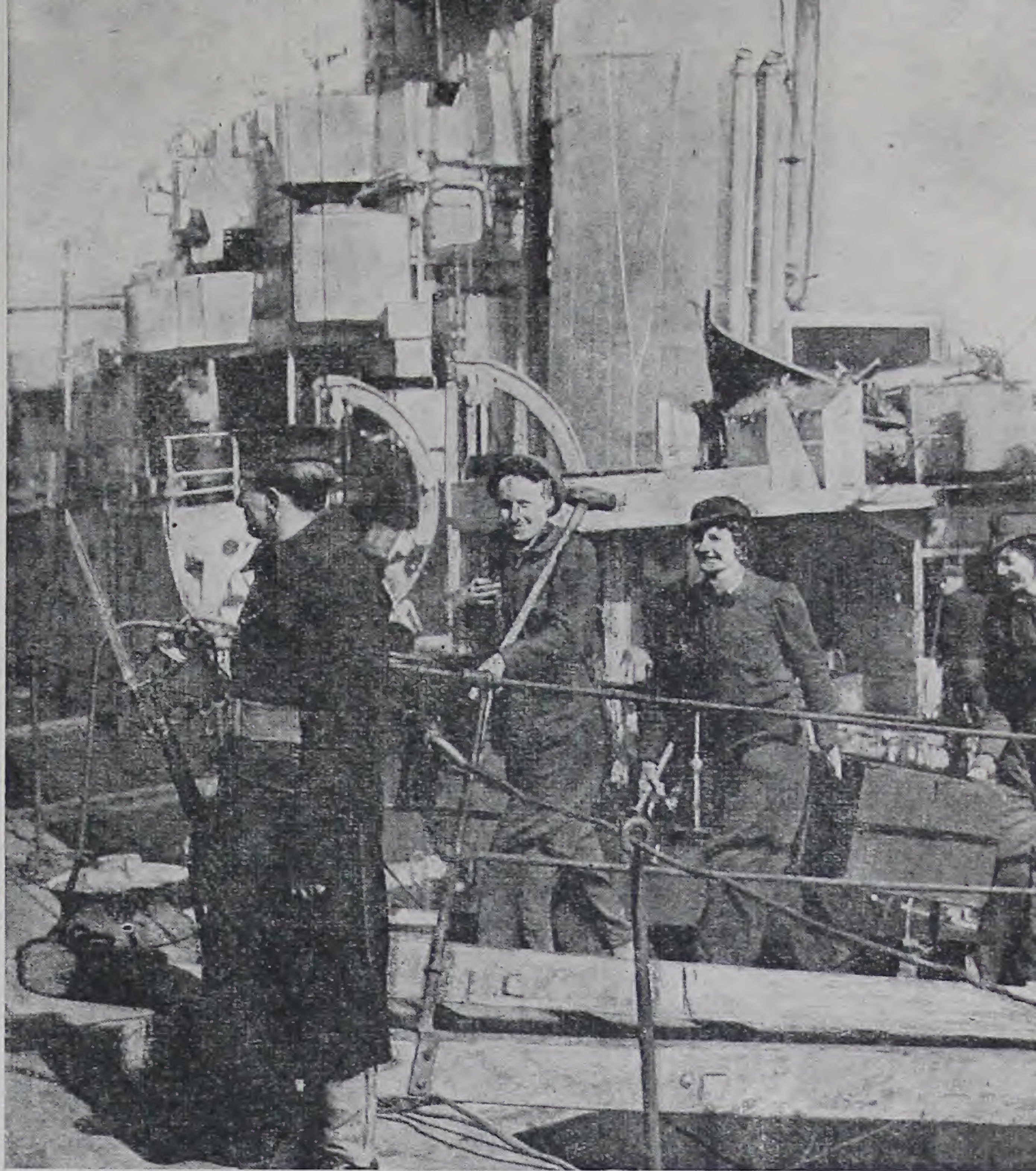
Two months later, on March 3, the food situation was debated in the House of Commons, and Major Lloyd George, Parliamentary Secretary to the Ministry of Food, was able to give further encouraging facts. There had been difficulties, of course; eggs, fish, and winter milk had been short, but there



W.V.S. PREPARES FOOD FOR BOMBED-OUT PEOPLE

This emergency 'Food Flying Squad' van is staffed by personnel of the Women's Voluntary Services, and is seen at Canterbury after one of the heavy raids on that city. The W.V.S. undertook all sorts of work arising out of war conditions as they affect the population, and was a strong pillar of Civil Defence.

Photo, Associated Press



WOMEN WHO REPLACED MEN

Over a wide field women took the place of men in work demanding patience, skill, initiative and devotion. More often than not, those in engineering works and shipyards and other places performed duties upon the correct execution of which the lives of soldiers and sailors and airmen depended. Top, left, assembling Sten guns at a Royal Ordnance factory. (The Sten machine-carbine, a British invention, was put into mass production in June 1942, and was issued in increasing numbers to the regular Armed Forces and the Home Guard.) Bottom, checking final details of completed Merlin-20 engines for aircraft. Top, right, dockyard workers coming ashore from a British destroyer which is being refitted. Centre, left, Scottish girls who felled and transported timber in the Highlands.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; L.N.A.; "New York Times"





SAVING PETROL AND RUBBER

Along with the abolition of pleasure motoring went a drastic control of commercial transport. Much long-distance haulage was diverted to the railways; local deliveries were pooled, the motor vehicles of various traders being utilized in a common scheme serving all.

Photo, Topical Press

had been no bread shortage. Then on March 11 Lord Woolton announced that, with a view to conserving vitally important shipping space, the Government had decided to increase to 85 per cent the ratio of flour from wheat milled in this country, so "white" bread would be no longer available. As from April 6 its sale was made illegal, save under special licence; the only bread sold from that date would be national wholemeal or authorized brown breads, made from wheat of at least 85 per cent extraction. (The effect was to obtain a greater yield of bread [or flour] from the corn milled.)

A new Acquisition of Food Order issued in March banned the hoarding of unrationed foods beyond the reasonable needs of the household,

Meals in etc., for four weeks. The Restaurants "points" rationing scheme was extended to take in condensed milk and breakfast cereals, and the office tea ration was cut to $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. instead of 1 lb. a week for 20 workers—all from April 6. On May 12 it was announced by Lord Woolton that from June 1 restaurant meals would be restricted to three courses; and food would not be served after 11 p.m. (midnight in London), except to hotel residents and night workers, in establishments specially licensed to serve such workers and travellers. As from June 15 the price of restaurant meals would be limited to 5s., with maxima for whisky, gin, and beer (not wines or cocktails), a maxi-

mum charge of 2s. 6d. for cabaret and dancing, and of 6d. in each 5s. for service. Some luxury hotels would be permitted to make a "house charge," maximum 7s. 6d.

Although these and a host of similar measures were obviously inspired by a concern for the general good, there continued to be some, in all classes of society, who were resolved if possible to obtain more than their fair share of a severely restricted stock. "Black market" operations in foodstuffs, as in some raw materials, clothing, fuel, petrol, and other goods subject to rationing and public control, gave rise to much anxiety. New regulations were passed to make the way of the black marketeer harder, more expensive, and more dangerous; on March 11 Mr. Herbert Morrison announced that under the Defence Regulations the maximum penalties for black market activities had been raised to 12 months' imprisonment on summary conviction, and to 14 years' penal servitude on indictment.

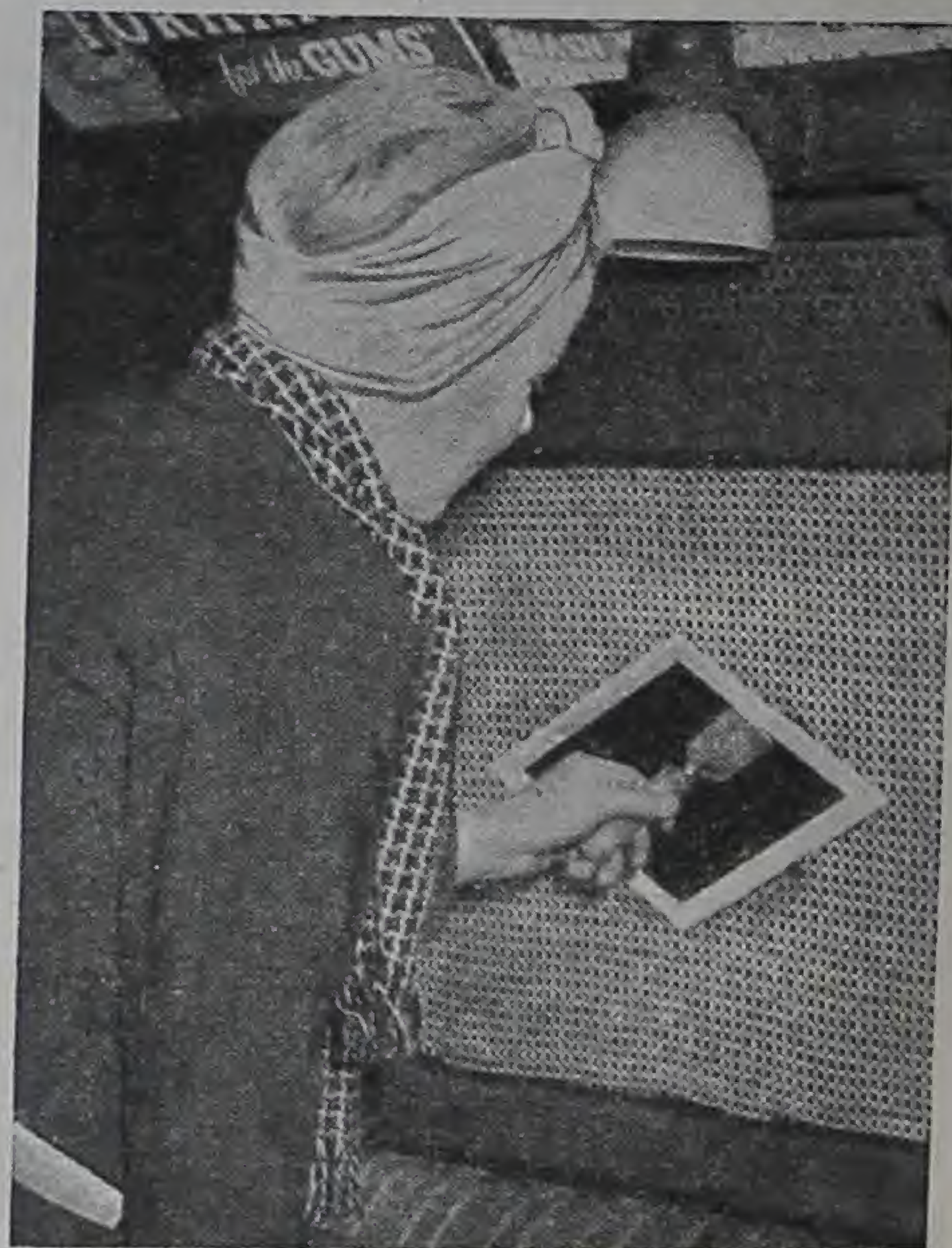
Coming now to clothing, Dr. Dalton announced on March 17 reductions in the issue and extension of the validity of the coupons. The production of Utility clothing was entrusted to a number of designated firms. An order was made prohibiting the manufacture of men's double-breasted coats and turn-up trousers, and putting a limit on buttons and pockets; men's shirts were to be shorter, and pyjamas were to be pocketless. Women's Utility garments were to combine simplicity with excellent value for money. Domestic soap was rationed from February 9.

Whether or not to ration fuel gave rise to animated debate. On March 17 Dr. Dalton announced that the Government had resolved upon the introduction of a comprehensive scheme for the rationing of coal, light, and power; Sir William Beveridge, assisted by Sir Stephen Tallents, had been asked to prepare a scheme so as to ensure a sharp reduction in domestic consumption. On April 21 Dr. Dalton said that the Beveridge Report had been received, and that the Government had decided to introduce fuel rationing on a points system in accordance with his recommendations. But when issued as a White Paper the scheme was given a very hostile reception, largely because (so it was asserted) it would involve the setting up of fresh departments, employing more than 10,000 clerks. In the Commons the Labour members—at least most of them—supported the Beveridge proposals, but Conservative opposition was so strong that the scheme was greatly modified; a fuel target was to be fixed for each dwelling, etc., and this would permit the consumer to

consume with a good conscience—there was no penalty for overstepping the "target"—so many "points" of fuel, according to the number of rooms in the house and its locality (north, midlands, or south). Coal was taken as the basis; and if other fuels were used, then 1 cwt. of coal was reckoned to be the equivalent of 5 therms of gas, 100 units of electricity, or 2 gallons of paraffin. Rationing was to begin on July 1. This plan, too, aroused much criticism, particularly from those who alleged that the Ministry of Fuel—a new ministry, of which Major Lloyd George was appointed the first head on June 3—was apparently of the opinion that in England the isotherms run north to south, while, in fact, they run from east to west. The "target" scheme was connected with a great advertising campaign, but many doubted whether any considerable number of householders would be able to determine their "target," still less to keep to it.

The basic petrol ration, it was announced on March 12, would be abolished on July 1, after which allowances would be granted only in cases of proved necessity. Thus private motoring was doomed—for the duration.

In the course of a debate in the House of Commons on woman-power on March 5, Mr. M. S. McCorquodale, Parliamentary Secretary to the Ministry of Labour, stated that 5,000,000 women had already registered, and of these 1,500,000 had been interviewed and more were being interviewed at the



SPLINTER PROTECTION ON 'TUBES' AND BUSES

By the use of a diamond-shaped aperture in the protective window netting passengers in Underground trains and in buses were given a better view than was possible with oblong or round openings. This worker is sealing the edges.

Photo, Associated Press



DEAN OF CANTERBURY SURVEYS HIS RAVAGED CATHEDRAL

Bombs had fallen near Canterbury Cathedral during the Battle of Britain, on October 11, when some of the stained glass was shattered, and on the 26th (see illus., p. 2122). A direct attack was made by the Luftwaffe on the night of May 31-June 1, 1942, 'as a reprisal for the terrorist attack by the British Air Force on the inner city of Cologne,' according to the German High Command. Here the Dean, the Very Rev. Dr. Hewlett Johnson (left), and his Secretary, Mr. A. T. D'Eye, examine the wrecked Cathedral Library.

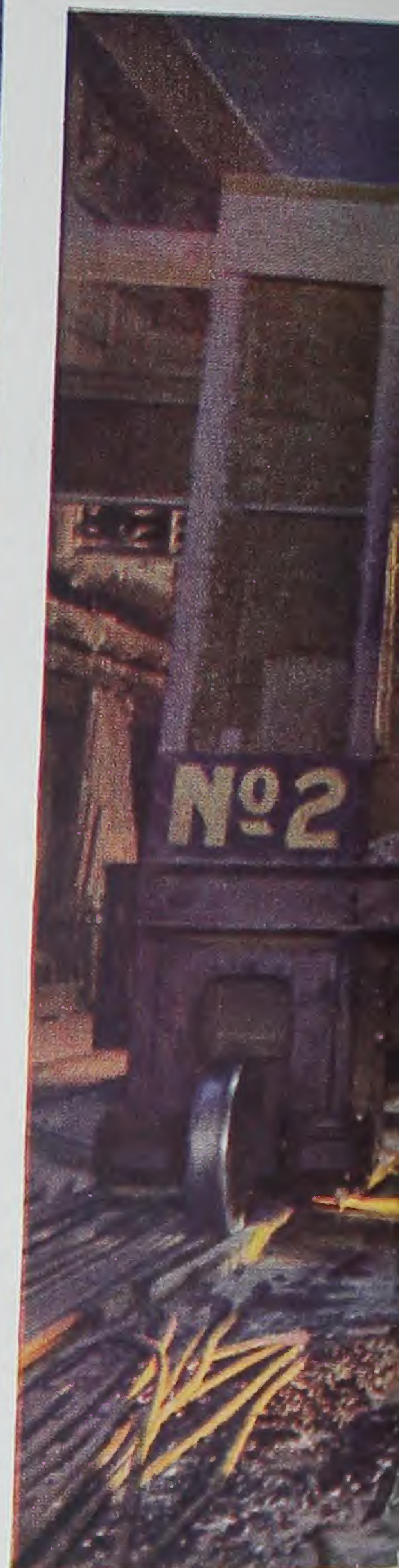
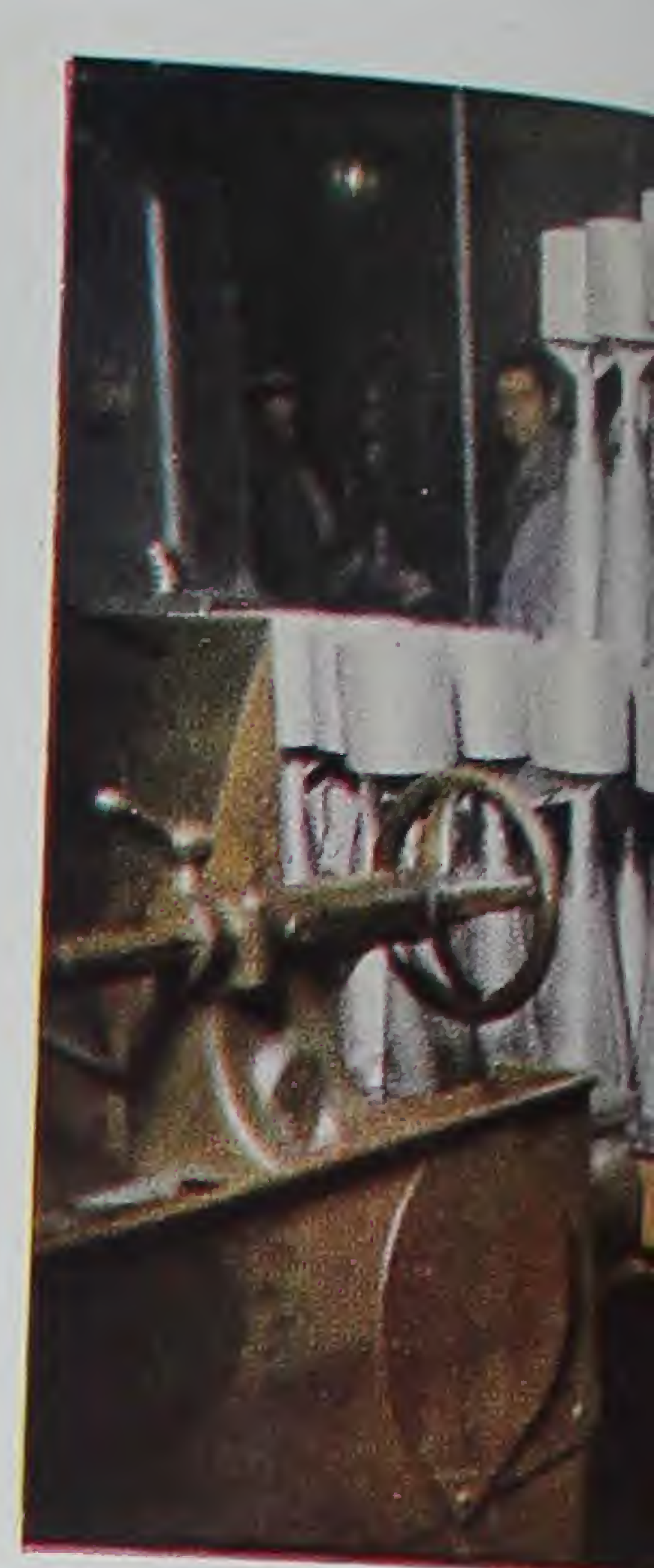
Direct colour photograph by Fox Photos



BRITAIN'S MIGHTY PRODUCTION EFFORT REACHES ITS PEAK

By the end of 1942 the output of Britain's steelworks and armament factories was reaching a satisfactory figure. But the launching of a mighty Army and the demands for men for the Navy and Air Force raised a man-power problem only to be solved by the large-scale substitution of women, who took naturally to the new tasks and proved an outstanding success. Above, a former hairdresser, Miss Kathleen McCarthy, operates a machine for slotting the case striker body of a six-pounder gun (Royal Ordnance Factory). Top, centre, at work on practice bombs for the R.A.F. (Ministry of Aircraft Production Factory). Right, charging an open-hearth steel melting furnace; top, right, taking a sample from another furnace for testing.

Direct colour photographs by Sport & General and "Illustrated"







FIGHTING FRENCH



GLIDER PILOT



AIRBORNE TROOPS



HIGHLAND REGT



ARMY AIR & ROYAL ARMoured CORPS



LOWLAND REGT



ROYAL OBSERVER CORPS



MARITIME REGT



AIR DEFENCE GREAT BRITAIN



FLEET AIR ARM (OFFICER OBSERVER)



PARACHUTE INFANTRY ROYAL ELECTRICAL AND MECHANICAL ENGINEERS



AIR TRAINING CORPS



ARMY FIRE SERVICE



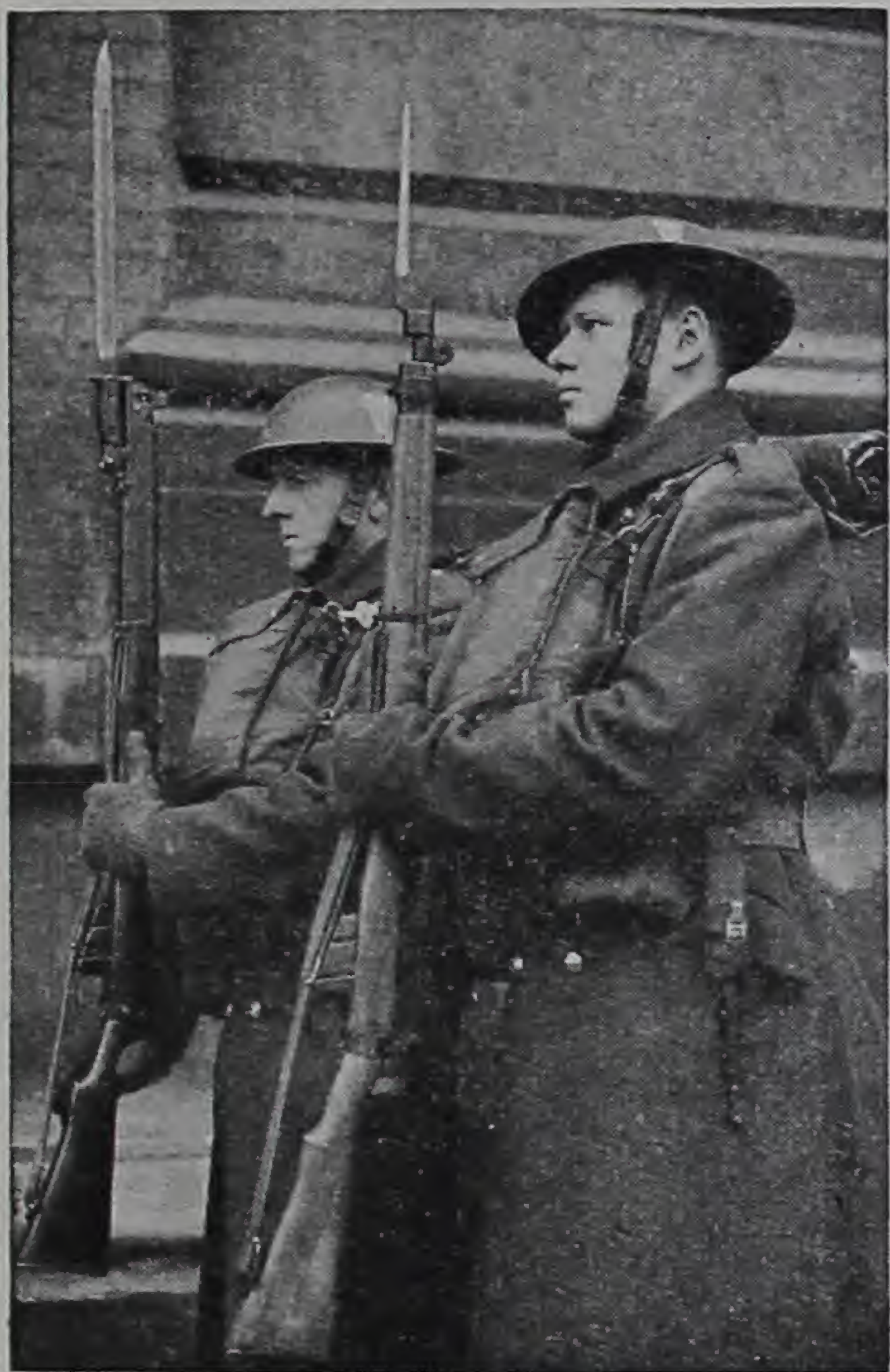
R.A.F. REGT

NEW BADGES OF THE BRITISH AND ALLIED SERVICES

Most of these need no explanation. Defensive guns on merchant ships are manned by units of the Maritime Regt. (shoulder flash of the R.A.); personnel of our ground defences wear the next badge to right—seen in this case on the shoulder of a woman of the A.T.S. Fires breaking out on Army property are dealt with by the Army Fire Service. The R.E.M.E. bring specialized technical experience to the problems of today's mechanized warfare. Other badges are given in p. 1655; those of auxiliary war services in p. 1540.

rate of 50,000 a week. Every month some 150,000 women were placed in jobs; and since the war began the number of women employed in munitions and other vital war industries had risen by 1,500,000. Mr. McCorquodale foreshadowed that an increasingly large number of "mobile" women would be transferred from their present employment in the less essential industries to industries of greater importance to the national war effort; it had already been announced that women shop-assistants from 25 to 30, except some engaged in retail food and coal distribution and specially trained "key" women, were being called up for the war factories. On March 19 it was announced that married women with no children living with them, and who had already registered, were likely to be interviewed for full or part-time work in munitions and other work in their own districts, to take the place of mobile women who were being transferred to other areas.

Not long afterwards Mr. Bevin stated that not far short of half of Britain's total population—some 20,000,000 men and women—were serving in the Armed Forces, Civil Defence, munitions, and other jobs more or less directly connected with the war effort. Even so,



NEW RIFLE AND BAYONET

Early in 1942 a new and shorter bayonet (right) was issued, only 6 inches long instead of the 17 inches of the former type (on left). It went with a new pattern Service rifle, more easily mass-produced and having a heavier barrel. Thus, after many years, the sword bayonet was superseded, and a cranked type of triangular section took its place.

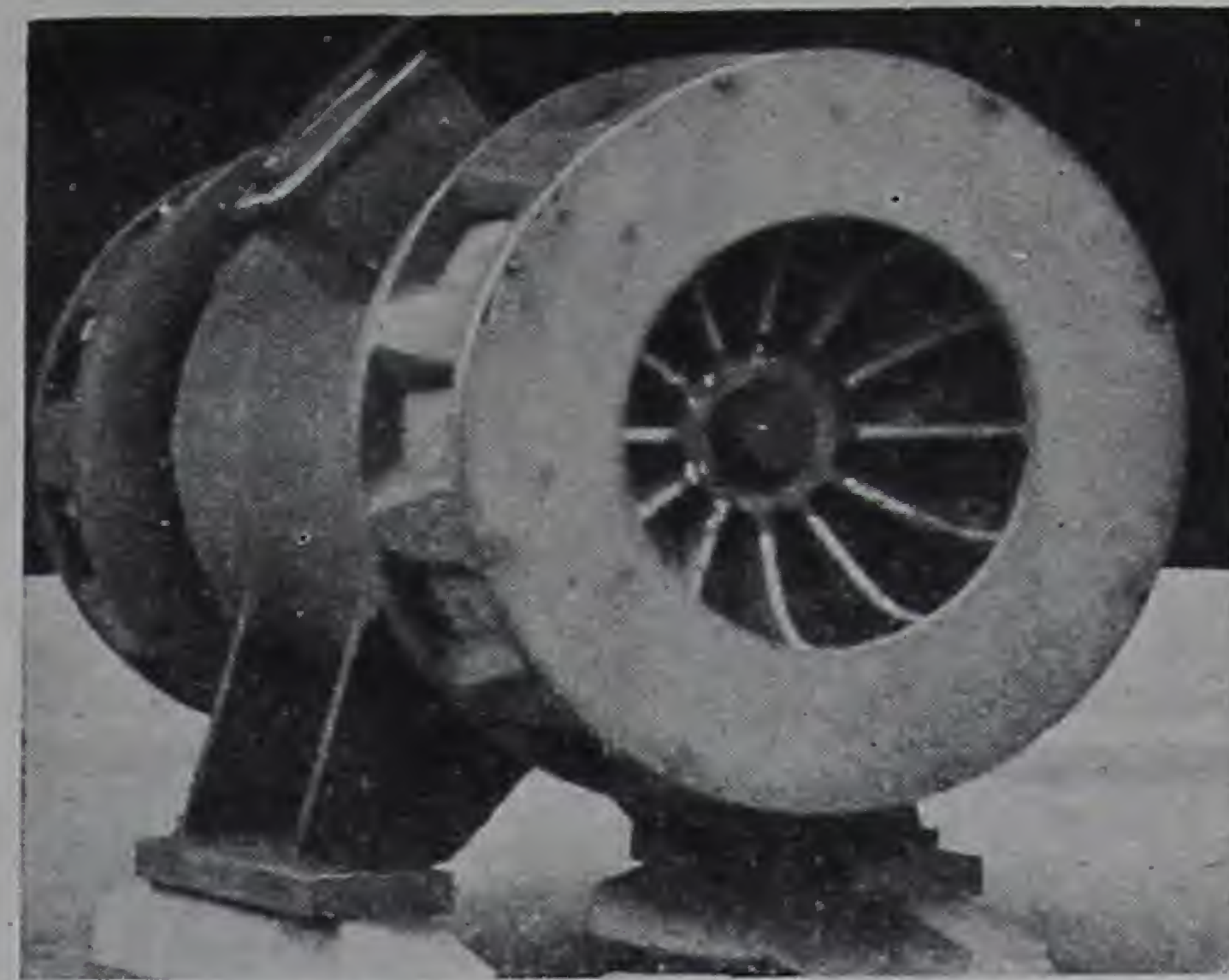
Photo, "Daily Mirror"

thousands, tens of thousands, hundreds of thousands more men and women were required for the war factories which were coming into production in town and country. In April the Home Secretary, Mr. Herbert Morrison, stated that about one-third of full-time Civil Defence and one-sixth of the National Fire Service personnel would be released for work in war factories, since not only was it now necessary to "replace defensive thinking by an offensive will to victory," but everything possible had to be done to relieve the strain on the country's man-power. As a result, a number of the more highly skilled craftsmen were released for industrial employment, and arrangements were also made for closer working between Civil Defence and the Home Guard.

Although thus denuded of something of its strength, the Civil Defence organization was kept at a high pitch of readiness. This example of official foresight was more than justified, since in May the long-continued immunity from large-scale air raids came to an abrupt termination: a number of English cathedral cities—Canterbury, Norwich, Exeter, York and Bath—were subjected to what were called Baedeker raids, ostensibly in revenge for the devastating raids on Lübeck and Rostock.

Transport came to an ever-increasing extent under Government control. The process of centralizing road traffic was proceeded with, and in June the Minister of Transport announced that a number of canals would be controlled in the same way as the railways, so as to afford some further relief to the heavily taxed road and rail systems. Every measure short of actual prohibition was tried to prevent the public from making unnecessary journeys; "Is your journey really necessary?" appeared above every ticket-office window, and the exhortation may have done something to cut down civilian travel, although the limitation and the eventual complete suppression of private motoring could not but have its effect on railway traffic returns.

The efficient and highly profitable running of the railways as a single unit under public control encouraged those in all parties who were inclined to believe that public corporations afforded an efficient and satisfactory half-way house between private enterprise and state socialism. This view was forcibly expressed in the House of Lords on January 17, when Lord Reith (formerly Minister of Works and Planning) initiated a debate on the future of the essential public services. Lord Portal, Minister of Works and Buildings, depre-



THE WARNING SIREN

The air-raid siren was mounted on a suitable building, or on a lattice tower or iron standard. Its two vanes, of different pitch, gave the penetrating chord which sounded the alert when modulated and the all-clear otherwise. This one was operated from the adjoining police station (Ruislip, Middlesex).

Photos, Fox; Topical Press

cated the raising of so controversial a matter, although he expressed the view that the transport, electricity, gas, and building industries were likely to continue to be controlled for some time after the end of the war. The debate was but one of many expressions of the opinion of those who believed that there could be no better time than the present to prepare for a better world after the war. The planners, as they were called, were to the fore in Press and Parliament—in the Church, too, for the new Archbishop of Canterbury,



ANGLO-RUSSIAN TREATY OF ALLIANCE AND MUTUAL ASSISTANCE

The text of the Treaty is printed in page 2107. It was signed on May 26, 1942 at the Foreign Office and was to remain in force, as to Part I, until the signing of peace. Part II, concerned with the preservation of peace and with resistance to aggression after the war, was to run for 20 years. Left to right, Mr. Maisky, Ambassador to London; Mr. Molotov, Soviet People's Commissar for Foreign Affairs (signing); Mr. Anthony Eden, Foreign Secretary; Mr. Churchill; Mr. T. Lee, Deputy Premier.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

Dr. William Temple, who succeeded Archbishop Lang on February 22, had long been noted for his progressive views. Dr. Garbett, Bishop of Winchester, who followed Dr. Temple as Archbishop of York, had also revealed himself as one concerned with implementing the social gospel of Christianity.

Relations with the U.S.S.R. were consolidated by the signing on May 26, 1942, of a Treaty of Alliance and Mutual Assistance, to run for 20 years. The text is printed in p. 2107.

In June Mr. Churchill crossed the Atlantic to visit President Roosevelt for the third time. He arrived in the States on June 18. On June 22 a joint statement was issued by the President and Premier to the effect that they were consulting concerning the earliest maximum concentration of Allied war power upon the enemy, and reviewing or concerting measures which for some time past had been on foot to develop and sustain the effort of the United Nations. On June 25 there was a meeting of the Pacific War Council, attended by President Roosevelt, Mr. Churchill, Mr. Mackenzie King (Prime Minister of Canada), and other representatives of the Allies; and Mr. Soong, the Chinese Ambassador to the U.S.A., and Mr. Litvinov, his Russian colleague,

were also received in audience by the two statesmen. Mr. Churchill—crossing the Atlantic, as on the way out, by air—returned to London on June 27; and on his arrival a joint statement was issued in London and Washington reviewing the consultations which had taken place. “The Prime Minister and the President have met twice before,” ran its concluding paragraph. “There is no doubt in their minds that the overall picture is more favourable to victory than it was either in August or December of last year.”

Implicit in these events and statements was more than one suggestion of the North African expedition to be launched so successfully in the following November. But although the plans were laid, or furthered, in Washington in June, not a whisper of what was afoot could be uttered. So it was that the critics at home continued to bat on an easy wicket. On July 1 a motion of censure on the Government was moved in the House of Commons by Sir John Wardlaw-Milne, on behalf of a small number of members of all parties: “That this House (it read), while paying tribute to the heroism and endurance of the Armed Forces of the Crown in circumstances of exceptional difficulty, has no confidence in the central direction of the war.” Opening the debate, Sir John Wardlaw-Milne

stated that the motion had only one object—that of helping to win the war in the shortest possible time. It was not an attack on the officers in the field; it was a definite attack on the central direction of the war in London, where the cause of our failures lay far more than in Libya and elsewhere. He criticized the Premier for adding to his enormous responsibilities by combining with that office the duties of the Minister of Defence; and he was also caustic concerning the organization, or lack of organization, of supply. But though there were many present who showed their eagerness to echo his accusations, his suggestion that the Duke of Gloucester should be appointed C.-in-C. of the Army was heard with almost incredulous surprise. Another highly critical speech came from Admiral Sir Roger Keyes, and many other members joined in the bombardment of the Treasury Bench. Mr. Oliver Lyttelton spoke at length in defence of the Ministry of Production, but it was Mr. Churchill himself who, on July 2, gave the final answer to the critics.

In his speech he ranged over the whole field of the truly global war. “I ask no favours either for myself or the Government,” he declared just before he sat down. “I undertook the office of Prime Minister and Minister of Defence at a time when the life of the British Empire hung on a thread. I am your servant. You have the right to dismiss me when you please . . .” In the event, only 25 members were ready to take up his challenge. On the vote being taken, the Government was found to have a majority of 451.

BRITAIN'S NEW TACTICS IN AREA BOMBING, JANUARY TO JUNE, 1942

Here Captain Norman Macmillan, M.C., A.F.C., A.F.R.Ae.S., reviews events during the period in which, under Air Marshal Sir Arthur T. Harris, Bomber Command developed the concentrated attacks upon German industry and communications which dealt such heavy blows at the enemy's war machine. He also explains the policy of the United Nations in aerial warfare

MR. WINSTON CHURCHILL returned from America by air in British Overseas Airways' Boeing-built flying boat "Berwick" on January 17, 1942. From Norfolk, Virginia, he flew via Bermuda to Plymouth, England. The ocean crossing from Bermuda—3,365 miles—was completed in five minutes under 18 hours. The Prime Minister handled the controls of the flying boat himself for twenty minutes (see illus., p. 1918).

The British Prime Minister's visit to President Roosevelt was of great moment to the air war. Air Chief Marshal Sir Charles Portal (Britain's Chief of Air Staff) accompanied him. From then onwards there was close collaboration in the air between Britain and America on every fighting front. The air forces of the United Kingdom, the Dominions and those of the American Army and Navy became tactically united, working together to the common end everywhere, under the command of officers of either nation, as might be found desirable.

The forward outlook at the beginning of 1942 was brighter than it had been since the European war began, but the immediate situation was extremely difficult. America was not

Brighter Outlook

ready for war. She could not at once deploy any great forces. She

had suffered a grievous blow in the Pacific by the partial or complete destruction of 177 Navy and Army aircraft at the three Hawaiian airfields of Kaneohe Bay, Hickam and Wheeler. British air strength, which had been building up steadily, suffered a severe check relative to that of the Axis by the immediate deployment of Japan's full air power. It was impossible for Britain to meet all the demands for home defence, the war at sea, the North Africa campaign, the Middle East, Russia, and the sudden emergency call for help from the Far East. There were not enough aircraft to go round, and something had to be sacrificed.

Anglo-American policy was laid down by the American President and the British Premier: the sacrifice had to be made in the Far East. Aeroplanes which were to have gone to Australia

were diverted during this period to North Africa, where, at the end of June, the British Eighth Army was forced to withdraw to El Alamein after General Auchinleck's initial successful drive into Cyrenaica. This paucity of aircraft was the main factor which compelled the conflict to take the course it then did. Mr. Roosevelt announced on January 6 that the aim of the American aircraft war industry was to be 60,000 aircraft in 1942 and 125,000 in 1943. (In 1942 55,000 were actually delivered.) The United States Army Air Forces were to be expanded to

1,000,000 officers and men during 1942. The United States Army Eighth Air Force was sent to the United Kingdom to join in the offensive being waged against Germany and Western Occupied-Europe by the British, Dominion, Polish, and Czech squadrons operating in the Royal Air Force Fighter and Bomber Commands. The strategic bombing policy of Britain was primarily for a night campaign; that of the United States Army was for a day programme. The bombers of the U.S.A. reached England during the spring of 1942. They first went into action by bombing Rouen on August 17, 1942.

The most outstanding new British aircraft was the Avro Lancaster, which had the excellent quality of ease of manufacture, and good flying characteristics. It could carry a maximum bomb load of 18,000 lb., fly at about 300 miles an hour, and was popular with its pilots. (See illus., p. 2098.) Though the last of the three new four-engined bombers to come into operation, its qualities brought it quickly to the front rank of heavy bombers. After a few night operations the Lancaster was mentioned in action on April 17, 1942, when No. 44 Squadron sent 12 out in daylight across France and into Germany to attack the M.A.N. factory at Augsburg in Bavaria, where Diesel engines for submarines were made. They flew without escort at less than 100 feet, and near Paris were engaged by German fighters. Four were shot down.

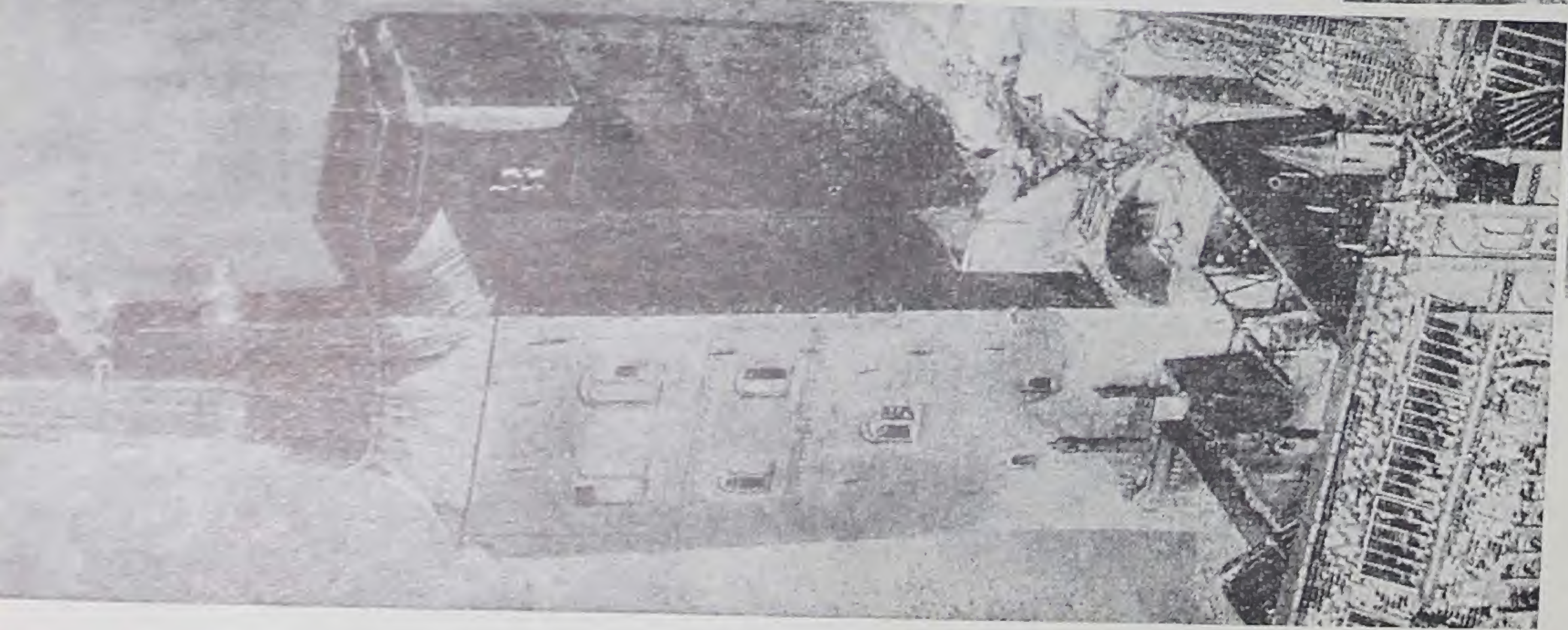
These casualties occurred in the second flight of six bombers, led by Squadron Leader J. D. Nettleton, a 25-year-old South African. With his own rear guns out of action Nettleton flew on to yet far distant Augsburg, accompanied by one other Lancaster. They came over the roof tops to their target and dropped delayed-action bombs square on the factory. The second Lancaster, hit by A.A. fire, crash-landed in flames. With his aircraft riddled with holes, Nettleton flew back to his base, sole survivor of his flight. He was awarded the Victoria Cross, the tenth air V.C. of the war, and



**Lt.-Cmdr. EUGENE ESMONDE,
V.C., D.S.O., R.N.**

On February 12, 1942, he led six Swordfish aircraft (Fleet Air Arm) against the 'Scharnhorst,' 'Gneisenau' and 'Prinz Eugen' entering Dover Straits. He was shot down in the first few moments of the deadly fire encountered, but his squadron flew on to launch a gallant torpedo attack. 'His high courage and resolution,' said the citation announcing the posthumous award of the V.C., 'will live in the traditions of the Royal Navy, and remain for many generations a fine and stirring memory.'

Photo, Associated Press



LUEBECK WAS THE FIRST TARGET OF THE NEW CONCENTRATED RAIDS UPON GERMAN WAR INDUSTRY

Beating down the enemy's defences instead of trying to evade them, our bombers in hundreds attacked Luebeck on the night of March 28-29, 1942. Below is an R.A.F. photograph of part of the devastated area afterwards: the distance from A to B is 1,500 yards. Top, Breitestrasse (see air view) after what the 'Hamburger Fremdenblatt' termed 'one of the most damaging attacks of the war.' Left, the Cathedral, on fire after the raid.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright





Sqdrn.-Ldr. J. D. NETTLETON, V.C.

Led six Lancasters in daylight on April 17, 1942, to attack the M.A.N. Diesel works at Augsburg. All but two were shot down over enemy territory early in the flight, and his own rear guns went out of action. Reaching the target after a perilous journey at low height, the two remaining aircraft came down to roof level and dropped their bombs true on the target. One Lancaster was shot down, and only Nettleton's machine got back to its base, riddled with shellholes. He was awarded the V.C.

Drawing by Eric Kennington; Crown Copyright reserved

the ninth to the R.A.F. The other six Lancasters crossed France safely, but two were shot down over the target.

This was the first employment of British four-engined bombers to attack distant targets in Europe by daylight.

Long-Range Bombing in Daylight

Other targets were subsequently bombed, but such raids were few and far between.

The Lancaster, like the Stirling and Halifax, was primarily a night bomber. Unescorted day raids by Lancasters were similar in pattern. The aircraft left their bases timed to arrive over the target just before dusk, so that there was enough light to ensure accurate flying and aiming, and after that the cover of night in which to return.

The American day raids which began towards the end of this period were of a different pattern, the Fortress bombers going out in the late morning and coming back again in time for tea. The Fortress II, equipped with 12 long-range half-inch machine-guns, could shoot its way through enemy formations of fighters. The big British bombers, armed only with rifle-calibre machine-guns, were less able to defend themselves, for the German fighters remained beyond the range of the small machine-guns and fired at the British bombers with their cannon.

The British bombers were designed to achieve their maximum speed at about 18,000 feet, a useful night compromise. But, in daylight, anti-aircraft gunfire was both accurate and strong at that height. It was mainly to avoid anti-aircraft fire that the bombers hedge-hopped to their targets. The American bombers—had been intended for day operations, were fitted with special engines and airscrews, and designed to fly at 25,000 to 30,000 feet, where the gunfire was much less concentrated and less accurate. But it was necessary to carry guns to beat off fighters, and owing to the weight of their heavier armament, the American bombers transported a considerably smaller bomb-load than the British machines.

The British four-engined bombers, capable of concentrating a very heavy weight of bombs upon one target, enabled new tactics in area bombing to be initiated. Air Marshal Arthur T. Harris (he was made K.C.B. in June) brought this form of attack to a high state of development after his appointment to command Bomber Command on February 20, 1942. He was a great believer in bombing the Boche. He was also well aware of the growing power of defence against the night bomber—the increase in A.A. fire-power and the growing efficiency of night fighters. Successful night air attack became a problem of beating down the defences, not one of attempting to evade them. The operation required most precise staff work to secure the greatest possible concentration of bombers over the desired target. In consequence, "air lanes" from the bases in the United Kingdom to the selected target were worked out, and bombers were allotted exact time-schedules, flying heights, and routes.

With hundreds of bombers streaming in upon the target from several directions it would be extremely difficult for acoustic or radio locating apparatus to pick out one approaching aircraft from another for the gunners. Moreover, when the weight of bombs began to fall, the ground counter-defences and civil defence services would be so pounded as to reduce their efficiency. Simultaneously with this development came new and larger bombs—4,000-lb. and 8,000-lb. missiles—with a deadlier shock and blast effect.

One of the earliest of the new pattern raids was the attack upon Lübeck on the night of March 28–29. A large area of the city was gutted by fire and explosions. Then followed the April 1 raid on the Matford works at Poissy (when 4,000-lb. bombs were used); raids

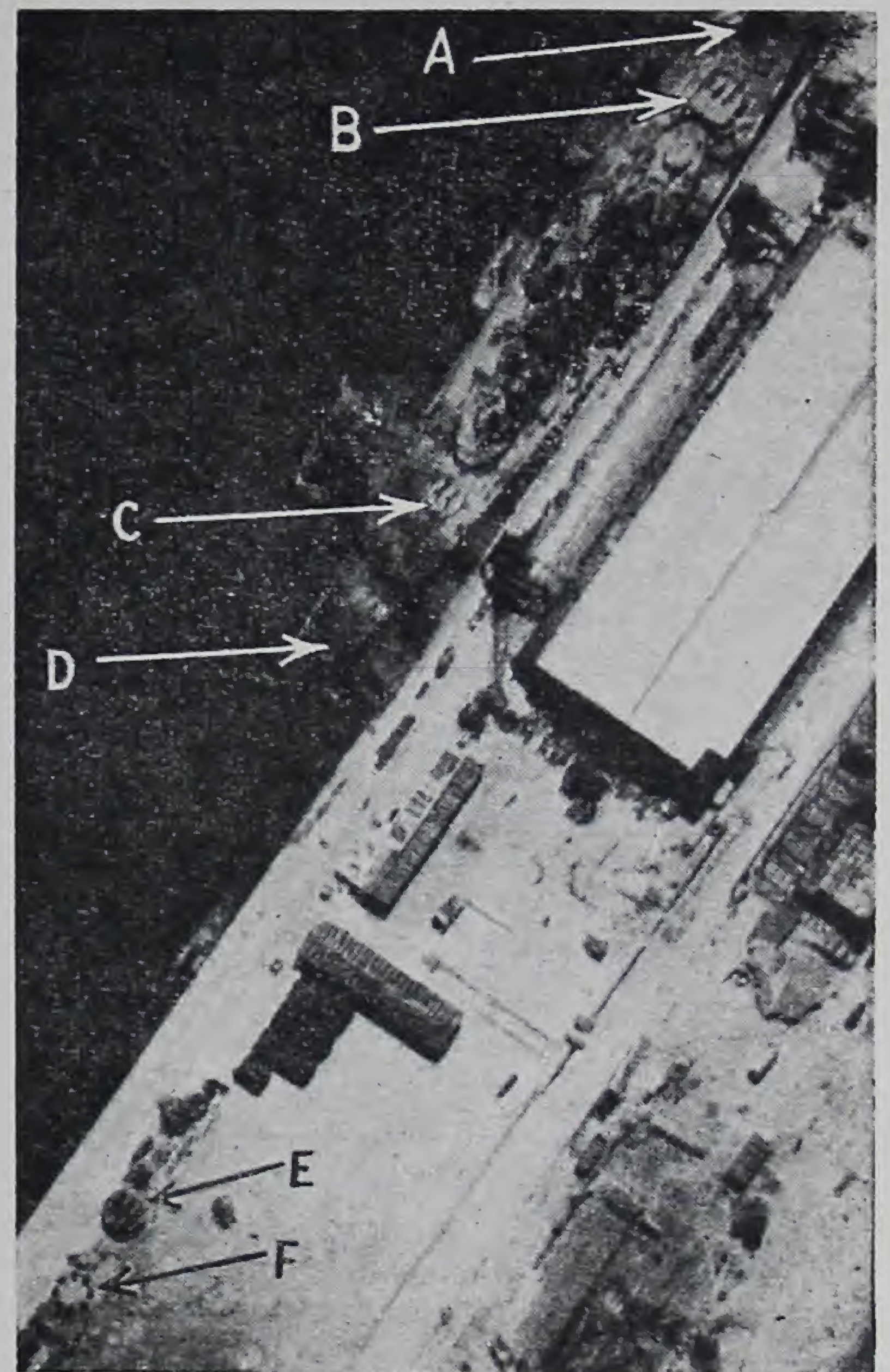
on the Ruhr and Rhine and other industrial targets; and against shipping bases — Hamburg, Wilhelmshaven, Emden, Kiel—designed to hamper the German war effort on and under the sea. Next came the great mass raids, first against Cologne on the night of May 30–31, when 1,130 bombers attacked in 95 minutes; on the Essen area of the Ruhr on the night of June 1–2, when 1,036 bombers were used; and yet again on the night of June 25–26, when more than a thousand bombers were directed against Bremen. From 1,000 to 1,500 tons of bombs were dropped on each of these three raids.

All concentrated raids (the smaller ones and the larger) were made possible by the employment of "pathfinder" aircraft. The pathfinders were manned by specialist navigator crews to whom was entrusted the task of finding the target and lighting it up with flares and bombs. The crews of the bombers approaching the target were able to see the lights and fly straight towards them. (The first pathfinder aircraft were machines of the Fleet Air Arm,

'GNEISENAU' AT GDYNIA

After her flight from Brest on February 12, 1942 the German battleship made her way to the Polish Baltic port of Gdynia, where she was photographed by the R.A.F. Extensive repair work is in progress: (A) Turret missing; its base is at (E), and the ball bearings on which it turns are at (F). Another turret, from which the guns have been removed, is seen at (B), and a third at (C); armour, too, is missing from the latter. (D), camouflage around the stern.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright





BOMBER COMMAND

Air Marshal Sir Arthur T. Harris (he received the K.C.B. in June 1942) was appointed to command Bomber Command in February 1942. He developed the concentrated attack on German war industry and transport which reached its climax in May and June with the thousand-bomber raids on Cologne, Essen and Bremen.

Photo, Fox

whose flares lit up targets for R.A.F. bombers in the Mediterranean theatre of war.)

There was something cheering to the people of Coventry, London, Manchester, Plymouth, Hull and other previously bombed British cities in the thought of

Light on 1000-Bomber Raids

the thousand-bomber raids. Here was retribution for what the Luftwaffe had done to them. They looked for more raids of this magnitude. What had happened? they asked, when the thousand-bomber raids did not continue. The answer is that these great raids were an experiment, a test of staff method, aircrew operational efficiency, and at the same time a means to bring to bear upon Germany a severe blow, right in the heart of the main submarine manufacturing centres. For this purpose aircraft not normally available to Bomber Command were pressed into service. Aircraft and crews from Coastal Command and Operational Training Units participated, some of the latter making their first action flight over enemy territory. The scale of the attacks could not be kept up because there were not aircraft available to make them. The demands from all the other war fronts were increasing, and Bomber Command had to suffer in consequence. The strength of Bomber Command increased by only 10 per cent during the whole of 1942.

On the other hand, the increasing number of four-engined bombers coming into service scaled-up the weight of bombs that could be dropped, because they carried heavier loads. Well within a year after the thousand-bomber raids attacks by 300 and 400 four-engined aircraft were unloading about 900 to 1,000 tons of bombs over one target, and these the more distant targets, too, such as Berlin.

In what the German Government stated were reprisals for the R.A.F. raids on German industrial centres the Luftwaffe began a series of attacks (called Baedeker raids, from the name of the German guide-book) against cathedral cities of England. Exeter was selected for one such raid on the night of April 24-25. About 30 bombers tore the heart of Exeter into rubble and flames and reduced the beautiful old High Street (after the debris had been cleared away) to an open space and, on either side of the roadway, to naked earth. The Cathedral (just off the High Street) was damaged, but not destroyed. There could be no claim that any industrial or war objective was sought. It was the vandal destruction of what the Germans themselves call "cultural monuments" that was intended; and that alone was fulfilled. It was the same at Bath, Norwich and York.

After the thousand-bomber raid on Cologne the Germans retaliated with another Baedeker raid upon Canterbury, the city in whose neighbourhood had fallen the first bombs to drop on the British mainland in this war. Twenty of the raiders were destroyed, eleven over Britain and nine over the Continent. The destruction of enemy raiders over Western Europe had by now become a part of Fighter Command's policy. Realizing how short a time German bombers remained over Britain, especially when attacking targets close to the coast, Air Chief Marshal Sir W. Sholto Douglas, C.-in-C. Fighter Command, instituted "intruder" aircraft operations.

These intruder fighters flew to the neighbourhood of German air bases from which the bombers came, and there awaited their return. (Sometimes they caught them coming out.) A proportionately large number of German bombers was destroyed or badly damaged in this way. As with the bomber war, the fighter war was carried into the enemy camp.

Fighter aircraft carried the war into the air over the enemy-occupied territory by day, providing escort for short-range bomber attacks, then mostly made by Bostons or Hurricane fighter-bombers. They flew over the zone which could be penetrated by Spitfire, Whirlwind and Hurricane fighters—that was from about Flushing to Cherbourg, and inland, at the deepest, to about 50 miles. They attacked coastal vessels, road transport, railway locomotives and trains, canal barges, troops' billets, gunposts, everything and anything that offered a target to their machine-guns or cannon. (The Hurricane IIc then carried four 20-millimetre cannon-guns, or 12 Browning machine-

Widespread Fighter Offensives



REAR-GUNNER OF A BRITISH HEAVY BOMBER

In readiness for an operational trip, his equipment comprises: (1) helmet with earphones; (2) oxygen mask and microphone; the cable for intercommunication between crew is (4), and the tube to the oxygen supply is (3). Parachute gear comprises dog-clips (5) for the chest-type pack and the quick-release box (8) on the parachute harness (9). For support if he comes down into the sea he wears the 'Mae West' or air-inflated life-jacket (6); the tape ties are seen in (7). His leather jacket is lined with lambswool and has a fur collar (10).

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



RENAULT WORKS AT BILLANCOURT, PARIS

Aero engines, tanks and motor vehicles were being made in large quantities for the Germans at the Renault and Farman works on the outskirts of Paris. This R.A.F. photograph shows the damage done by the British bombing raid in daylight on March 3, 1942. (A) indicates a damaged gasholder of large size which has collapsed. Wrecked tanks in the assembly shops and yard are at (B). This was a very successful operation carried out at low cost.

Photo, British Official : Crown Copyright

guns. The Spitfire VB carried two cannon and four machine-guns. The Whirlwind carried four cannon.)

The fighter-bomber was first developed by the R.A.F. in the last summer of the First Great War. In the Second Great War it was first employed by the

Origin of the Fighter- Bomber

Luftwaffe during the Battle of Britain. Its value lies in the great manoeuvrability and speed of the fighter, a combination which enables it to swoop upon its target at a very low level and aim the bomb almost as a fast bowler delivers his ball at the wickets. The bomb falls downwards and forwards, and hits the target with a high forward velocity—more like a bullet than a bomb. When used against ships, the bomb may hit the side of the hull and penetrate, or strike an obstruction in the superstructure. On land, after hitting a building the bomb may go right into it through the wall, and then explode after a brief delay of perhaps three seconds—just long enough for the bomber to fly on out of the danger zone of its own missile. For the bomb, in its short free flight, travels forward almost at the same speed as the aircraft,

and hits almost at the moment the bomber passes over the target.

When the bomb has been released the machine becomes a pure fighter—fast, manoeuvrable, well-armed, able to take quick evasive action or to fight in self-defence or in offence. The bomb may fall flat on the surface it strikes, and rebound into the air. Bouncing bombs have sometimes jumped over three houses before their delayed-action fuse exploded them. Sometimes they have almost jumped up and hit the fighter they came from. But in spite of these incalculable errors the fighter-bomber has proved a deadly weapon: against small ships, or armies in the field, and for all air bombing work by day, where low flying is an advantage either to avoid gunfire or to put the bomb down in an otherwise awkward place.

The air now played an increasingly important part in the war at sea. Aircraft operated from the United King-

dom, Iceland, Newfoundland, the United States seaboard, and West Africa to provide air cover over the Atlantic. U-boats were driven farther out into mid-Atlantic, beyond the range of patrolling aircraft from all bases. In this area protection was afforded mainly by escort vessels, and there the submarines collected in packs. During the first three months after America's entry into the war, and before anti-submarine measures were fully organized within the new sea zones, heavy sinkings were effected by the enemy in the Caribbean Sea and surrounding waters. (See Chapter 209.) Coastal Command received more powerful types of aircraft and became a complete air force within the R.A.F. The short-range Ansons, which had done useful work in close patrols, were replaced by long-range four-engined Liberators and Halifax bombers. The Command also utilized Whitley, Wellington and Hampden

bombers, in addition to marine aircraft such as the Sunderland and Catalina flying boats, the Hudson reconnaissance aircraft, and the Beaufort torpedo-bomber. The latest types of fighter, Spitfires, Hurricanes, and Beaufighters—the last with three cannon and four machine-guns—were employed to protect convoys against air attack during the approach to United Kingdom ports.

The Luftwaffe used aircraft to protect submarines leaving and entering the U-boat bases in Western Europe. Air battles took place over the Bay of Biscay and off the Norwegian coast. German long-range reconnaissance aircraft, principally the Focke-Wulf Kurier four-engined landplane, scouted over the oceans seeking targets for the U-boats; they were attacked whenever encountered. Submarine bases became high-priority targets in the list for Bomber Command. Heavy attacks were maintained against St. Nazaire and Lorient, while Rostock was mass-raided during the four nights following April 23.

The most remarkable episode in the air war at sea was the break-out of the battleships "Scharnhorst" and "Gneisenau" and the heavy cruiser "Prinz Eugen" from Brest on February 11. The warships—battered from the air at frequent intervals while

dry-docked or berthed at Brest, the port into which they had slipped to escape the wrath at sea—were useless to the German navy. As fast as they were repaired they were bombed again. For ten months the R.A.F. kept them bottled up. Eleven months after his courageous torpedo attack on April 6, 1941 (in a Beaufort), upon one warship moored within the mole at Brest, Flying Officer Kenneth Campbell, of Coastal Command, was posthumously awarded the Victoria Cross. He did not return from the flight, and it took all those months to piece the story together. Skimming just above the flak ships, Campbell torpedoed the warship below the water-line. She had to be returned to the dry-dock whence she had come only the day before (*see illus., p. 1931*).

For their dash up Channel the three German warships slipped out of port in the dark. The weather was bad, and the regular British morning reconnaissance over Brest was not possible. The ships were first sighted accidentally, by patrolling fighters, when they were approaching the narrows of the Dover Strait. Under a tough air umbrella of German fighters they moved as fast as they could, close to the French coast, their speed being about 20 knots. As



Flying Officer L. T. MANSER, V.C.
Captain of a Manchester in the mass raid on Cologne, May 30–31, 1942, though caught by searchlights and intense A.A. fire he pressed on to bomb the target. On the return his aircraft was set on fire; though the blaze was put out the machine lost height and a crash became inevitable. Manser ordered the crew to bale out while he kept the bomber steady; after this, with Manser still at the controls, the aircraft plunged down and burst into flames. In October 1942 a posthumous V.C. was gazetted.

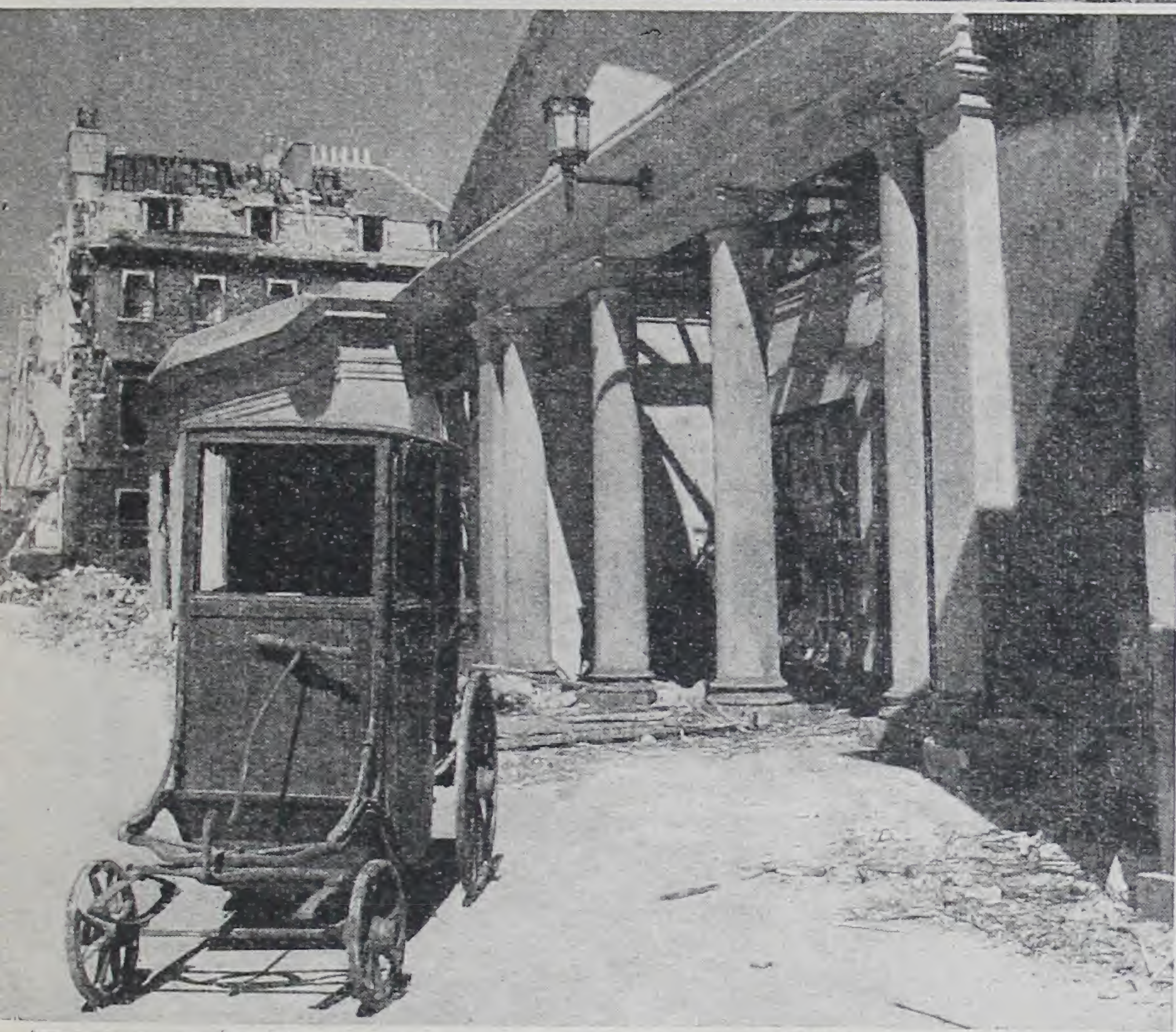
Photo, G.P.U.

RESULT OF THE 'REPRISAL' RAID ON CANTERBURY

On the night after our thousand-bomber raid on Cologne (May 30–31, 1942) the Germans retaliated with an attack on Canterbury; eleven of the raiders were brought down over Britain and another nine destroyed over the Continent. This photograph, taken after some demolition and clearance, shows the Cathedral from the south, beyond the ruins of houses and shops in Burgate Street (bombed on October 26, 1940). *See also colour plate f.p. 2114. Photo, Topical Press*



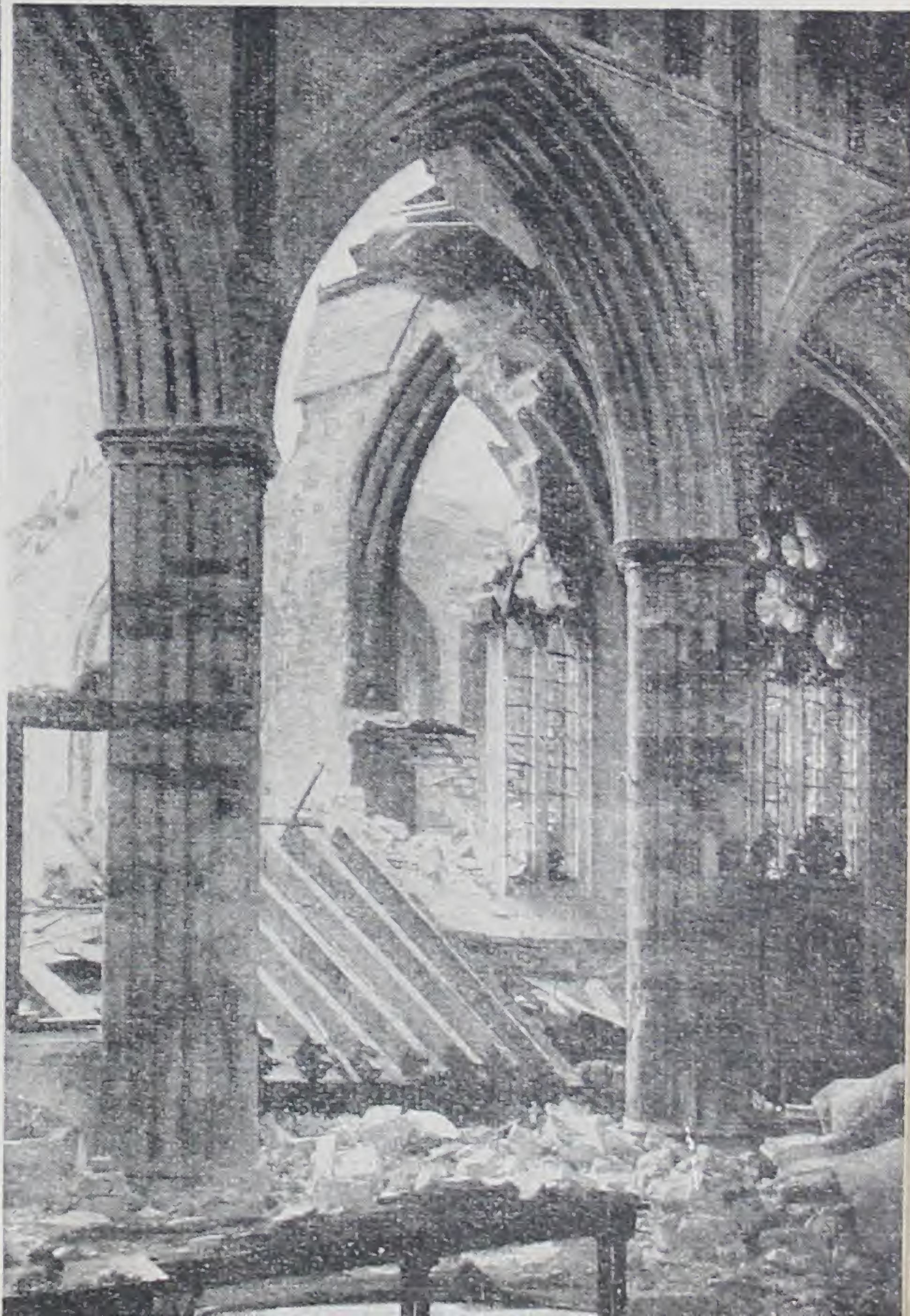
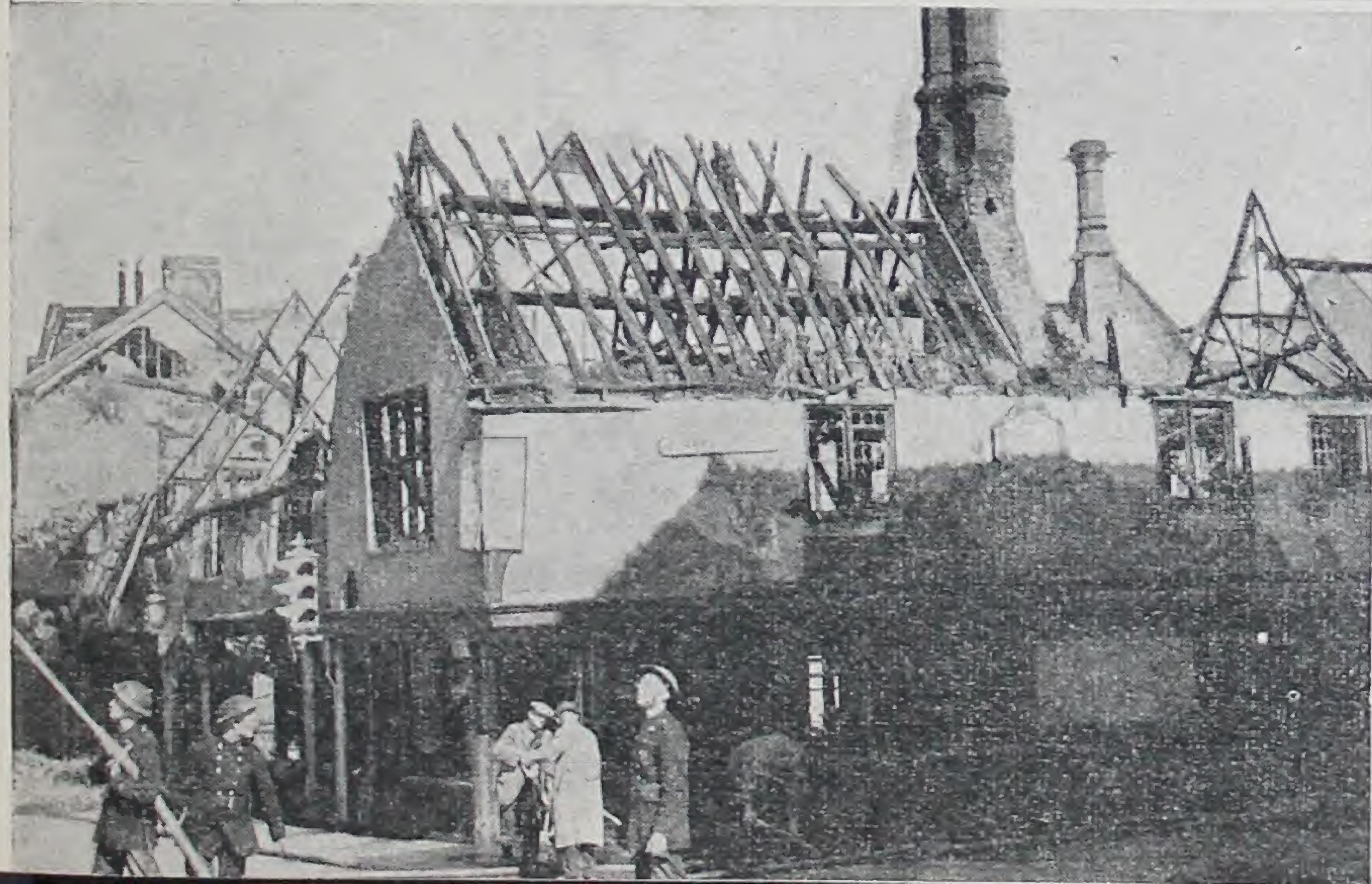
soon as the discovery was made an attack was prepared. Six Fleet Air Arm Swordfish torpedo-reconnaissance-bombers flew out under Lieut.-Commander A. Eugene Esmonde, D.S.O.,

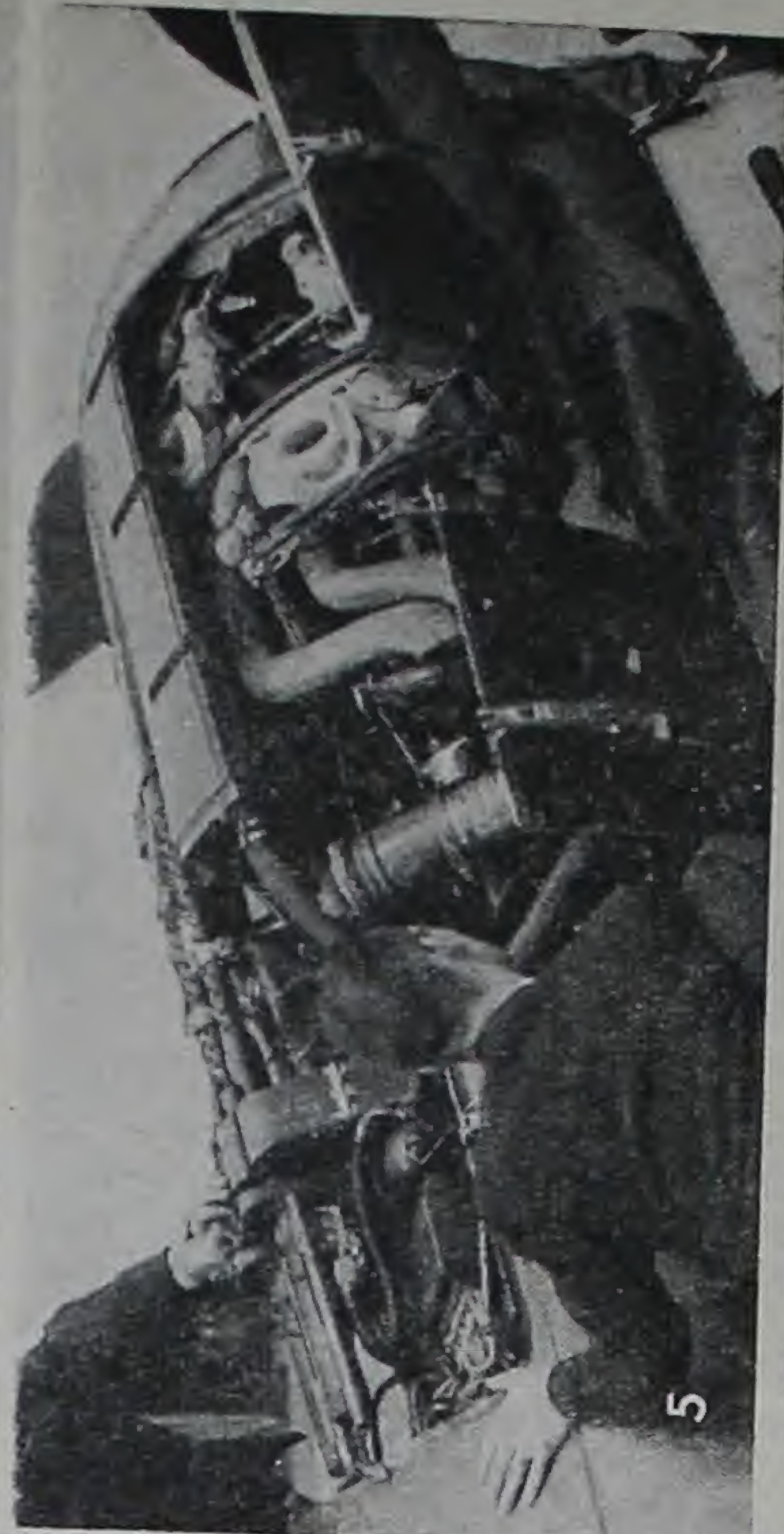
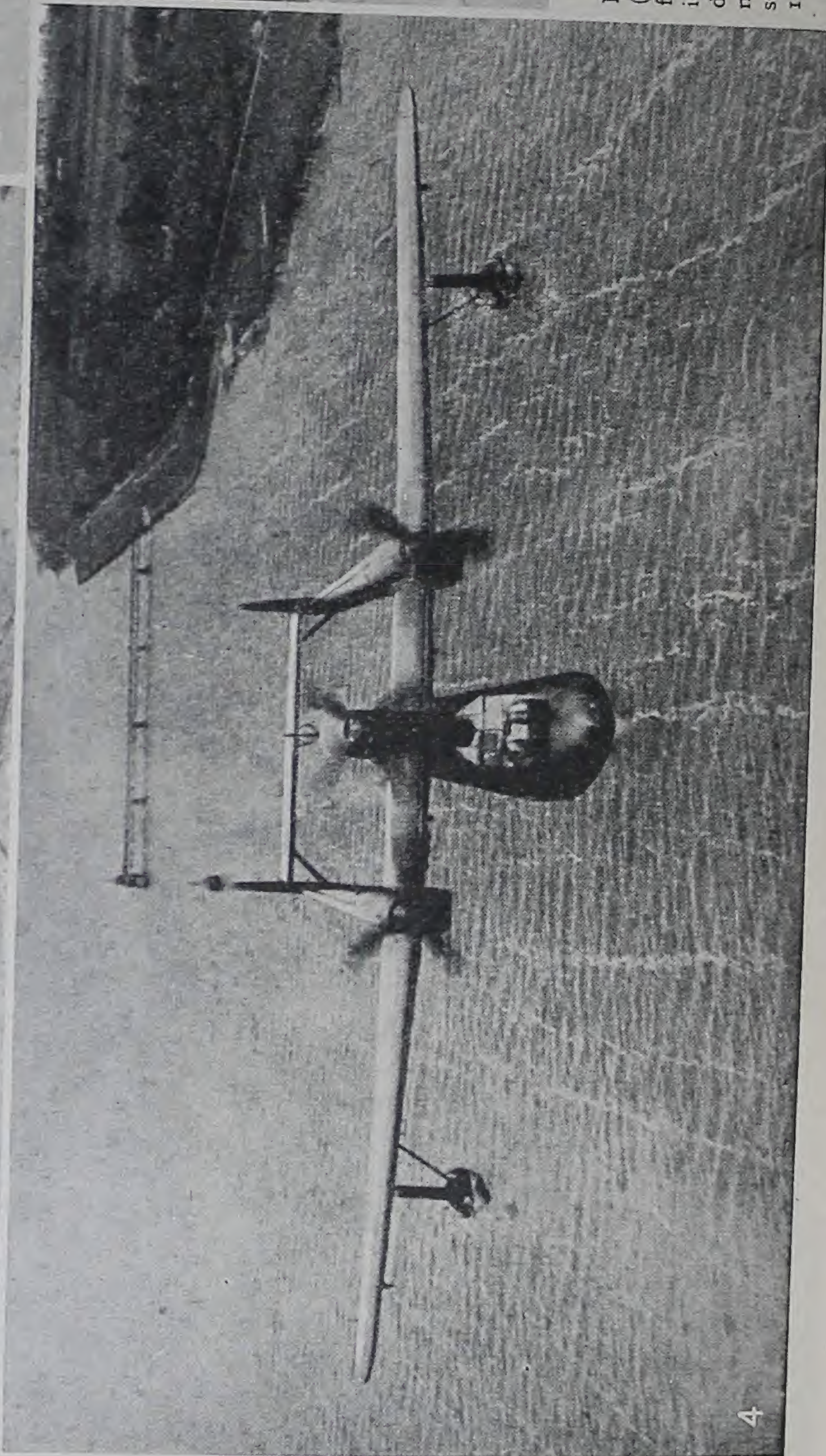
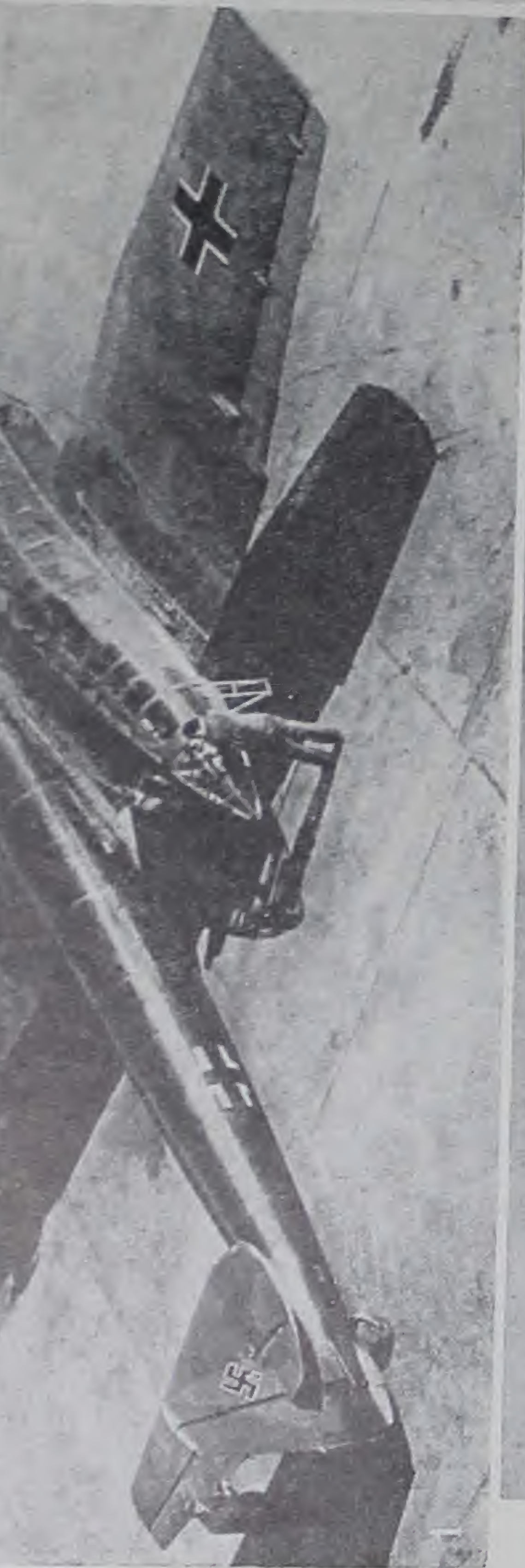
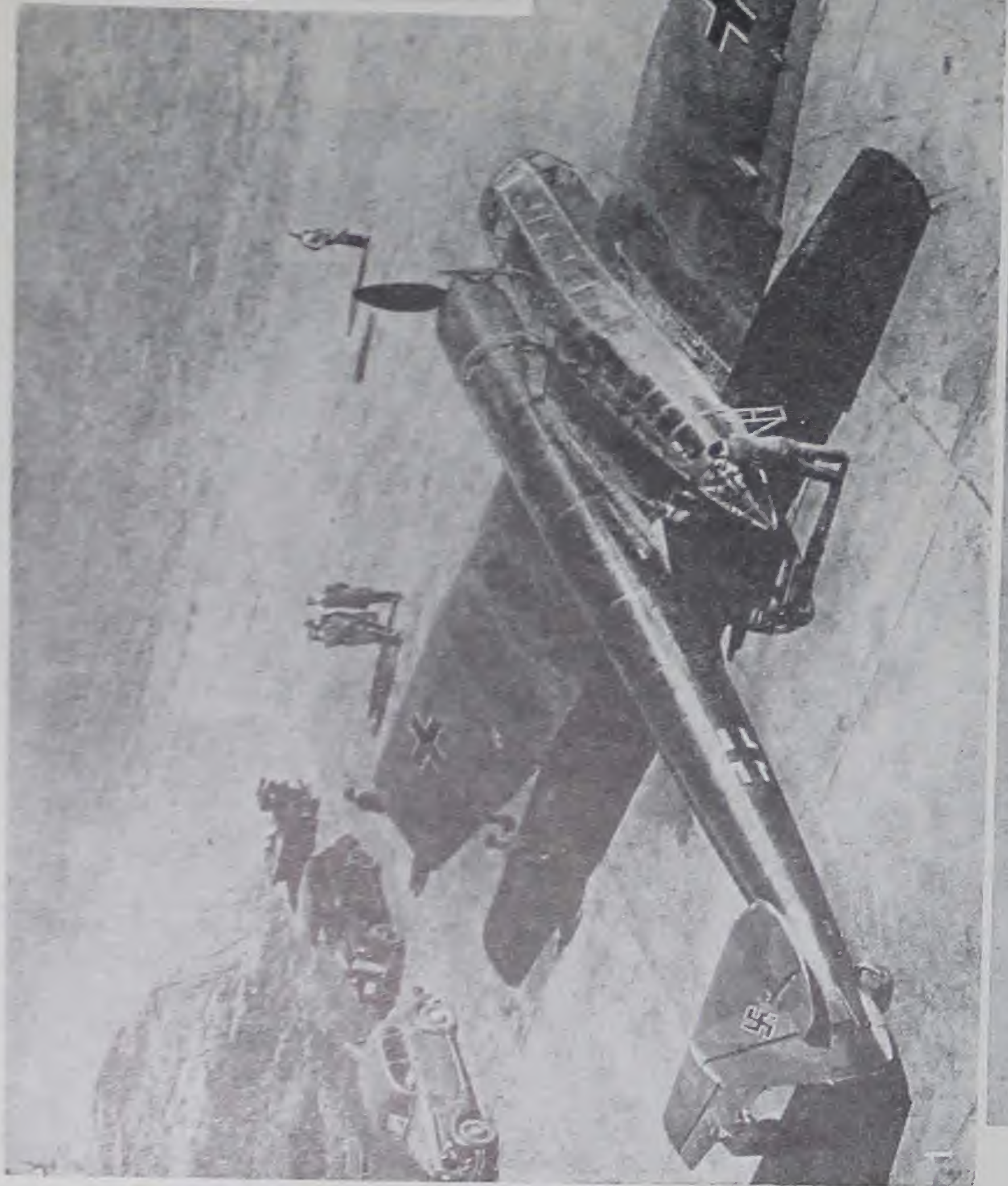


THE 'BAEDEKER' RAIDS

Following the heavy R.A.F. raids on Rostock and Cologne at the end of April 1942, German officials said that in reprisal the Luftwaffe would now go out for every building starred in Baedeker's guides, while the 'Boersen Zeitung' gloated over damage to such buildings at Bath and Exeter. Top, York station (April 28-29); centre, left, west portico of the Assembly Rooms at Bath—Bath chair in foreground (April, nights of 25 and 26); lower left, the ancient Boar's Head Inn, Norwich (April 27-28); lower right, in Exeter Cathedral, where damage to St. James's Chapel is seen (April 24-25). (See also illus., p. 2134.)

Photos, Oswald Wild; Associated Press; Keystone; E. W. Tattersall





NEW TYPES EMPLOYED BY THE LUFTWAFFE

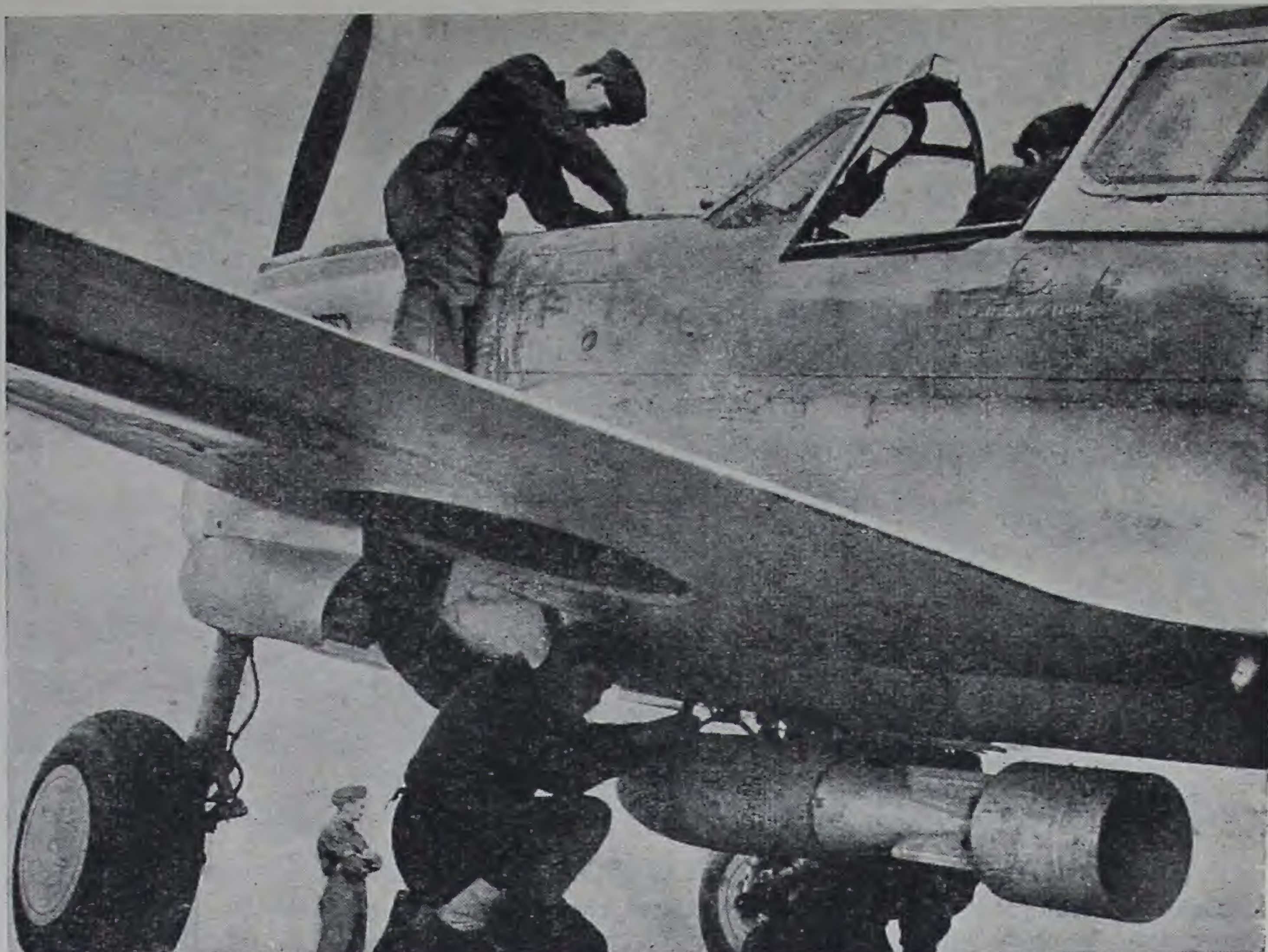
In Russia the Germans used the Blohm & Voss 141, seen on the ground in (1) and in flight in (2). The engine is on the port wing, while the cabin for a crew of three is on the starboard. The Focke-Wulf FW-190, shown in (3) and (5), came into service at the end of 1941; a fast fighter, designed around the engine (a B.M.W. 14-cyl. twin-row radial) and armament (four cannon and two machine-guns). The Blohm & Voss HA-38 seaplane (4) has compression-ignition engines—three Junkers-Jumo 205C 12-cylinder. The top speed is about 170 m.p.h. and the range 2,400 miles.

Photos, P. N. A.; Sport & General; Associated Press; G. P. U.

R.N., escorted by 50 fighters. They attacked the enemy in the face of a furious anti-aircraft gun barrage; no Swordfish returned; five survivors were picked up. Lieut.-Commander Esmonde was posthumously awarded the Victoria Cross, the first to be won by the Fleet Air Arm in this war. Four officer survivors were awarded the D.S.O., and the naval airman who was saved received the Conspicuous Gallantry Medal. Eleven members of the squadron who did not return were mentioned in dispatches, and it was said of them: "Theirs was the courage which is beyond praise."

Coastal Command Beauforts claimed three torpedo hits. Fighter-bombers and fighters attacked the escort vessels. Blenheims, Halifaxes, Hampdens, Manchesteres, Stirlings and Wellingtons of Bomber and Coastal Command attacked, but were handicapped by bad weather. They had to drop their bombs from a height in order to get the necessary bomb velocity, but gained only an occasional sight of the vessels through gaps in the clouds. Conditions were almost impossible for our bombers, so mines were laid ahead of the ships. The enemy were later located in Wilhelmshaven, Kiel, and Trondheim, and had suffered damage. In the air-sea action the R.A.F. lost 20 bombers and 16 fighters, and claimed the destruction of 18 enemy fighters. The battleships were again pounded in their new bases by Bomber Command. On May 17 the "Prinz Eugen" was intercepted en route from Trondheim to Kiel by 50 Hudsons, Beaufighters, and Beauforts, and again damaged.

Meanwhile in the Far East Japanese forces gained victory after victory. Singapore fell on February 15. The loss of Upper Burma and the Dutch East Indies followed. Everywhere the United Nations were outnumbered in the air, and the enemy's air weapon cut through their defences with appalling speed. Air raids began against Northern Australia on April 4; Colombo was raided on April 5; India's first air raids occurred on the 6th; Trincomalee naval base was raided three days later. During this aggressive action Japanese carrier-borne aircraft sank the cruisers "Devonshire" and "Cornwall" and the aircraft carrier "Hermes" near Ceylon. Corregidor,



CURTIS KITTYHAWK AS A FIGHTER-BOMBER

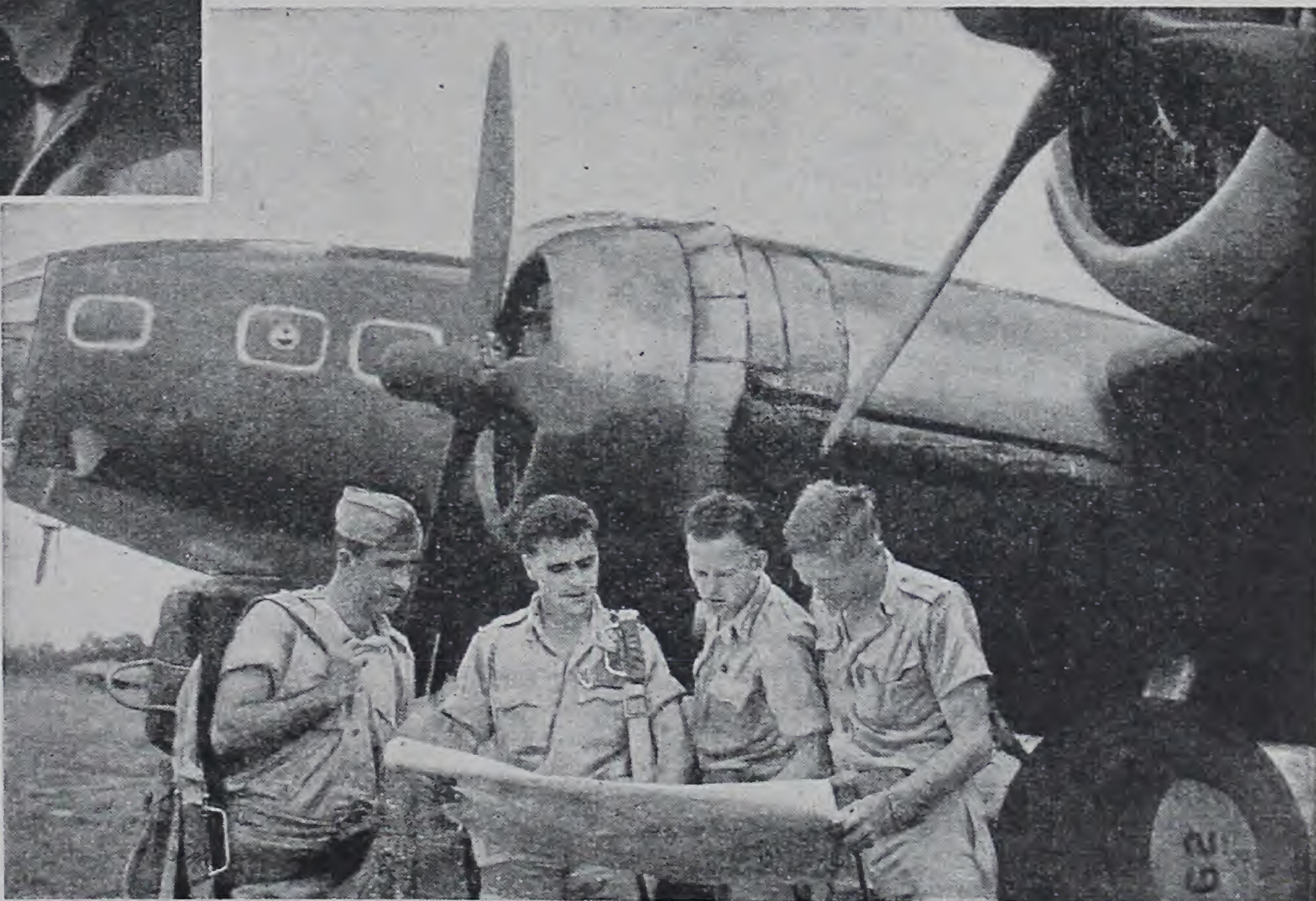
The American Kittyhawk is comparable with our Spitfire in performance, and numbers have been in service with the R.A.F. in Libya. Adapted to carry light bombs ('Kittybomber'), it proved of special value against the Germans. Here R.A.F. armoureders are attaching bombs before a raid from an advanced aerodrome in the Western Desert.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

mercilessly dive-bombed and shelled, surrendered to the Japanese on May 5.

The United Nations stood with their

backs to Australia, hitting out with aircraft at the Japanese invaders of the islands to the immediate north. Tokyo, Yokohama, Kobe, Osaka and Nagoya were bombed on April 18 by Mitchell bombers led by Major-General



PHILIPPINES RAIDED BY AUSTRALIA-BASED AIRCRAFT

On April 13-14, 1942, Brig.-General Ralph Royce, U.S. Army Air Force (inset), led 13 American bombers in a flight from Australia to attack Japanese bases in the Philippines (see page 2093). The squadron comprised three Flying Fortresses of the type seen above, and ten B-25s. Shipping at Manila, Cebu, Davao and Batangas was bombed, and a number of American and Filipino personnel picked up.

Photos, Associated Press; Pictorial Press



DOOLITTLE TAKES OFF TO BOMB TOKYO

Major-General James H. Doolittle led the squadron of American Mitchell medium bombers which flew from the aircraft carrier 'Hornet' a distance of 800 miles to bomb the Japanese capital on April 18, 1942. Besides Tokyo they attacked Yokohama, Nagoya, Kobe, and Osaka. Out of 80 airmen taking part 64 made their way to Free China, eight were taken prisoner in Japan (some put to death), five were interned in Russia, where one aircraft made a forced landing, two were missing and one was killed. Right, President Roosevelt decorates Major-General Doolittle with the Congressional Medal of Honor; left to right: Lt.-Gen. Arnold, Chief of U.S. Army Air Forces; Mrs. Doolittle; General Doolittle.

Photos, Keystone; Topical Press

James H. Doolittle, former Schneider Trophy winner, to whom President Roosevelt later presented the Congressional Medal of Honor. A year after, on the anniversary of the raid, it was made known that the aircraft had taken off from the carrier "Hornet," which took them to within 800 miles of Tokyo. After bombing objectives in Tokyo and other cities the aircraft could not reach chosen landing grounds in China, as had been intended. One landed in Russian territory, while others came down in China or in Chinese waters. Of 80 men taking part in the operation, five were interned in Russia; eight were made prisoner in Japan and suffered punishment (some being executed); two were missing and one was killed. The other 64 made their way to Chinese army camps and thence back to American territory. In the original plans the carrier was to have gone 400 miles nearer the Japanese capital, but it ran into enemy forces at 800 miles away and there was a fear that its object had been detected by the Japanese.

On April 21, 1943, a White House statement announced that nine days earlier a protest had been lodged with the Japanese Government against the punishment of the crews of two American bombers captured by the Japanese on the alleged grounds that the men had

intentionally bombed non-military installations and had fired on civilians. The U.S.A. branded these charges as false, and announced that it would hold personally and officially responsible officers of the Japanese Government who participated in the punishment of the American aviators. Japan was solemnly warned that for any other violations of her undertaking regarding prisoners of war, or for any other acts of criminal barbarity inflicted upon American prisoners, the American Government would visit upon the Japanese Government responsible the punishment they deserved.

By seizing the aerodromes, British carrier-borne aircraft played a great part in the initial landing operations in Madagascar in May. On June 4 the battle of Midway Island began; it ended in an overwhelming defeat for the Japanese navy by American air power, without a single shot being fired from a gun. This air success removed from Hawaii the threat of invasion. The United Nations were beginning to hit back in the Far East.

In the Mediterranean, Fleet Air Arm and R.A.F. aircraft were constantly engaged. The introduction of the

Kittybomber into the desert war began that fighter-bomber-army cooperation which was to mean so much to subsequent victories; the air attack assisted in delaying Rommel's advance into Egypt during Auchinleck's withdrawal to El Alamein. Malta, awarded the George Cross by the King on April 16, had more than 2,500 alerts by the end of June. Having started its own defence with three Gladiator fighters—called Faith, Hope and Charity—it was now hitting back with increasing force.

The R.A.F. Regt. was formed on January 8, 1942; the Army Air Corps and Glider Pilot Regt. on February 27. The shape of things perhaps to come



was seen in the combined attack upon Bruneval, near Le Havre, on February 27. The radiolocation station was wrecked, and the coast defences overcome from the rear by British parachute-troops, dropped from Whitley bombers in their first action in northern Europe.

And by the middle of 1942 the turning point in the air war in favour of the United Nations was reached. Plans to evacuate Ceylon, announced on March 12, proved unnecessary. The Australian Government's early fear that Northern Australia would have to be evacuated became (with American and Australian forces united under General MacArthur) a resolve to counter-attack the Japanese invaders of New Guinea. The successful air-sea battle of the Coral Sea, fought in the first half of May 1942, frustrated the Japanese attempt to invade Queensland. The tempo of air war in the Pacific swiftened. Our retention of Port Moresby as an advanced base became the most important factor in the Australasian war zone.

U-BOAT ATTACK SWITCHED TO THE WESTERN ATLANTIC

The entry of the United States into full belligerency, while it mobilized untold industrial resources for the cause of the United Nations, brought them the aid of a large and efficient air arm and promised that of a huge army, involved at the outset large shipping losses as Axis submarines turned on the freighters of our Ally. The setbacks and achievements of the first six months of 1942 are here reviewed.

THE U.S. people no longer wondered whether the U.S. was in. They wondered now whether the U.S. was winning." That statement was made by a responsible American journal in November 1941—just one month before the Japanese launched their surprise attack on the Pacific naval base at Pearl Harbour. It referred not to the war as a whole but to the war at sea, and particularly to the Battle of the Atlantic. It serves to underline the gradual but steadily increasing participation of the U.S. naval and air forces in clearing the enemy, in President Roosevelt's words, from "waters the protection of which is necessary for American defence"—waters that stretched as far as Iceland. That phase of the Atlantic Battle is reviewed in Chapter 190. It was a successful phase which offered substantial promise that the tide had at last turned. Then came the final "show-down": America was at war with Japan, Germany, Italy and their satellites.

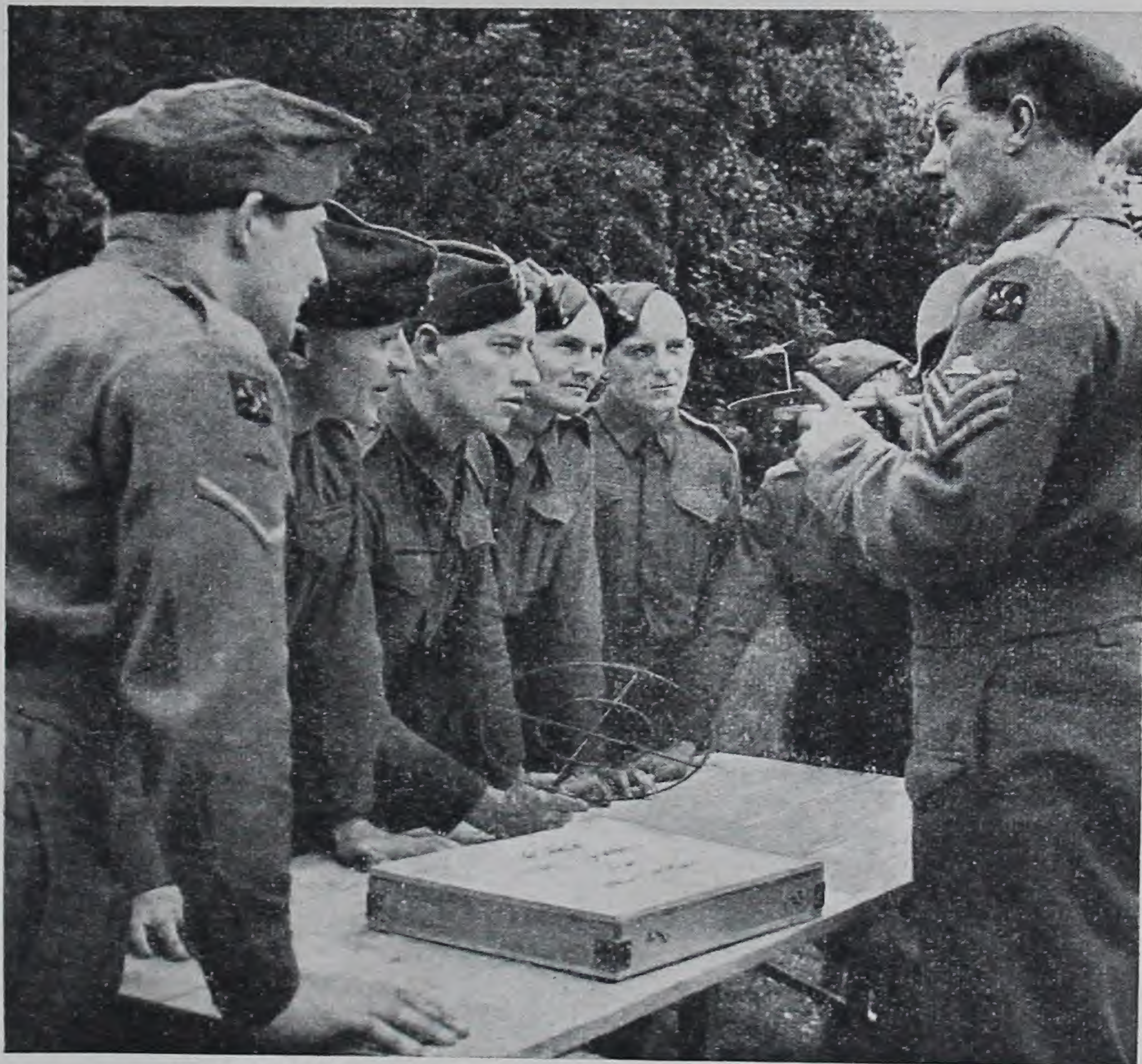
It is necessary to bear in mind the statement quoted above in order to appreciate the turn of events: a sudden, alarming rise in Allied shipping losses. The United States' entry into the war, with the whole of her substantial Navy now thrown into the struggle, did not bring about an improvement in the defensive war on the trade routes. The result was a weakening and not a strengthening of the Allied "lines" on this front, at a time when the front itself became suddenly far wider, encompassing not only the mid-Atlantic shipping routes but the whole of the North American seaboard. To the attackers, principally German submarines, the area for marauding operations had spread wide—an unqualified advantage—and the targets had doubled. This on the one hand. On the other the United States Navy had not only to meet the substantial threat of Japanese sea power in the Pacific to the best of her ability, but, at Pearl Harbour, had already sustained devastating losses in that single, treacherous

blow. The balance of power had been violently tilted, and it was inevitable that the Atlantic front should suffer from the reorientation of forces—for Britain also had to reinforce her inadequate squadrons in the Far East.

America's full entry into the war meant the mobilization of untold industrial resources, a huge army, a large and efficient air arm. It contained the assurance of final victory, but it also marked one more switch in the fortunes plotted on the graph of shipping losses. The Americans were not prepared for war on their doorstep. The first merchant ship losses were reported from the Pacific, for on December 22,

1941, it was announced that the steamer "Lahaina" had been shelled by a submarine and sunk 11 days previously between Hawaii and San Francisco. Two ships had been attacked "off the coast of California."

On December 17 the "Manini" and "Prusa" were sunk in the Pacific. A few days later the tanker "Emidio" was torpedoed within sight of watchers ashore. Another tanker, the "Montebello," was sunk about the same time. Towards the middle of January 1942 the scene shifted to the Atlantic coast. A Panamanian ship was torpedoed 60 miles off Long Island. Four American ships, two of them tankers, were sunk "off the East



TRAINING GUNNERS FOR OUR MERCHANT SHIPS

Maritime Regiments of the Royal Artillery were formed in the summer of 1940 to man the guns on merchantmen against air attack. Here a number of men are learning the use of sights. They wear the familiar khaki uniform with a shoulder badge bearing an anchor and the letters A.A. (See Colour Plate facing page 2115 for detail.)

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



U-BOATS ATTACK CURACAO AND ARUBA

The Dutch West Indian Islands of Curaçao and Aruba, a few miles off the coast of Venezuela, contain the largest oil-refining plant in the world. On account of the deep-water anchorage here crude oil is brought in tankers from Venezuela for refining, the output normally being 480,000 barrels daily. The islands were shelled and tankers attacked by enemy submarines in February 1942. Top, a tanker off Curaçao after being torpedoed; below, a torpedo found on the beach at Aruba: later, while being dismantled, it exploded and killed four persons.

Photos, Paul Popper: Keystone



Coast" within a day or two, some of the attacks apparently having been made audaciously close to American shores.

Farther out to sea, at night time, a U-boat surfaced about 100 yards from the "Lady Hawkins," a passenger liner belonging to the Canadian National Steamship Company. The submarine gave no warning, but fired two torpedoes. The "Lady Hawkins" heeled over and sank. There were 212 passengers and 109 crew on board. It was dark; there was no time to launch some of the lifeboats, and two others were smashed. Seventy-six passengers and crew crowded into one of the boats, which set sail for land. They were rescued five days later—but not all of them; five of that crowded company of men, women and children had died.

February saw an intensification of the attacks off the Atlantic coast. The largest cargo ship in the world, the Swedish ore carrier "Amerikaland,"

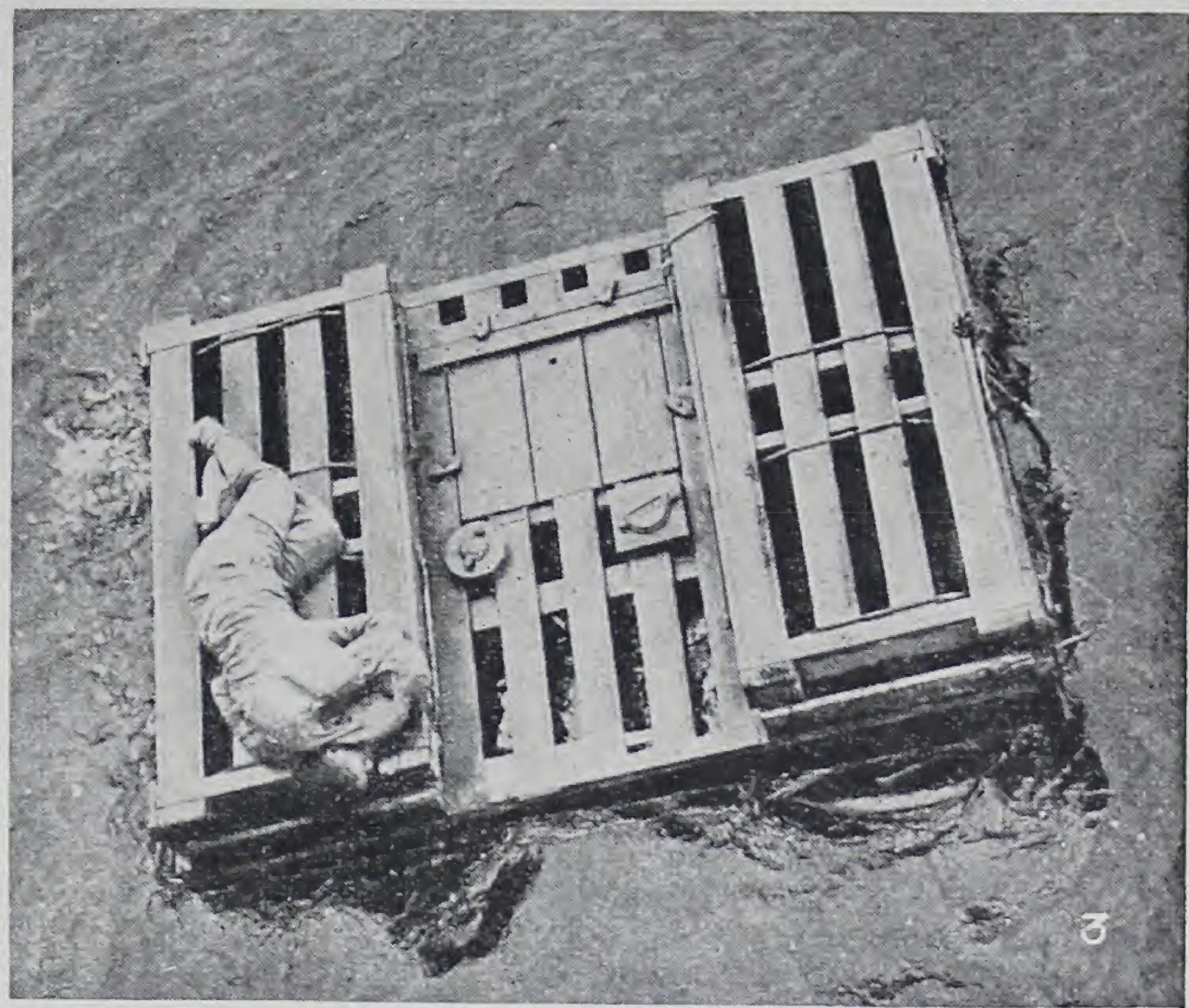
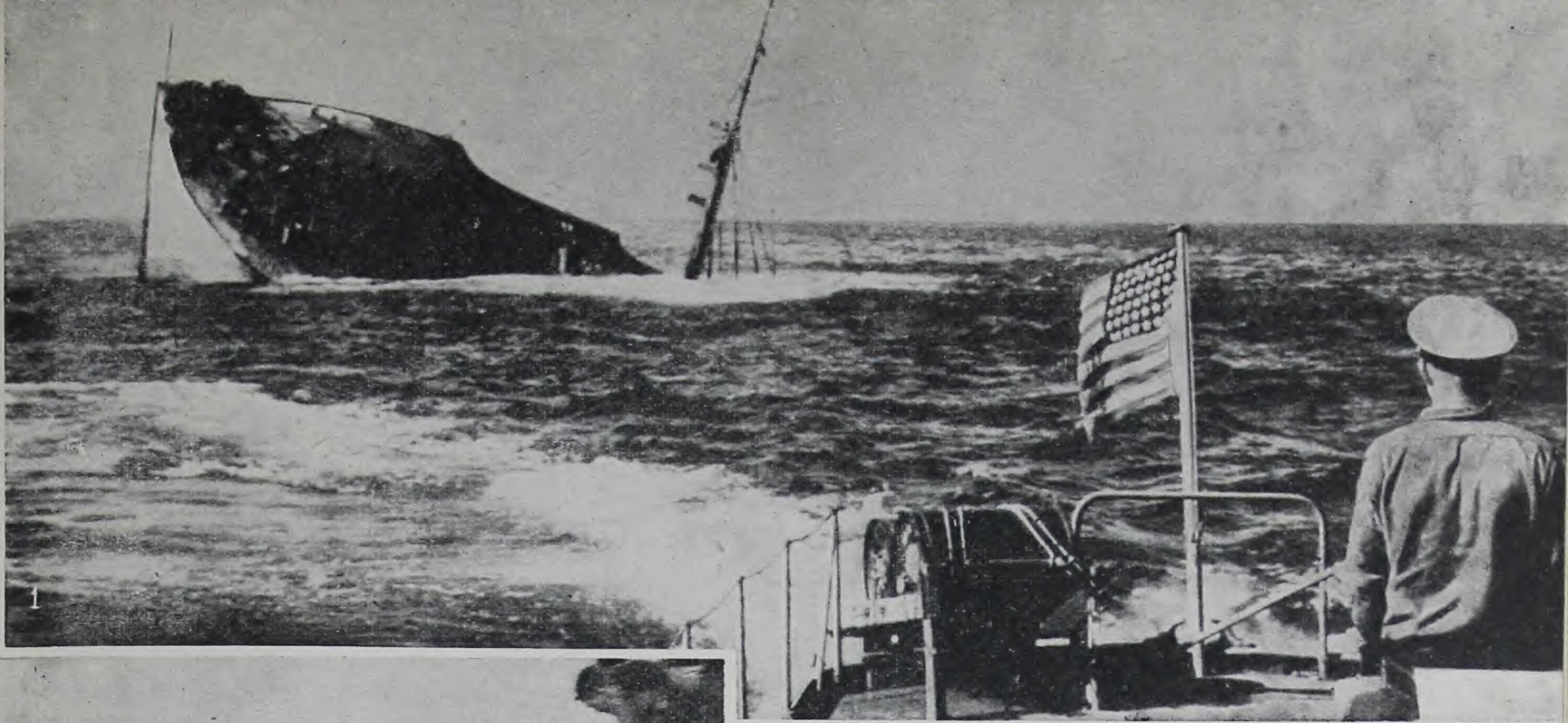
was torpedoed with the loss of over 20 lives. The steamer "Sangil" and the tankers "India Arrow," "Rochester," "China Arrow," "W. L. Steed," "Republic," "Thalia," "La Carriere" and "Cities Service Empire" were among those reported sunk. Between mid-January and mid-February 25 ships had been sunk in these waters. It was evident the Germans were concentrating their efforts against tankers carrying oil northwards from the Gulf ports and the West Indies. Off the entrance to the Gulf of Venezuela is the Dutch West Indian island of Aruba, where there are huge oil refineries. At 1.30 a.m. on February 16, 1942, a submarine, lying less than a mile off shore, opened fire on the refineries. Seven tankers in the vicinity were attacked and three of them sunk. This was the prelude to many U-boat attacks in the Caribbean area, over 4,000 miles from the U-boat base at

Brest. By February 23, it was announced, 114 ships had been attacked in the Western Atlantic. On the other hand, 56 attacks had been made on enemy submarines, but only three were definitely known to have been sunk.

These losses on the eastern seaboard of America, said the First Lord of the Admiralty some months later, "proved a grievous drain on Sinkings off the tonnage available U.S. Eastern to the United Nations." Seaboard

At times they were as much as three-quarters of the total tonnage sunk. Towards the end of February the Prime Minister confirmed the truth of the story told by unofficial Press reports. During the past two months there had, he said, been a "most serious increase in shipping losses." Part of this increase was due of course to the fact that new waters were involved, for the Pacific sinkings were by no means insignificant to begin with. But this theatre soon became the battleground for more essentially military operations than were seen in the Atlantic. This was not the slow, steady, threatening war of attrition—the desperate effort to sever the economic arteries that stretched across the Atlantic, round the Cape of Good Hope and through the Arctic to Russia. It was a battle of changing tempo; of swift advances by sea and land that occasionally swept up a harbour half full of merchant ships; the sinking of military transport ships and the disorderly ships retreating from Singapore—a battle of sudden surprises. It was the scene of the great air-naval battles of the Coral Sea and Midway which, by the end of June 1942, had halted the sensational progress of Japan. The chief menace was still hidden in the green waters of the Atlantic—occasionally revealed by the huge bubbles of air and swirl of oil that sometimes followed the explosion of a depth charge.

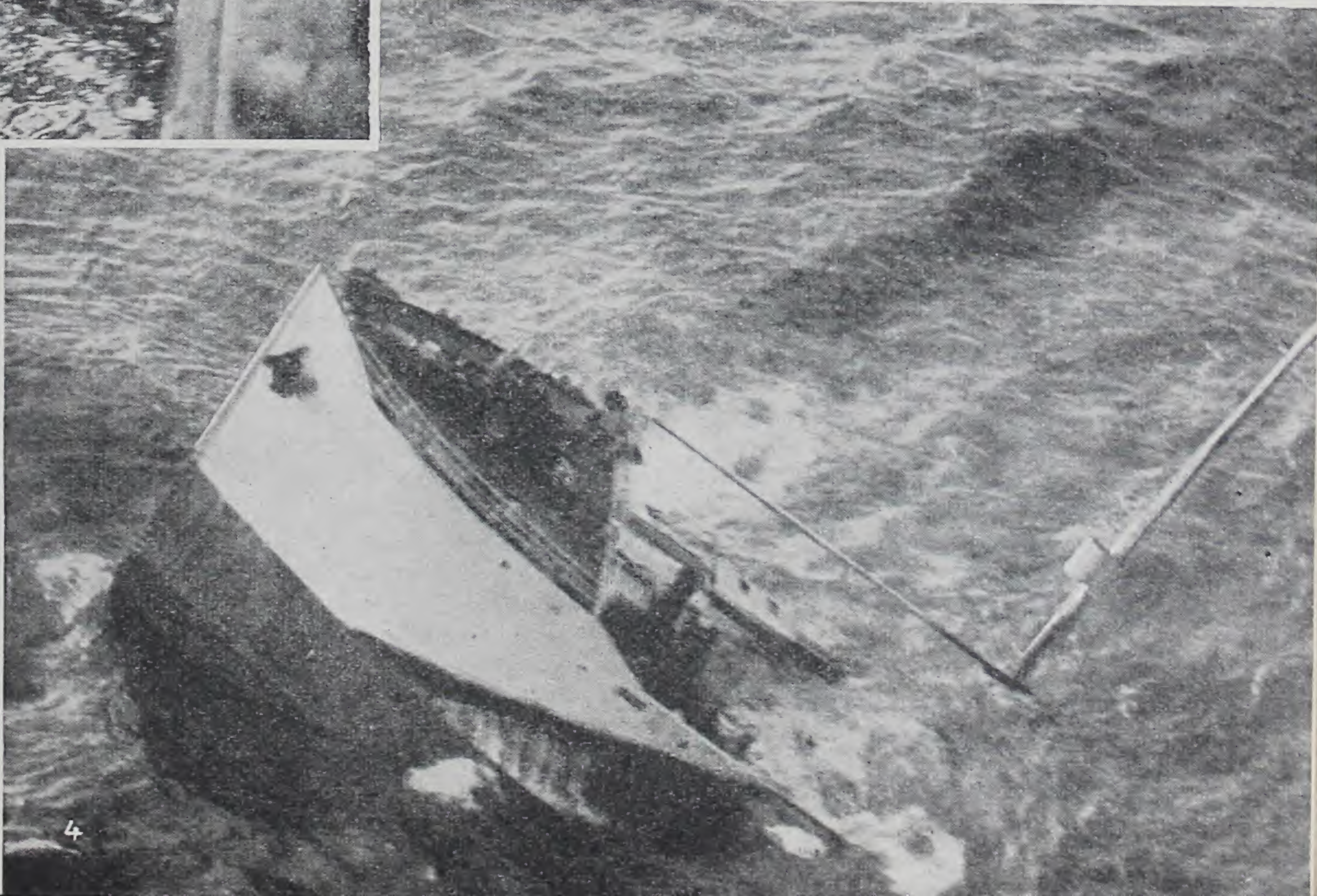
The month of March saw no diminution in the heavy Atlantic and Caribbean sinkings. Coastal defence



GRIEVOUS DRAIN ON SHIPPING TONNAGE

U-boat activities off the eastern seaboard of North America early in 1942 caused a serious loss to the United Nations, amounting at times to three-quarters of the total shipping casualties. Here are typical incidents of the grim warfare. (1) Circling around a sunken American freighter, a U.S. patrol vessel searches for the U-boat. (2) Survivors from a merchantman torpedoed 160 miles off Halifax, N.S., are hauled aboard H.M.C.S. 'Red Deer,' a Canadian minesweeper; in (3) is seen a Chinese seaman, unconscious from exposure. (4) Norwegian tanker 'Varanger' sinking off the New Jersey coast, not far from Atlantic City. All the crew were rescued.

Photos, Keystone ; Associated Press





BLIMPS PROTECT AMERICAN SHIPPING FROM U-BOATS

Small airships such as this one from the United States Naval Base at Lakehurst (N.J.) cruised slowly on patrol over the Atlantic routes, spotting and giving warning of submarines and mines. They carried depth charges with which to attack enemy underwater craft, and supplemented the routine patrols carried out by naval craft and aeroplanes.

Photo, Keystone

patrols were considerably strengthened in an effort to provide protected "lanes" for the shipping traffic sailing north and south past Cape Hatteras. Air protection was increased; safe night anchorage provided. Small airships ("blimps") cruised over the water at slow speeds, dropping depth charges when a U-boat was spotted. The sinkings fell off for a time, but in May the U.S. authorities were reluctantly forced to adopt the convoy system along the eastern seaboard. This meant a serious reduction in carrying power because of delays, slower speeds and port difficulties. But it was eventually proved to be the solution to the very serious menace in these waters.

Many anti-submarine vessels, including the ubiquitous corvettes, were sent from Britain to help the U.S. Navy in its new task, and others under construction were earmarked for America. Planes and pilots of the Coastal Command brought the benefits of long experience in U-boat hunting.

In the Western Atlantic the Germans scored by the concentration of ship-

ping and by America's unpreparedness, which was manifested in one way by the shortage of escort vessels. But there was another purpose in the German policy. It was intended also to frighten the South American neutrals, to impress them with German strength and American weakness, and to discourage assistance to the United States. U-boats made no attempt to discriminate between neutral and belligerent targets.

At the beginning of February Brazil took over 96,000 tons of Axis shipping sheltering in Brazilian ports. On February 15 the passenger and cargo vessel "Buarque" was torpedoed off the Atlantic coast; it was night-time and the Brazilian flag painted on the side was floodlit. This was the first attack against the shipping of Brazil, and many others followed—the "Olinda," sunk by shellfire a few days later; the "Arabutan," torpedoed early in March; the "Cabedello" in April; the "Parnahyba" and "Goncalves Dias" in May, and the "Comandante Lyra," which reached port after being torpedoed. Brazil replied by requisitioning

six laid-up Danish ships and by attacking the U-boats from the air.

Germany's policy failed with Brazil, which in July declared war on the Axis. Attacks were also made on Argentine ships, including the tanker "Victoria" and the former Italian steamer "Rio Tercero," both followed by "profound regrets" from the German Government. The Government of Argentina took no action apart from protests. Uruguayan, Venezuelan, Chilean and Mexican ships were also sunk, with results which were hardly according to the Axis plans. On May 28 President Camacho said that Germany's sinking of two neutral Mexican tankers "in a cowardly ambush" had compelled Mexico to defend her honour. A state of war was declared.

The effect of the adoption of convoys along the Atlantic seaboard was partly to divert even greater numbers of U-boats to the Caribbean Sea, the Gulf of Mexico and the South Atlantic. Though the efficiency of the defence of these coastal

Serious Caribbean Situation

waters was improving as more escort ships became available, and was to improve further, sinkings were still on a serious level in June 1942. On the 23rd—a day that was spent, in Washington, in urgent conference by shipping and naval experts summoned by Mr. Churchill and President Roosevelt—it was reported that 13 ships had been sunk in the Caribbean area in 12 days, and that losses in the Western Atlantic since December 7 (most of them since the turn of the year) amounted to 290 ships—130 off the U.S. east coast, 108 in the Caribbean and the Gulf of Mexico, 35 off Canada and 17 off South America. The actual losses were not revealed, although renewed demands in the British Parliament and the Press were made for a resumption of the publication of shipping losses in some form. "As for the public," The Times remarked, "... the lack of knowledge must blunt the edge of its appreciation of the quintessential importance of the sea in the scheme of victory."

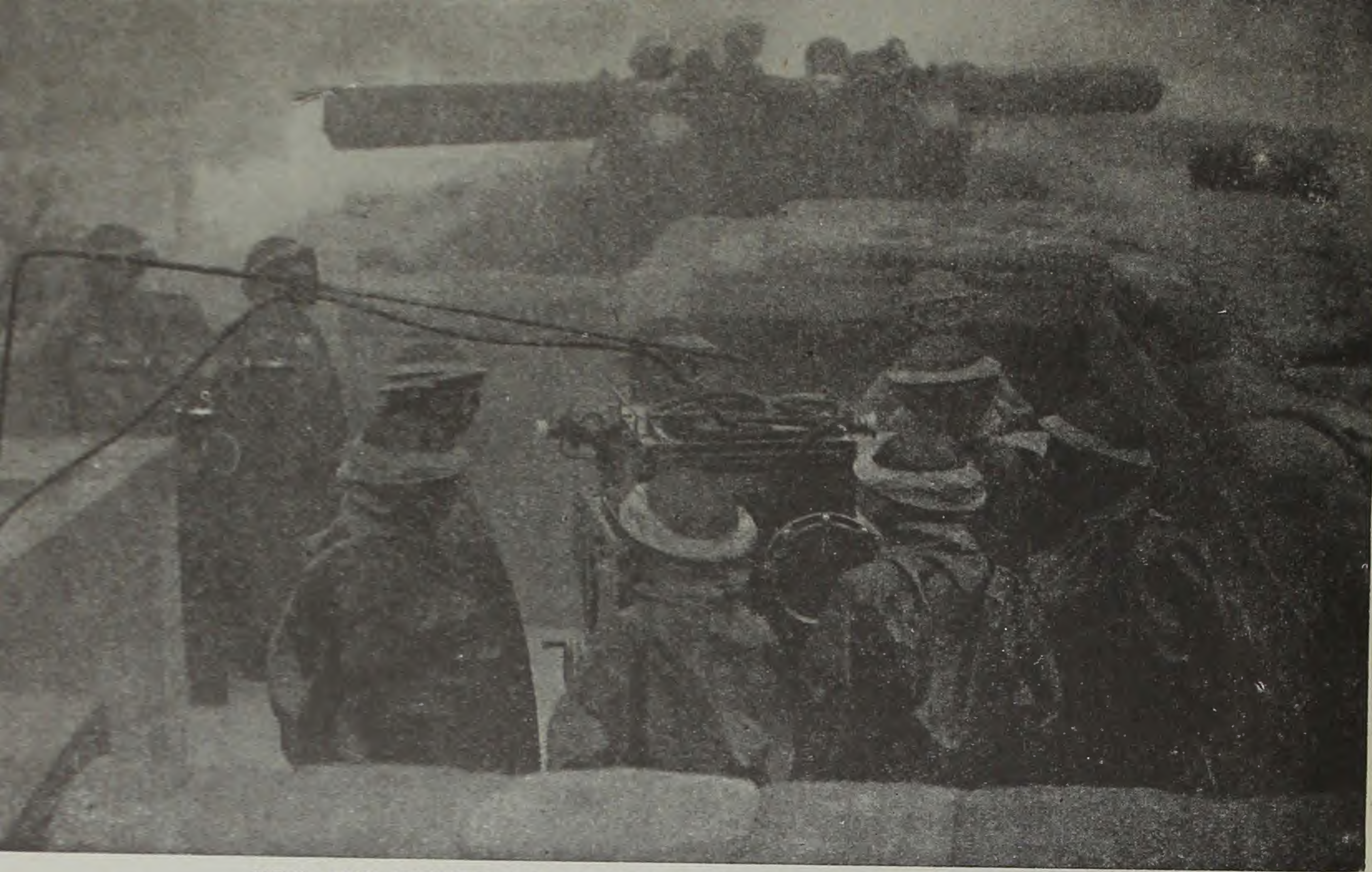
The crucial position of merchant ships in this general scheme is emphasized by three factors: (1) success in the U-boat blockade represented the Nazis' only hope of withstanding the mounting strength of the United Nations; (2) that strength could be coordinated and brought to bear where and when it would be most effective only by means of merchant ships; (3) in the immediate military sphere, merchant ships were vital to the sustenance of the Middle East armies, to the building up of forces



COLOGNE AFTER THE 1,000-BOMBER RAID OF MAY 30-31, 1942

Actually 1,130 R.A.F. bombers took part in this great attack, which lasted 95 minutes ; 44 machines were lost. Two thousand tons of bombs were dropped, and an area of 5,000 acres, including the heart of the great Rhine city, was left in ruins. The Cathedral escaped. Cologne is a great industrial and railway centre, with large chemical and engineering works, rubber plants and machine-tool shops.

Photo, British Official, Crown Copyright

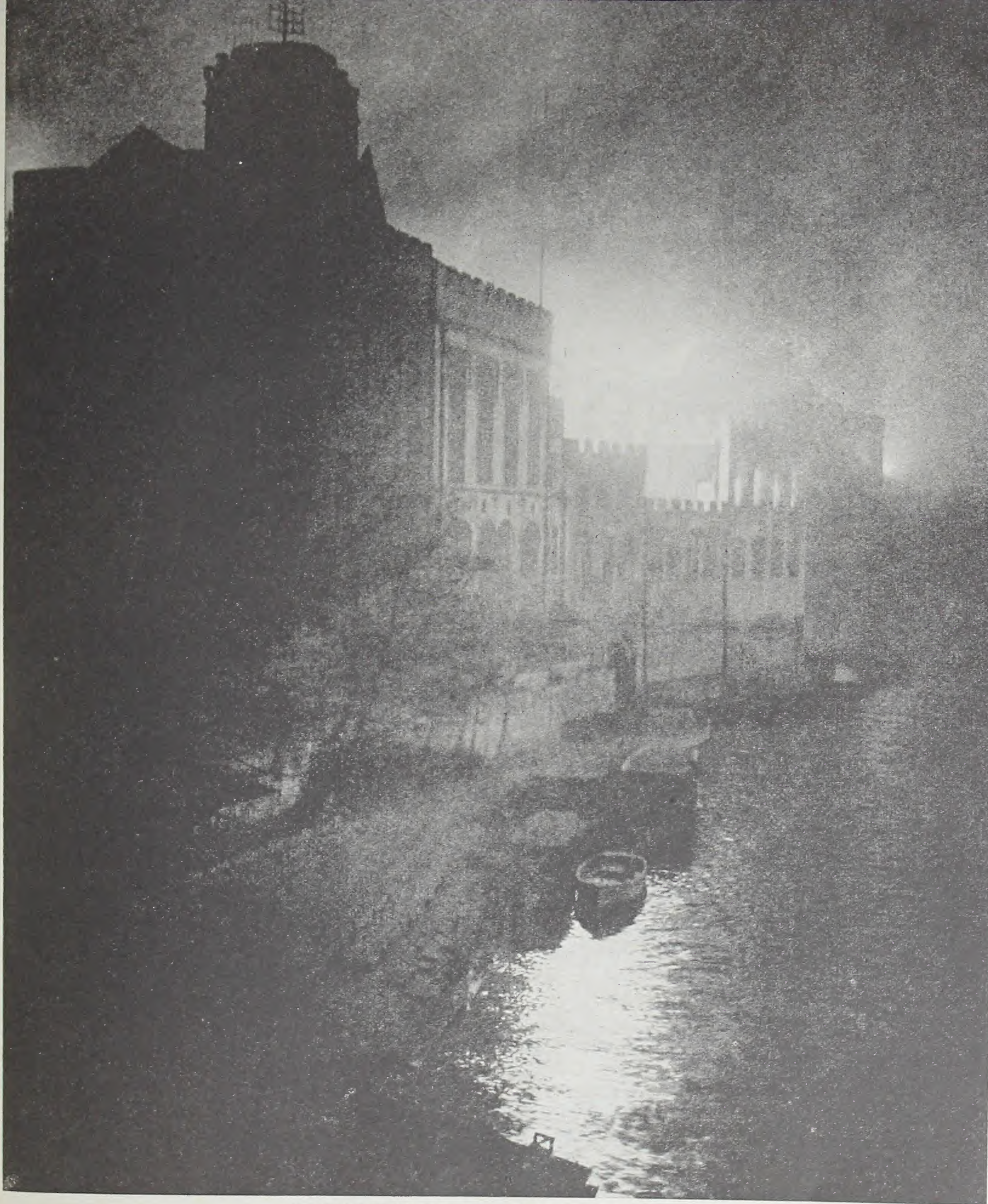


MEN AND WOMEN SHARE OUR ANTI-AIRCRAFT DEFENCE

Top, A.T.S. girls take part in a realistic exercise in which tear gas is used and all gas precautions are taken; here, muffled up in anti-gas clothing and masked, they are operating a predictor and range-finder. The first of the Mixed Batteries (men and women working together) went into operation at a gun site near London in the late summer of 1941. Below, one of London's powerful defence batteries on the alert.

Photos, Planet News; Fox

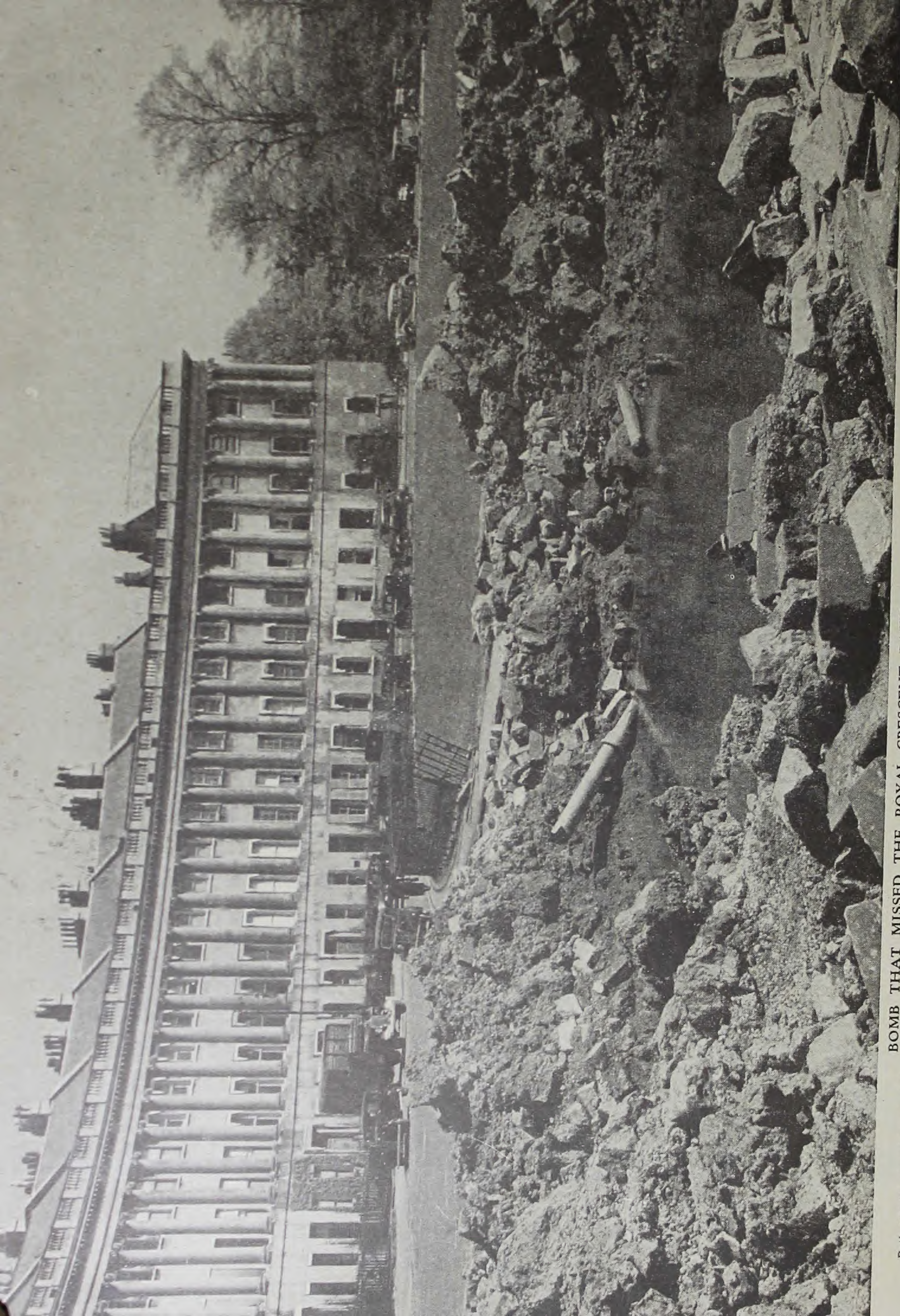




DESTRUCTION OF THE MEDIEVAL GUILDHALL AT YORK

York was attacked on the night of April 28-29 by 20 German bombers, five of which were destroyed. Only the four walls of the Gothic Guildhall were left after the fire which followed the bombing, here seen at its height. During the period April 24-29, 1942, Exeter, Bath (twice), Norwich and York had been bombed in what the Germans called reprisal raids. There was a heavy casualty list in April: 938 killed and 998 injured and detained in hospital.

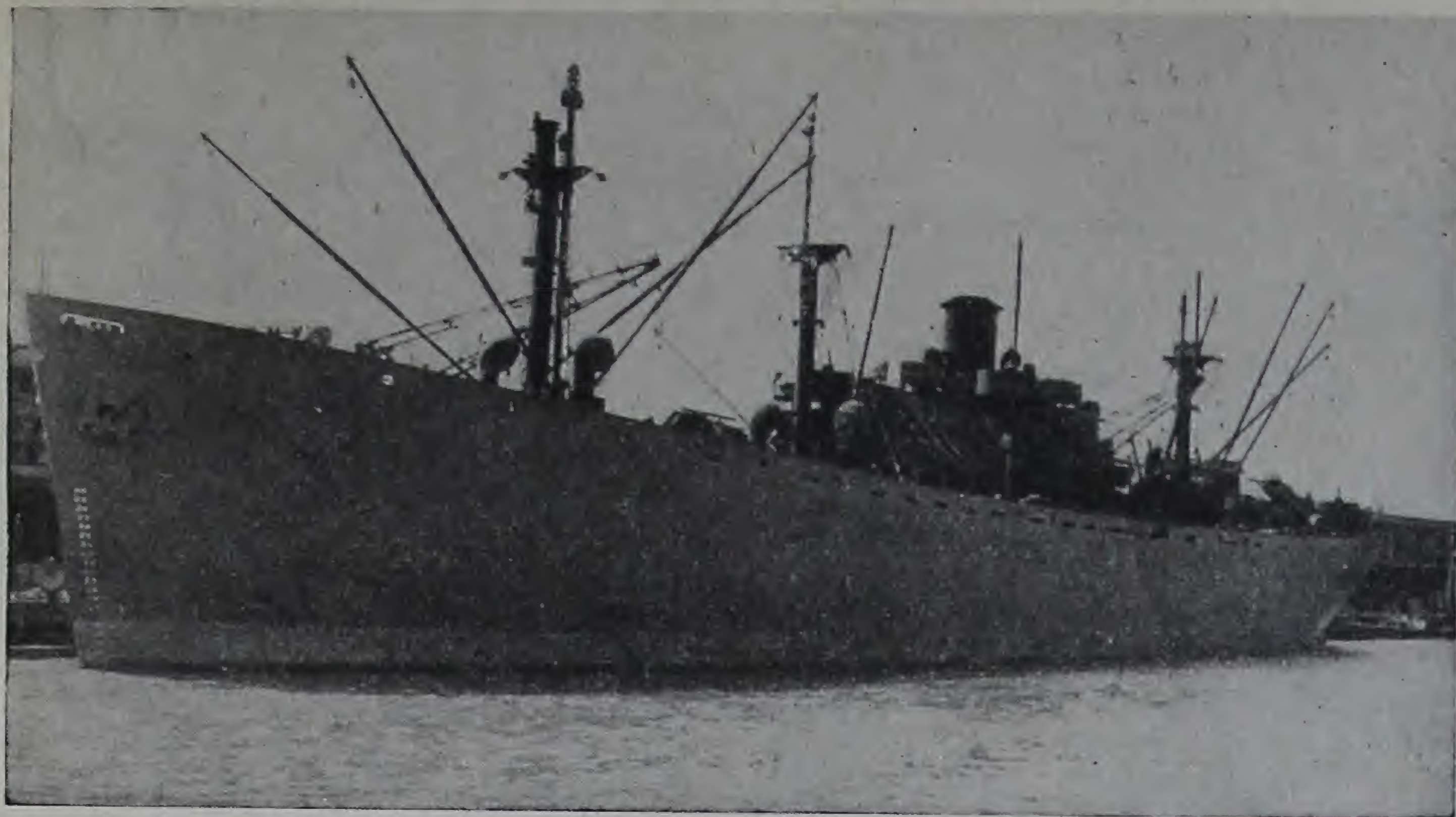
Photo, Keystone



BOMB THAT MISSED THE ROYAL CRESCENT, BATH

Bath was the second target of the so-called 'Baedeker' raids made by the Luftwaffe in 'reprisal' for R.A.F. raids on Luebeck and Rostock. Fifty German bombers were engaged on the night of April 25-26, 1942, and 30 the following night; five and three of the enemy were destroyed. The old Assembly Rooms (see illus., p. 2123) were burned down and nine churches were damaged, besides Bath Abbey. Other historic buildings also suffered.

Photo, Oswald Wild



AMERICAN MERCHANTMAN BRINGS SUPPLIES TO ALEXANDRIA

Besides new merchant ships built to British orders the U.S.A. constructed large numbers for her own use under the emergency programme to make up for losses sustained by submarine attack. Combined Boards decided the priorities for cargoes and destinations, just as other Boards adjusted production between the two countries, and a joint Middle East Supply Centre was established to reduce the demands on shipping still further. A new American freighter enters the port at Alexandria with supplies.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

in the Pacific theatre and to the maintenance of the supply routes to Russia, feeding the main fighting front. In short, in President Roosevelt's words, "the battle of production" was already on the way to being won; "the battle of distribution" was at a critical stage.

The answer also to these problems was threefold: to defeat the U-boat or blunt its power by stronger and more effective naval and other action; to increase the output of

Threefold Problem

new merchant shipping, which did not yet even equal the tonnage being

sunk; and to put each ton of existing shipping to the utmost effective use. Those were the three facets of a single task. The answers were sought in many ways subsidiary to the main sea struggle. At the beginning of March it was stated that Britain's food imports were to be reduced, and later the milling of white flour was prohibited. The introduction of the "national loaf"—in which a greater percentage of the milled grain was used, including parts formerly classed as offals—meant a saving of between 500,000 and 600,000 tons of cargo space annually.

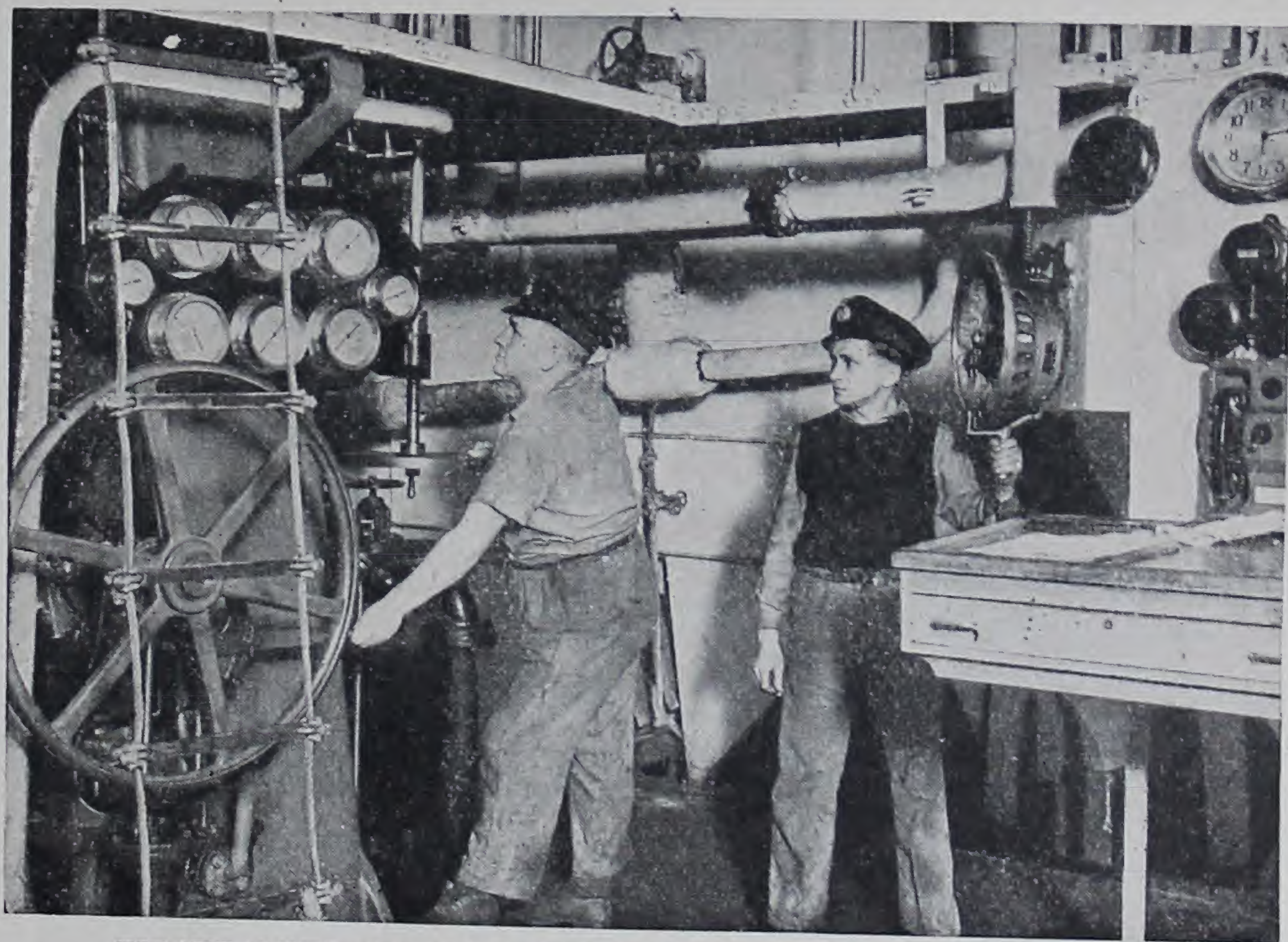
In other ways the demands on shipping were reduced. It was mainly with this end in view that, under the initiative of the Ministry of War Transport, there had been set up what was known as the "Middle East Supply Centre." Its task was to supply the civilian needs of 50 million people living in an area of 2,500,000 square miles, which included Egypt, Turkey, Palestine, Syria, Cyprus and half a dozen other territories formerly supplied largely by Mediterranean shipping. The aim was to make

the area as a whole as self-supporting as possible, and in every other way to reduce the demand on ships that were needed to bring troops and war weapons round the long Cape route to the desert army defending Egypt, the Suez Canal, and the strategic stronghold of the Middle East.

In the wider sphere were the problems of the integration of British and American resources, not only so as to obtain joint effort and avoid duplica-

tion, but to achieve the most effective joint use of available tonnage and to harmonize production programmes with the necessity of reducing demands on shipping. In January 1942, as a result of consultations between Mr. Churchill and President Roosevelt, "combined boards" were set up to deal with munitions, raw materials and shipping, with representatives in London and Washington. The Combined Shipping Adjustment Boards were designed to achieve, in principle, a pooling of shipping resources without, in fact, the creation of any such physical pool. By this means the margins of shipping on the various routes were dealt with in the most satisfactory manner from the point of view of economy in shipping as a whole. Even in the case of individual ships the work of the Boards came into play to see that by dove-tailing British imports and U.S. Army supplies on an Atlantic voyage, for instance, a ship would be most effectively loaded by weight as well as by space. The general plan of integration was carried a stage further in June with the setting up of a Combined Production and Resources Board and a Combined Food Board.

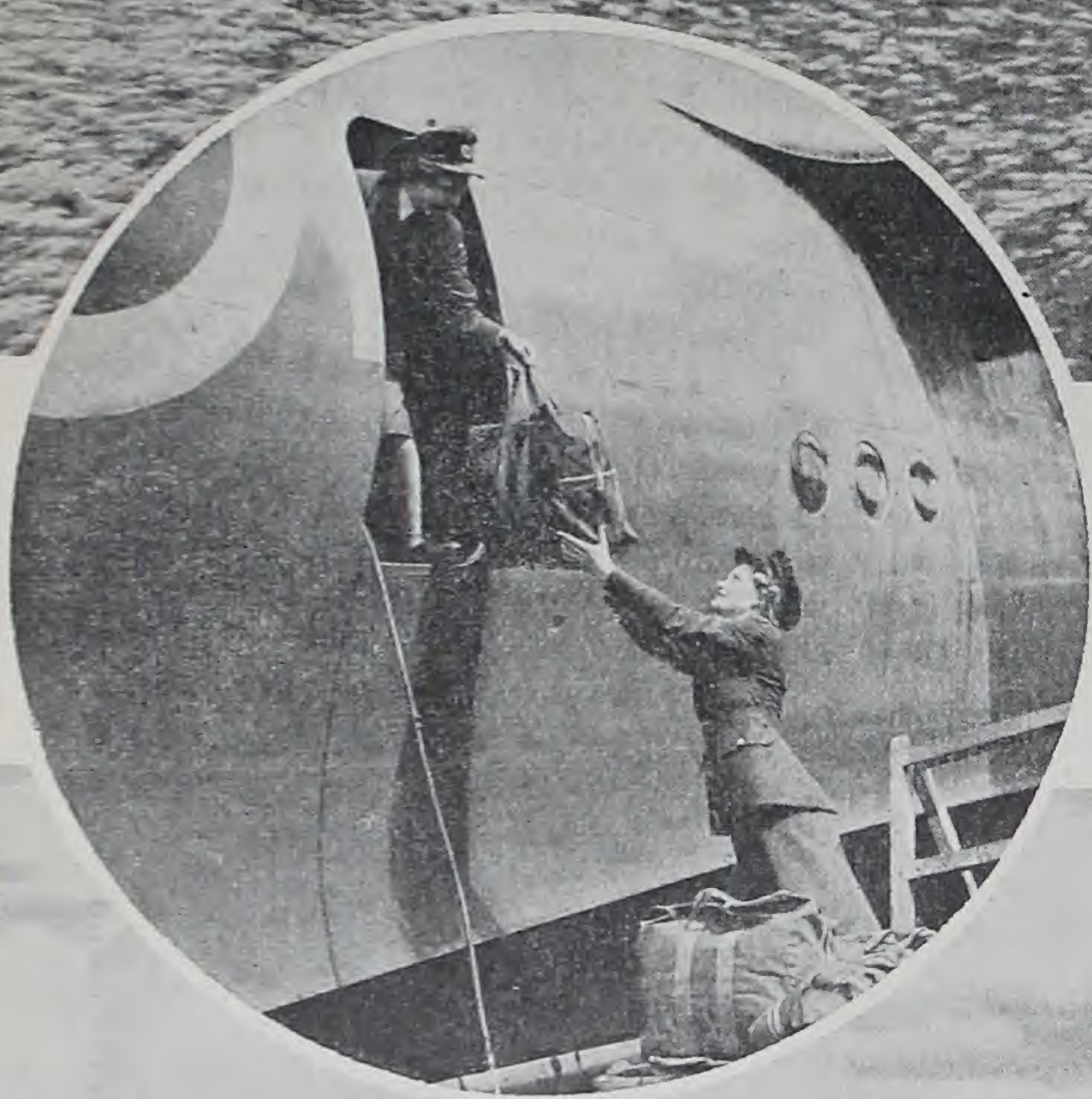
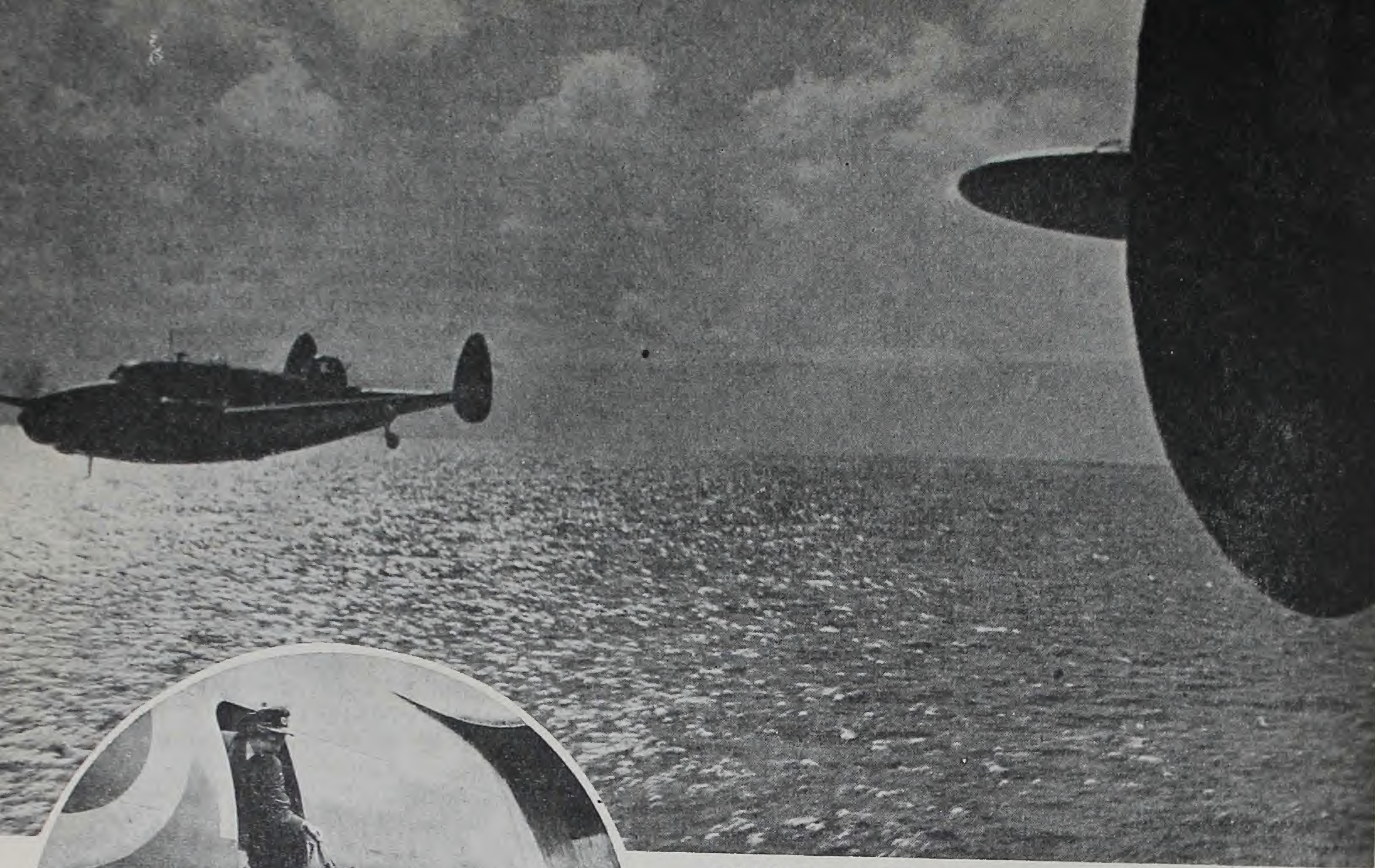
It was noted above that, besides achieving the most effective use of ships, the other parts of the threefold solution to the "battle of distribution" had to be sought in the blunting of the U-boat weapon and the stepping up of merchant ship production. As to the former,



FIRSTFRUITS OF GIGANTIC SHIPBUILDING PROGRAMME

America's shipbuilding target for 1942 was 8,000,000 tons deadweight. At the beginning of February there arrived in a British port the 'Ocean Vanguard,' built in the U.S.A. for Britain—first of many thousands of her kind to be turned out by mass production. Component portions were made in engineering yards all over the country, for assembly at the seaboard. The 2nd and 3rd Engineers are seen at the controls.

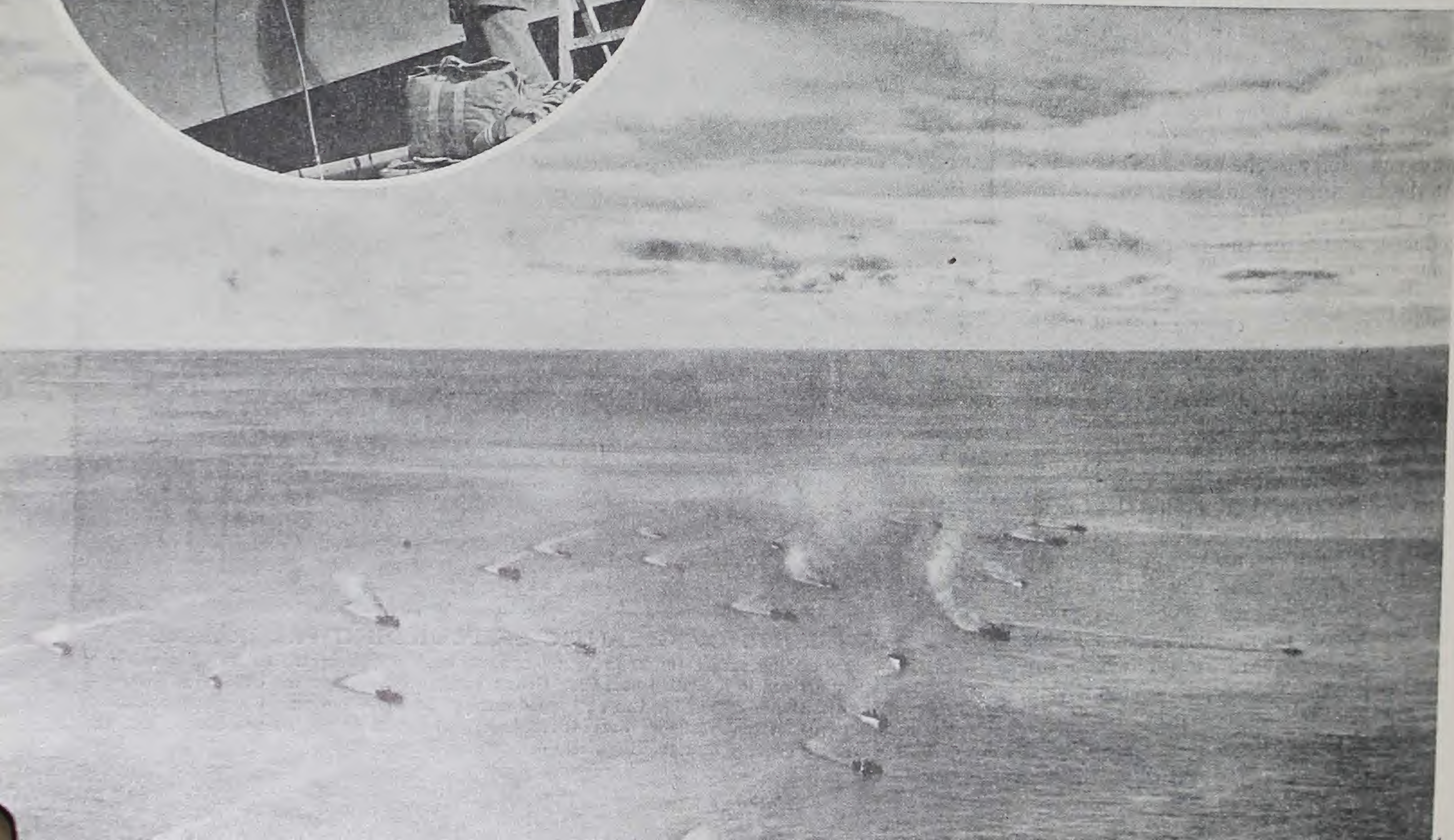
Photo, Keystone



COASTAL COMMAND'S VIGOROUS OFFENSIVE IN THE BATTLE OF THE ATLANTIC

During the year 1942 aircraft of Coastal Command flew more than 25,000,000 miles, mostly on anti-submarine patrols, which numbered 12,000. Three hundred attacks were made on U-boats, and over 4,000 on enemy shipping. Top, a Hudson of the Dover Squadron, R.C.A.F., flies low over the North Sea in search of enemy shipping. Below, seen from an escorting Flying Fortress, a convoy from America nears Britain. Inset, W.A.A.F.s of a Coastal Command ground crew load parachutes into a Sunderland flying-boat.

Photos, British Official : Crown Copyright ; Fox



there was no doubt that the chief hopes lay in stronger convoy escort and improved anti-U-boat measures. But the bombing of U-boat bases and shipyards was also a factor of considerable importance. St. Nazaire, Emden, Hamburg, and other places were frequent targets of increasingly heavy bombing raids aimed at reducing the enemy's power at sea. The Secretary of State for Air stated in March that 40 per cent of Bomber Command's total effort during the previous year had been expended on targets chosen by the Navy. There is little doubt that in 1942 that percentage was, if anything, increased. One of the most spectacular raids of the war, the daylight bombing of Augsburg, 500 miles into Germany, was aimed at the M.A.N. works turning out Diesel engines for U-boats.

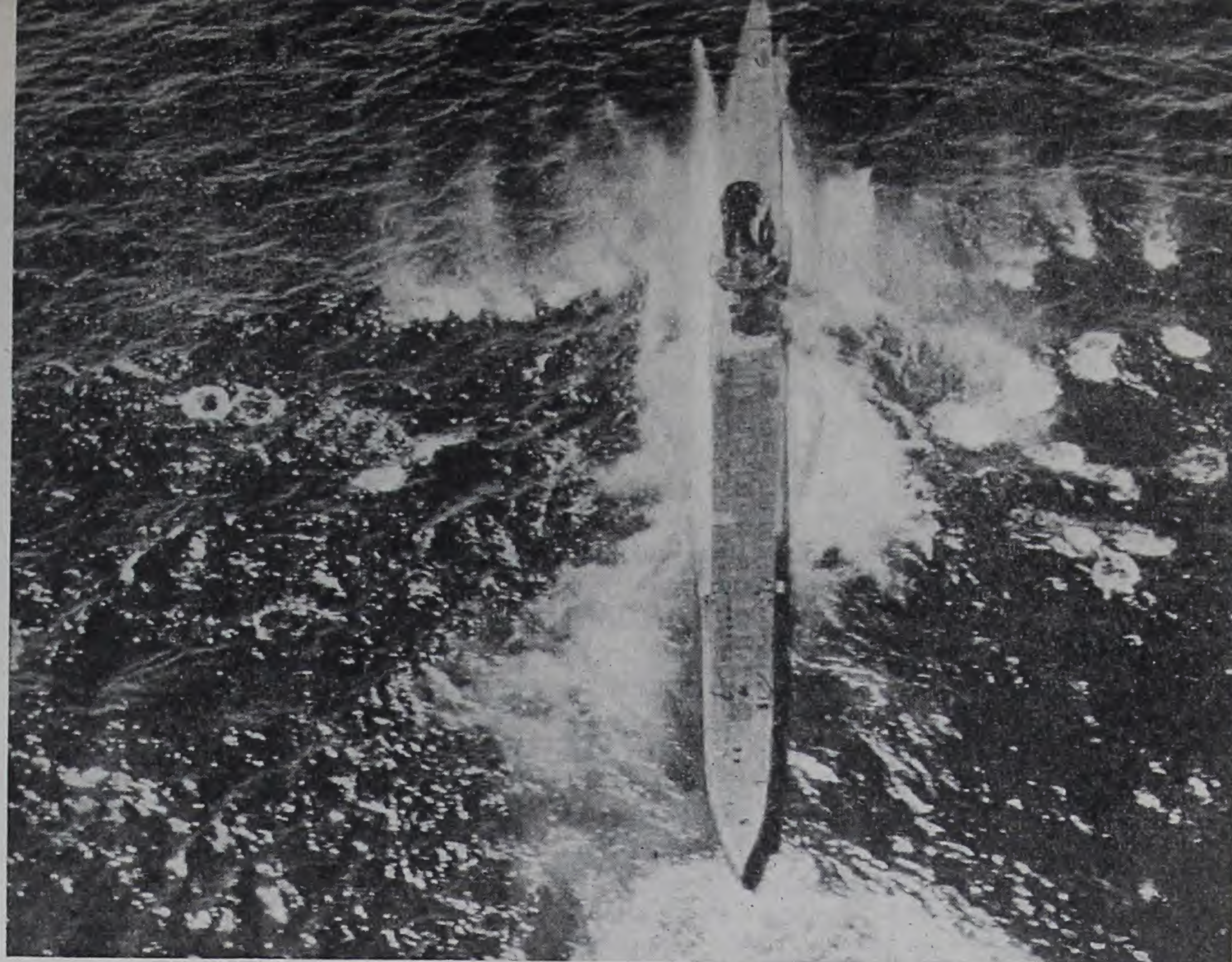
The first half of 1942 saw the huge American shipbuilding programme getting into its stride: 8,000,000 tons dead-weight—more than the total British,

Gigantic Shipbuilding Programme

Allied and neutral losses from September 1939 to the end of 1940—were promised for 1942. By

June considerably less than half this tonnage had been completed, but the momentum of the vast effort could be seen to be gathering. At the beginning of February there had arrived in a British port with her first cargo a ship more appropriately named, perhaps, than any other in history—the “Ocean Vanguard.” Built in America under British Admiralty auspices, she was indeed the vanguard of thousands of standardized “tramp” ships, mass-produced to form the backbone of the greatest industrial effort ever seen.

It was ships that sustained the United Nations during these months of accumulation of strength. But it was men who kept the ships at sea—seamen of many nationalities linked by common dangers and the qualities, in uncommon degree, of bravery and fortitude. They faced the hazards of weather—“an exceptionally rigorous winter,” in the words of Admiral Sir Percy Noble, Commander-in-Chief, Western Approaches. They faced the constant danger of the usually unseen torpedo and the deadly mine. They ran the gauntlet of seemingly incessant aerial attacks in convoys to Malta, convoys to Murmansk and Archangel; attacks pressed home with ruthless daring and aimed always at the merchant ships and the cargoes in their holds. Theirs was a glorious part; but it was also a grim one, more so than any other. For besides the lethal weapons of war were horrors of a more sinister kind—slow freezing in bitter northern waters, death



CAUGHT BY A SUNDERLAND IN BAY OF BISCAY

On its way to raid shipping in the Atlantic this U-boat was detected and bombed by a Sunderland flying boat of Coastal Command; the raider was forced to the surface, badly mauled. The Sunderland, its bombs gone, could only attack with its guns: the hail of fire which raked the enemy is shown by the bullet splashes around. Finally, the U-boat went down in a pool of oil, after firing with its deck gun.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

by starvation, suicidal madness, the lonely helplessness of a raft in mid-Atlantic. No efforts were spared by the authorities to improve lifesaving measures and, by every means, the chances of survival from a sunken ship wherever it might be. Improvements in equipment were constantly introduced; and much thought and experiment expended. But it is less than just to the men on whom so much depended to forget or ignore the part of their experiences that is far removed from the dash and glory of battle.

The story of the Norwegian cargo ship “Blink” is just one in dozens of similar “incidents” of the Atlantic Battle. She was torpedoed, and 17 of the men found themselves in one of the open boats. The sea was rough enough to wash the men overboard more than once. Ships passed without seeing the lifeboat. The men were 66 hours in that boat, and many went mad and threw themselves overboard, although sharks were close behind. “They would begin to talk confusedly of comfortable beds and hot coffee, and one by one they lost their reason,” said a survivor. Only six were saved. Such ordeals might be matters of hours, days, or weeks—the conditions were never the same, and it was on the conditions as much as anything that survival depended.

In one instance a seaman arrived in Australia after spending nearly two

months in an open lifeboat, the sole survivor of a ship torpedoed by a Japanese submarine on December 7, 1941. Another was 46 days on a raft. “Not a proper raft but just a float apparatus—lashed boards 5 ft. square”—was the home

Forty-six Days On a Raft

of seaman Edward Gordon Elliott for 13 days in shark-infested waters under a scorching sun. There were more than one clinging to this affair to begin with. The sharks “kept swimming round us for days, waiting for us, trying to sweep us off with their tails, diving underneath the float and trying to bump us off.” They had no food, “but thirst was worst of all. It was a terrible strain to keep myself from drinking sea water—to keep myself from taking just a drop to rinse my mouth with.”

Seamen sometimes “got their own back” with the guns of their ship. Occasionally a merchant ship succeeded in ramming a submarine. One of the many remarkable exploits against a U-boat was the action by the naval trawler “Lady Shirley,” the loss of which was announced in January (*see p. 1899*).

It was on January 31 that one U-boat excelled herself. That evening a report was received in the Admiralty that the Royal Mail steamer “Brittany” had been torpedoed 450 miles north of the Azores. The “Brittany,” however, was known to be elsewhere. Shortly after,

the message was urgently repeated and the name of the ship was given as the "Spreewald," last heard of at Yokohama in August 1941. A search disclosed a patch of oil three miles wide. The "Spreewald"—a German ship—had sunk, the victim of a U-boat.

An exploit of a different character, demonstrating great courage and determination, came from northern waters.

Blockade Runners When Norway was invaded ships of the Norwegian merchant marine implicitly carried

out instructions from London, despite German orders feigning to come from Norwegian owners. But a number of Norwegian ships found themselves at Gothenburg, in Sweden, where a dispute arose as to their ownership. They had been chartered to Great Britain by the Norwegian Government, but Germany laid claim to the ownership. The Swedish authorities arrested the ships, and legal and diplomatic discussion followed. In March 1942, when the Supreme Court at Stockholm recognized the immunity claimed by the British Government, which refused to accept a summons to attend the Court, the arrest was repealed.

A month later the 10 or 11 ships involved, under cover of snow and fog, attempted to run the German blockade of the Skagerrak. The Germans, who had been waiting all the winter, discovered the unescorted convoy. The "Skytteren," a former White Star liner converted into a whale-oil factory ship,



MERCHANT NAVY FIREMEN LEARN NEW METHODS

At Firemen's Schools for the Merchant Navy at our principal ports men learnt how to stoke the boilers so that the ship's funnels did not belch forth the tell-tale smudge of smoke which might betray the whereabouts of a convoy to the enemy. Here, in a model stokehold, they feed in dummy fuel and are taught to reduce the smoke to the minimum.

Photo, "Daily Mirror"

and the "Buccaneer," a tanker, were sunk. Varying reports announced that two or three of the ships were scuttled by their crews, and it is known that two more ships returned to Swedish waters, where their English captains were arrested. Germany protested to the Swedish Government for allowing guns to be put aboard the ships, and accused

the British diplomatic representatives of being involved in the affair. The Ministry of Information in London described the courageous efforts as having been "partially successful."

About the same time a Norwegian coastal vessel was dramatically kidnapped and brought to England. A group of young Norwegians decided to seize a ship and navigate her across. They boarded the "Galtesund" as passengers at various ports of call, and when she left Flekkifjord they whipped out revolvers, seized the bridge and engine room, and forced the captain and crew to obey. As the ship failed to arrive at the next port of call it was announced she had met with an accident. She was spotted by R.A.F. planes, which sent a trawler to guide her through British minefields.

How the 'Galtesund' was Seized

As the first half of 1942 ended the scene was sombre. With the fall of Tobruk in Libya a threat to Allied maritime strategy in the Middle East was renewed. In the Far East Japan had been checked, but not defeated. In the Atlantic the U-boats still hunted with dangerous success. At the end of June Mr. Churchill returned from Washington, and a joint statement recorded: "Because of the wide extension of the war to all parts of the world, transportation of the fighting forces, together with the transportation of munitions of war and supplies, still constitutes the major problem of the United Nations."



VETERANS COME BACK TO HELP IN THE FIGHT

Retired master mariners, whose average age was 60, filled posts in the Trade Department of the Admiralty, where they helped in the war against U-boats. With expert knowledge of conditions in the Seven Seas they plotted the position of raiders as reports came in, and directed shipping so that the U-boats could be circumvented.

Photo, "Daily Mirror"

Diary of the War

MARCH and APRIL, 1942

March 1, 1942. Russian offensive in Kerch peninsula and N. of Sevastopol. Japanese land on Mindanao.

March 2. General Sir Archibald Wavell reassumes command, India and Burma.

March 3. Japanese transports in Subic Bay attacked by General MacArthur's air forces. General Wavell meets Chiang Kai-shek at Lashio, Burma. R.A.F. bombs French factories and shipyards in daylight; attacks the Renault works near Paris at night.

March 4. Lt.-Gen. H. ter Poorten apptd. C-in-C. Allied land forces, and Rear-Adm. J. J. A. van Staveren, C-in-C. naval forces in S.W. Pacific. Japanese reach west bank of Sittang river.

March 5. Dutch evacuate Batavia; Governor of Burma leaves Rangoon; General Sir H. R. L. G. Alexander apptd. G.O.C. Burma. Air Marshal Sir R. Peirse apptd. A.O.C.-in-C. India. In Britain National Service Acts extended to men of 41-45.

March 7. Rangoon evacuated.

March 8. Big Japanese landings at Salamaua and Lae (New Guinea).

March 9. Surrender of Java; Japanese occupy Bandung and Surabaya. Anglo-Greek Agreement for employment of Greek armed forces. Adm. H. Stark apptd. to command U.S. Naval forces in Europe. German battleship "Tirpitz" attacked by our naval aircraft after leaving Trondheim.

March 10. Japanese land at Buka (Solomons); enemy shipping in Salamaua harbour bombed by Allied aircraft. Chiang Kai-shek appts. Lieut.-General Stillwell (U.S. Army) to command Chinese armies in Burma. Mr. Eden tells Parliament of atrocities at Hongkong.

March 12. British garrison withdrawn from Andamans. Mr. Oliver Lyttelton apptd. Min. of Production.

March 14. Gen. Sir H. Pownall apptd. to Ceylon Command.

March 15. Vice-Admiral Sir Geoffrey Layton apptd. C-in-C. Ceylon. Hitler speaks at the Zeughaus, Berlin.

March 17. General Douglas MacArthur, in Australia, takes up Allied Command; in Philippines Maj-Gen. Jonathan Wainwright takes over. Battle for Kharkov; Germans encircled at Staraya Russa.

March 18. Successful Allied air attack on Japanese shipping, etc. in New Guinea.

March 19. Mr. R. G. Casey apptd. Min. of State in Cairo and member British War Cabinet.

March 20. Eighth Army units raid Rommel's lines at Tmimi. Chinese-Iraqian Treaty of Friendship.

March 22. Three-day naval action in Mediterranean: small squadron under Rear-Adm. Vian fights off strong enemy force attacking convoy to Malta. Loss of British submarine P-38 announced.

March 23. Japanese occupy Andamans. British submarines sink two Italian submarines in Mediterranean. Sir

Stafford Cripps arrives at Delhi with H.M. Govt.'s proposals for Indian settlement.

March 24. Corregidor heavily bombed. Formation of British Army Air Corps.

March 25. Sir Stafford Cripps meets Congress Party and Moslem leaders.

March 26. Three-day air attack on Corregidor begins.

March 27. General Blamey apptd. C-in-C. Allied land forces in Australia; Pres. Quezon reaches Australia from Philippines. Sir Stafford Cripps meets Mr. Gandhi. At night, combined force of Navy, Army and R.A.F. attack Nazi submarine base at St. Nazaire; H.M.S. "Campbeltown," laden with explosives, rams dock gates and is then blown up.

March 28. At night, heavy R.A.F. raid on Lübeck.

March 29. British Govt.'s proposals for Indian settlement published. Allied convoy en route to Murmansk attacked by German naval force, which is dispersed by the escort.

March 30. H.M. the King broadcasts. Loss of H.M. cruiser "Naiad" announced. Pacific War Council set up in Washington. Sir Stafford Cripps broadcasts to the peoples of India.

March 31. Treaty of Amity between China and Turkey.

April 1, 1942. Japanese begin heavy assault on Bataan positions. Chinese forces withdraw from Toungoo after a week's heroic resistance. Heavy Japanese attack at Prome. At night R.A.F. bombs Matford works at Poissy.

April 2. Indian Congress Party replies to British proposals. At night, R.A.F. again raids Poissy.

April 3. Japanese bomb Mandalay. American bombers raid Rangoon and Andamans from Indian bases. Loss of H.M. destroyer "Heythrop" announced.

April 5. Japanese bomb Colombo, losing 27 aircraft. At night, R.A.F. bombs Cologne and Rhineland; also Gennevilliers works, near Paris.

April 6. Attack on Bataan positions grows fiercer. Japanese land on Bougainville (Solomons); they bomb ports in Madras Presidency.

April 7. British reply to Congress Party's counter-proposals for Indian settlement. Adm. Helfrich apptd. C-in-C. Dutch and N.E.I. forces in Far East. Loss of H.M. destroyer "Havock" and submarine "Tempest" announced.

April 9. Surrender of Wainwright's forces on Bataan; Wainwright goes to Corregidor. Japanese bomb Trincomalee, losing 21 aircraft; H.M. cruisers "Dorsetshire" and "Cornwall" and the aircraft carrier "Hermes" sunk in Indian Ocean by enemy aircraft. British submarine sinks Italian cruiser in Mediterranean.

April 10. Breakdown of Indian negotiations: Congress Party rejects British proposals. Japanese land on Cebu and on Billiton Island.

April 11. New Cabinet in Bulgaria under Filoff as Premier and Foreign Minister.

April 12. Heavy bombing and shelling of Corregidor. In Burma, enemy resumes offensive N. of Toungoo; British withdraw. Iran breaks off relations with Japan. R.A.F. bombers raid Genoa and Turin.

April 13. Thirteen American bombers raid the Philippines from Australian bases. Apptmt. of Lord Louis Mountbatten as Chief of Combined Operations announced, dating from March 18. Adm. Somerville apptd. C-in-C. Eastern fleet.

April 14. Pierre Laval becomes chief of Vichy Govt. R.A.F., in a raid on Port Blair (Andamans), destroys 13 Japanese flying boats.

April 15. British forces in Burma retire to new positions on Irrawaddy. At night, R.A.F. bombers attack St. Nazaire.

April 16. More Japanese land in Panay. George Cross awarded to Malta.

April 17. Oilfields at Yenangyaung destroyed by British forces as they withdraw. Lancaster bombers attack Augsburg in daylight; seven out of twelve lost in the operation.

April 18. American medium bombers, led by Maj.-Gen Doolittle, raid Tokyo, Osaka, Kobe, Yokohama and Nagoya, taking off from U.S. aircraft carrier "Hornet" when 800 miles from Japan. Von Leeb removed from command on Leningrad front. Free French submarine "Surcouf" announced lost. Enemy submarines shell Curacao. Pétain appoints Admiral Darlan as his successor, and also as Chief of Armed forces.

April 21. General Giraud escapes from fortress at Königstein to Switzerland.

April 22. Loss of H.M.A.S. "Vampire" (destroyer) announced. Reconnaissance raid on Boulogne by Combined Operations force. Announced that American forces are in India.

April 23. New Zealand included in new U.S. Naval command. South African Govt. breaks off relations with Vichy. R.A.F. delivers first of four successive heavy night attacks on Rostock.

April 24. German night raid on Exeter, first of a series of reprisal bombings ("Baedeker" raids) of Cathedral cities.

April 25. Loss of H.M. destroyer "Southwold" announced. Night raid on Bath. R.A.F. bombs Skoda works at Pilsen.

April 26. After a speech to the Reichstag, Hitler is given powers of supreme law lord, overriding the judiciary. Another raid on Bath.

April 27. Night raid on Norwich.

April 28. Sir Stafford Cripps reports to Parliament on his Indian mission. Night raid on York. R.A.F. attacks Kiel ("Scharnhorst" there).

April 29. Japanese capture Lashio. Switzerland instead of Argentina to protect interests of Allies in Japan. Hitler and Mussolini meet at Salzburg.

April 30. H.M.S. "Edinburgh" damaged by U-boat in Arctic (sunk in later attack on May 2).



BLACK-OUT IN NEW YORK

The two larger photographs were taken early in 1942 from the Radio Corporation of America Building, looking south. Top, time 9.29 p.m., just before a test black-out; below, at 9.30 p.m.; the glow in background, against which the Empire State Building is dimly silhouetted, came from an area not included in the black-out. Right, air-raid precaution notice on a lamp-post in Fifth Avenue.

Photos, Fox; "New York Times" Photos



SIX MONTHS OF GIGANTIC EFFORT IN THE UNITED STATES

In this Chapter, covering the first half of 1942, the story of America's war effort is told by Spencer Brodney, Editor of 'Current History' (New York). The reactions of the people to the crippling disasters of December 1941 and the following months are described—the enormous programme for war construction; the building up of the armed forces; the gradual and all-compelling marshalling of American opinion behind the President

THE United States was organizing for war—was, in fact, already in the war—well before Japan struck the first blow on December 7, 1941. The outbreak of the conflict in Europe more than two years before had made many Americans, and none more than President Roosevelt, feel that they would inevitably become involved. A vast defence programme had been launched and was being steadily expanded in spite of strong opposition from the various anti-interventionist and anti-war sections of the community. Thus it happened that, although Pearl Harbour came as a shock which for the moment left the nation breathless, it did not by any means find America having to start from scratch in organizing for the struggle.

Primarily America could contribute to the war effort of the United Nations by throwing the full weight of her industrial power into the scales, but the United States Government never intended to be content with only providing weapons and supplies. It meant to take as big a hand in the actual fighting as any other nation waging war on the Axis, and to be one of the chief artificers of the victory on which the future peace of the world should be built. Hence it was inevitable that America should have a part in planning the grand strategy of the war commensurate with her contribution to the common cause.

This immediately gave rise to the question of the High Command and the necessity for the most effective coordination of the plans of the

Changes in High Command British and American war leaders in particular. First of all,

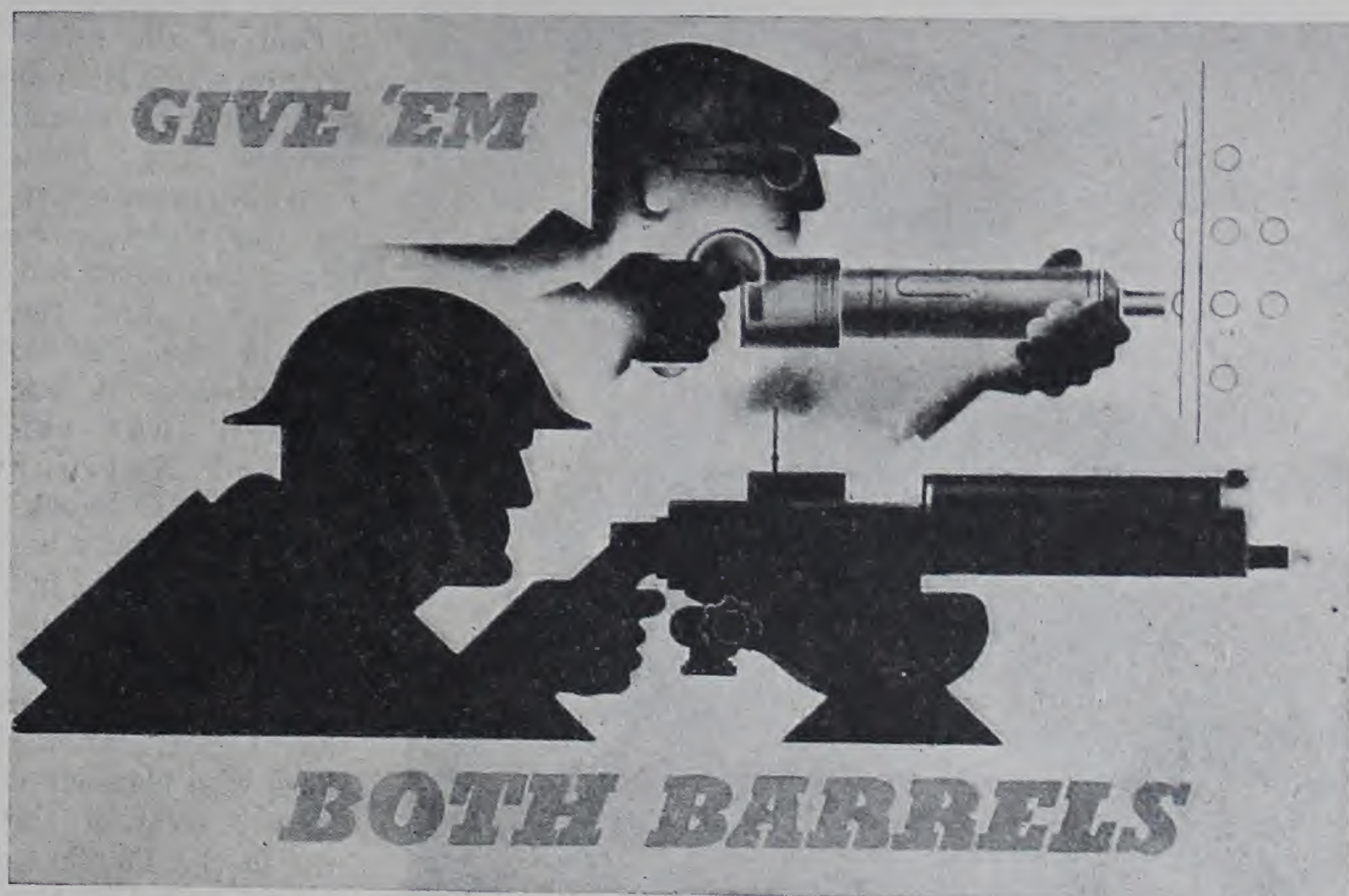
changes were made in the American command as a result of the disaster at Pearl Harbour. On December 17, 1941, it was announced that Admiral H. Kimmel, Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Fleet, Lieut.-General W. Short, Commander of the Hawaiian Department of the United States Army, and Major-General F. Martin, Commander of the Army Air Corps in Hawaii, had been removed from active duty. This cleared the way for the appointment

on December 20 of Admiral Ernest J. King as Commander-in-Chief of the United States Fleet and for his being subsequently given complete authority over all naval operations. Similar authority was conferred on Major-General Dwight D. Eisenhower in the European theatre of operations. (He was made Lieut.-General on July 7, 1942.)

More important than these purely internal changes were those resulting from Mr. Winston Churchill's visit to President Roosevelt soon after the Pearl Harbour catastrophe. The first notable step towards a combined war effort was taken on New Year's Day, 1942, when representatives of 26 countries at Washington signed the United Nations' Pact (see p. 1967) with its pledge to use all resources for the overthrow of the Axis, and not to make a separate armistice or peace. One of the first practical results of the conference was the selection of General Sir Archibald Wavell to head a unified command in the Pacific war, and the establishment

of a liaison in Washington to coordinate the United Nations' war effort in the Pacific area. A further result was that when General Douglas MacArthur escaped from Bataan to Australia he was put in command not only of the American forces but of all United Nations forces in the south-west Pacific.

The original Pacific Council in Washington did not include all the British Dominions nor the Netherlands Government-in-exile, which, with Great Britain and the Dominions, worked together through another Council in London. Late in March, after a conference of representatives of the United Nations (at which Dr. Herbert V. Evatt, Australian Minister of External Affairs, was prominent), a new Pacific Council was set up in Washington, the members including Great Britain, the United States, Australia, New Zealand, the Netherlands East Indies, Canada and China. Its purpose was to discuss the political ramifications of the war effort to the end, as President Roosevelt put



SYMBOLIZING THE SWITCH-OVER TO WAR PRODUCTION

One of a series put out by the American Office for Emergency Management, this poster by Jean Carlu emphasizes the dual demand of the assembly line and the firing line. At the top a mechanic operates a pneumatic riveter on steelwork; beneath, a machine-gunner is shown. Behind the firing line a huge industrial army was built up to supply it.

Photo, Wide World Photos

it, of assuring "the complete cooperation and understanding of all the nations concerned." The Pacific Council in London kept in close touch with this new body. Here, as in so many other directions, America was striving to make the "United Nations" mean all that the name implied. Vital as was the military and political cooperation that had been initiated, it would have been incomplete without machinery for economic collaboration between the United Nations. Foremost among the organizations created for this latter purpose were the joint economic boards set up in January 1942 by Great Britain and the United States to pool and distribute shipping, munitions and raw materials.

The Lease-Lend Act, which had become law on March 11, 1941, played an ever more important part in the American effort to increase and consolidate the fighting strength of the United Nations. By May 31, 1942, aid from this source had already amounted to \$4,500,000,000 and was rising to an estimated annual rate of \$8,000,000,000. War materials accounted for more than half the figure, but manufactured goods and food-stuffs were also being sent abroad in large quantities. After negotiations for more than six months Great Britain and the United States, on February 23, 1942, signed a treaty implementing the original lease-lend programme and

Lease-Lend :
4½ Billion Dollars

had already amounted to \$4,500,000,000 and was rising to an estimated annual rate of \$8,000,000,000. War materials accounted for more than half the figure, but manufactured goods and food-stuffs were also being sent abroad in large quantities. After negotiations for more than six months Great Britain and the United States, on February 23, 1942, signed a treaty implementing the original lease-lend programme and



LT.-GEN. DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

On June 25, 1942, he was designated Commanding General, U.S. forces in the European theatre of war, with H.Q. in London. Earlier he had been Chief of War Plans Division, U.S. War Dept. General Staff, and from April 1942 Asst. Chief of Staff in charge of Operations Division, Office of Chief of Staff, Washington.

Photo, Topical Press

providing for reciprocity wherever possible. One consequence of this was that, as American troops moved overseas, British and also Australian aid was afforded on an ever-increasing scale. The Lease-Lend Pact opened the way for "all other countries of like mind" to enter into similar arrangements.

One of the questions on which Britain and America might perhaps not have been able to see eye to eye was the relative importance of the war in Europe and the war in the Pacific. Nevertheless, it was agreed that the United Nations should aim at knocking out Germany before turning in full force against Japan. To this there was some opposition in the U.S.A. among those who clamoured against treating the war in the Pacific as a "side-show." But it was obvious that America could not wage war on an equally large scale on both sides of the

world, and that the most that could be done until Germany was defeated would be to keep open the trans-Pacific lines of communication and to hold the enemy in the South-West Pacific so that Australia would be safe from invasion.

Another important question of grand strategy that America strove to prevent from causing friction concerned Russia. Premier Stalin's insistence on a Second Front in Europe was regarded by most Americans as necessary for the speedy defeat of Germany; but in certain influential quarters the old fear of Bolshevism was still alive and was said to be obstructing the wholehearted aid that Russia so urgently needed. When, however, Molotov (Soviet Foreign Commissar) visited Washington late in May, President Roosevelt took the occasion to strengthen Russo-American relations. The most definite result of Molotov's stay in America was the signing of a master Lease-Lend Pact, similar to that between Britain and America.

Its main purpose was to increase and speed up deliveries to Russia despite the added demands on American production and the dangers that lurked along the sea lanes. American aid had already been by no means inconsiderable, and now there was the assurance that it would be greater and more effective. As for a

Second Front, the White House announced that during Molotov's visit a full understanding had been reached on the "urgent tasks of creating a Second Front in Europe in 1942." To judge by the discussion that followed, these words were not quite so clear as they seemed, for it was argued that the understanding did not refer to the actual opening of a Second Front, but to the "urgent tasks" that would yet have to be carried out before a Second Front could be opened in 1942. The general trend of opinion seemed to be definitely toward regarding Russia as one of the Great Powers that were destined to play an important part in the post-war world, and with which it would be advisable to prepare to work and live. This fact was recognized in the provision in the new Russo-American Agreement for post-war cooperation.

American organization for war during the first six months of 1942 was determined primarily by the immediate demand of defeating the Axis powers, but it was obvious that many of the measures adopted to this end were at the same time shaped by the gradually developing idea of the part that America should play in the Peace settlement. Many Americans, for instance,



ADMIRAL ERNEST J. KING, U.S. NAVY

He was appointed C.-in-C. of the U.S. Fleet on December 20, 1941, and three months later placed in control of all U.S. naval operations. His wide experience included command of a submarine division, of the aircraft carrier 'Lexington,' of aircraft battle craft, and of a patrol force.

Photo, "March of Time"



NEW PACIFIC WAR COUNCIL

The first meeting was held on April 1, 1942, at the White House, Washington, Mr. Roosevelt presiding. Left to right, around the table: T. V. Soong (China); Walter Nash (New Zealand); Dr. Herbert V. Evatt (Australian Minister of External Affairs); Lord Halifax (British Ambassador to Washington); President Roosevelt; Hume Wrong (Canada); Alexander Loudon (Netherlands); Harry Hopkins (President Roosevelt's adviser). The purpose of the Council was to discuss the political aspects of the war effort so as to assure complete cooperation and understanding.

Photo, Keystone

looked upon the United Nations' Pact as intended not only to produce a cohesive programme for fighting the war, but also as the nucleus of a world organization for peace and security that might either replace the League of Nations or pave the way to its revival and reconstitution on a sounder basis. In any case, the widespread discussion of Peace plans assumed practically without exception that Isolationism was extinct and that the United States would occupy a commanding position in the post-war world.

Not until the full reality of war broke upon the people did the mighty industrial giant that is America wake up with a roar that reverberated through the factories and workshops, the mills and the mines spread over its three million square miles of territory. Then came such startling changes as the country had never before witnessed—changes that no American dreamed were possible, even as it became increasingly certain that war lay ahead and that everyone would have to share in the storm and stress. Of these changes none was more impressive than the way in which the production machine was swung over from peacetime needs to the

**Mighty
Industrial
Spurt**

(2) Each Government pledges itself to cooperate with the Governments signatory hereto and not to make a separate armistice or peace with the enemies.

The foregoing declaration may be adhered to by other nations which are, or which may be, rendering material assistance and contributions in the struggle for victory over Hitlerism.

*Done at Washington
January First 1942*

*The United States of America
by Franklin D. Roosevelt*

*The United Kingdom of Great Britain
& Northern Ireland
by Winston Churchill*

*on behalf of the governments
of the Union of Soviet Socialist
Republics*

by Joseph Stalin

*National Government of the Republic of China
by Chiang Kai-shek*

*The Commonwealth of Australia
by H. G. Menzies*

*The Kingdom of Belgium
by King Leopold III*

*Canada
by Lester B. Pearson*

DECLARATION OF TWENTY-SIX UNITED NATIONS

Representatives of 26 countries met in Washington at the end of December 1941, and after conferences a joint declaration was signed on New Year's Day, 1942, pledging them to employ their full resources against the members of the Tripartite Axis Pact and its adherents (see p. 1967). The second page of the Declaration, with some of the signatures, is here shown.

Photo, "New York Times" Photos



VISIT WHICH STRENGTHENED RUSSO-AMERICAN RELATIONS

Towards the end of May 1942 Mr. Molotov, the Soviet Foreign Commissar, went to Washington, where he signed a master Lease-Lend Agreement for his country and discussed with President Roosevelt the opening of a second front in Europe. (Left to right) Admiral King, Mr. Cordell Hull (Secretary of State), General Marshall, Mr. Molotov, Mr. Litvinov (Soviet Ambassador)—in front of the Russian bomber in which the visitor flew back to Moscow.

Photo, Paul Popper

arming and equipping of the millions of fighting men that it was unhesitatingly resolved should be thrown into the breach. This required that many more millions of people should be mobilized to provide weapons and supplies for America's armed forces, as well as for the United Nations which had already been receiving aid all over the world. On December 7, 1941, about 55,000,000 persons were gainfully employed in the United States; within six months the number rose to 59,000,000—about 40 per cent of the total population. Of that number over 10,000,000 were directly engaged in war work and many more were producing materials needed by America's allies abroad.

Some observers who followed day by day the steps by which the American war economy was brought into being

could not help getting the impression that America was muddling through. Yet the wrangling and friction that furnished the theme of endless newspaper stories merely reflected the necessary and not at all excessive discussion of ways and means that in a democracy should attend any vast enterprise. Actually, when one looks back, the remarkable thing is how smoothly and rapidly everything fell into place. This is proved by the enormous increase that soon began in the production of weapons and the innumerable items of war materials and supplies.

When President Roosevelt announced to Congress on January 6, 1942, his production programme for the year, the world, and particularly the United States, wondered whether it would be possible for the nation to turn out



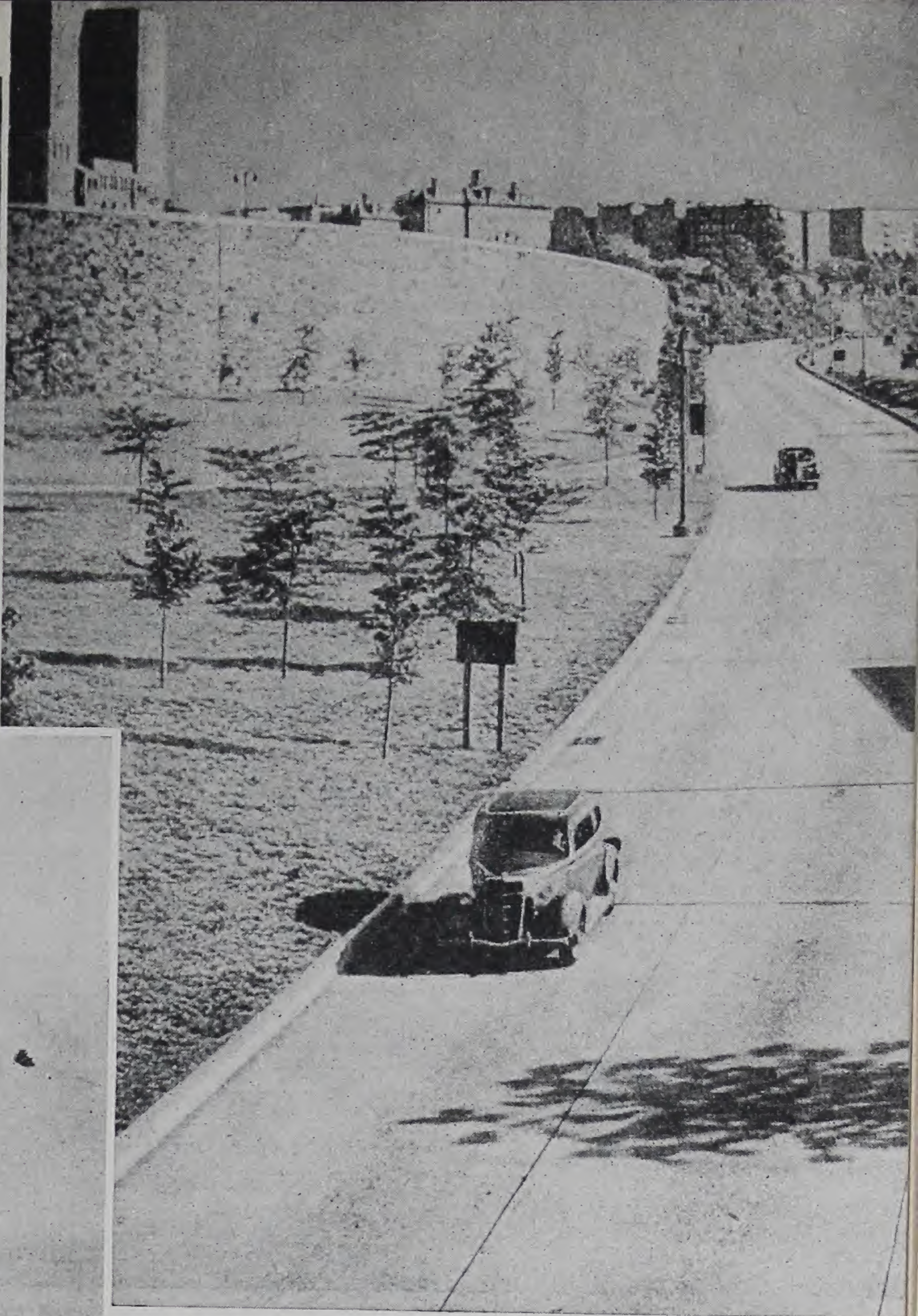
BRITISH AND AMERICAN PRODUCTION CHIEFS

In June 1942 Mr. Oliver Lyttelton visited Washington to confer with his 'opposite number,' Mr. Donald M. Nelson, Chairman of the War Production Board of the U.S.A., seen here (left) lighting Mr. Lyttelton's cigarette. On March 12 Mr. Lyttelton had been appointed Minister of Production, with chief responsibility for British war production as a whole.

Photo, Keystone

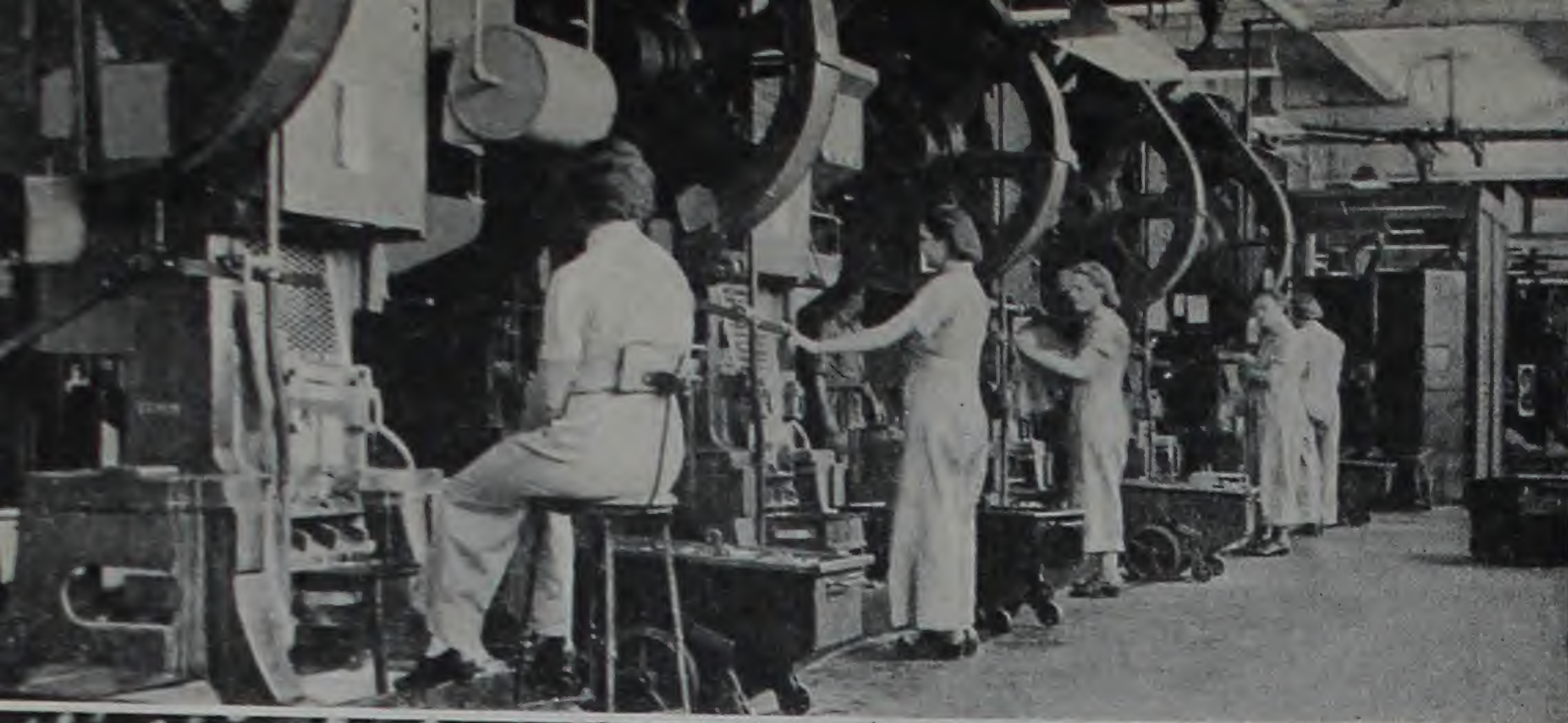
60,000 warplanes, 45,000 tanks, 20,000 anti-aircraft guns, and 8,000,000 tons of shipping within twelve months. Although some items on the list were reduced because of the need to increase others, on the whole the programme was well under way within six months. In short, even in these first months America was magnificently living up to the pledge it had given to become "the Arsenal of Democracy." Without this vast production, it is highly improbable that the tide of battle would have begun to turn so soon against the Axis Powers.

Obviously someone had to pay and go on paying for the effort. This was the burden that fell on the American people, of whom a large proportion enjoys 'Taxpayers' a higher standard of 'Burdens' living than many other peoples. When the war came, despite vast resources, an abundant supply of man-power and a highly developed industrial system, a strain was placed on the American economy that few had foreseen, and that puzzled many who believed that the nation could be involved in a world war and at the same time go on doing business and enjoying life as usual. Not even America was equal to that. Shortages, not only of vital materials but also of many small things that contributed to comfort, began to make themselves felt and to



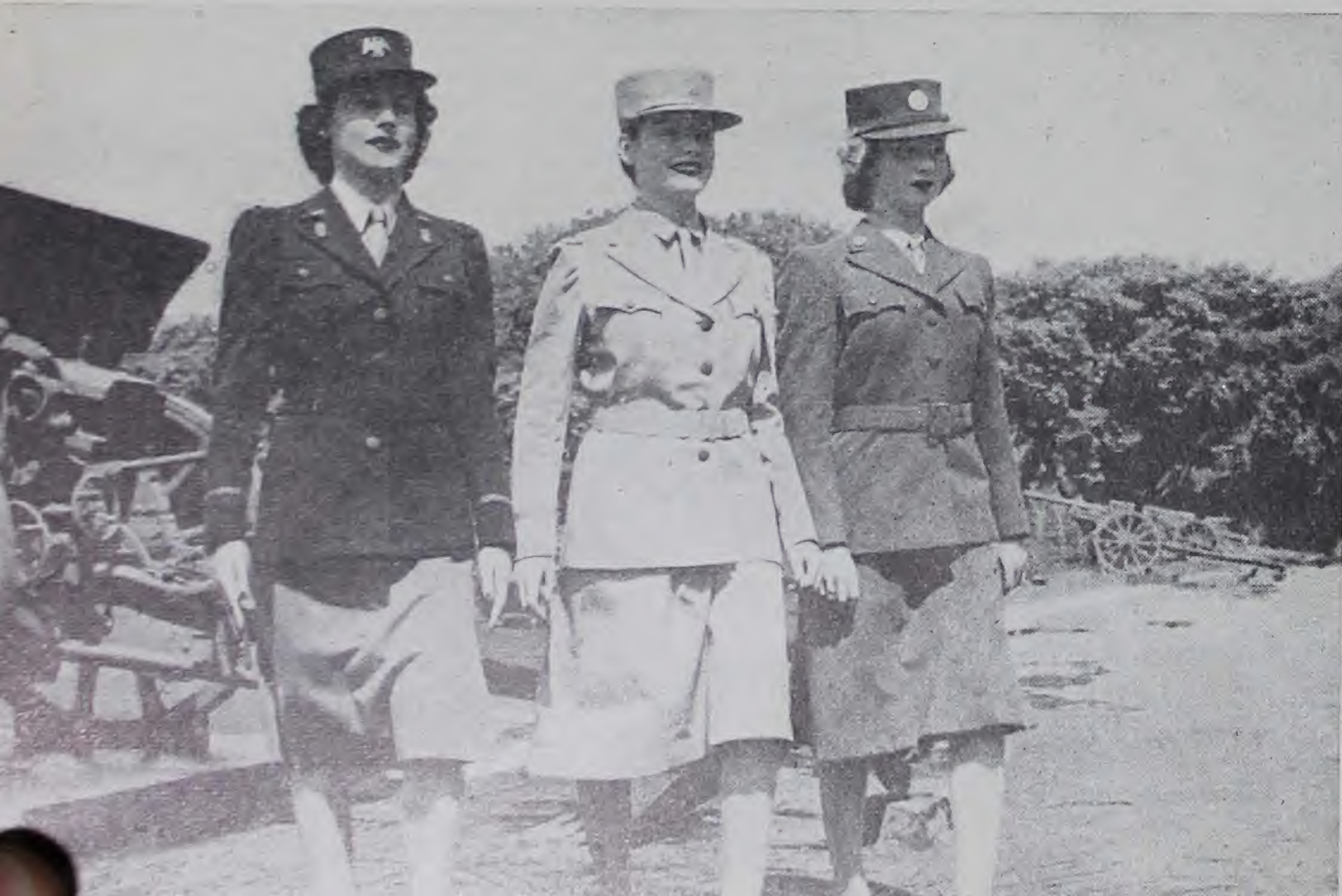
In January 1942 the vast motor-car industry of America switched over to the production of military vehicles. (Top left) Ford No. 30,337,509 rolls off the assembly line—the last for the duration. Petrol (gasoline) sales were cut by 20 per cent in March, and after May 15, when official rationing began, the average motorist could get only three gallons per week ; ration card below. The effect on America's highways is graphically shown by the photographs of the West Side Highway along Riverside, New York (lower, left), before rationing of petrol was introduced, and (top right) after rationing—this in a country with nearly one motor vehicle for every four persons.

[illegible]



AMERICAN WOMEN IN INDUSTRY AND THE SERVICES

(Top) At an American small-arms factory which turns out .50-calibre armour-piercing cartridges for machine-guns used in aircraft; these presses are in the finishing line. (Centre) Operating a pneumatic riveter on aircraft fuselage members. (Below) Uniforms of the American Women's Army Auxiliary Corps: (left) officer's winter dress (olive and khaki); (centre) summer uniform; (right) private's summer uniform, khaki. *Photos, Sport & General; "March of Time"; Topical*



affect the people in all sorts of unexpected and disconcerting ways. Materials required for the production of armaments were strictly rationed for civilian use if, by chance, surpluses were available. Goods needed by America's allies on the battle-fronts were allocated to these countries under lease-lend and were consequently limited for American consumption. At the same time foreign sources of supply, particularly those in the Orient, were cut off. These restrictions and shortages were felt all the more because of the tremendous increase in purchasing power in the hands of American war workers. More people than ever before were trying to buy steadily decreasing quantities of goods.

Before the war there had been over 32,000,000 motor vehicles, or nearly one for every four persons, in the United States. Americans had come to imagine that existence was hardly possible without a car, and had grown accustomed to buying a new one every few years. In fact, not a few "traded-in" their used cars for the latest models every year. To such a people a ban on driving for all but essential purposes was perhaps as severe a deprivation as could be thought of. Yet it came about, and one of the strangest spectacles in the months after the Pearl Harbour disaster was the steady disappearance of automobiles from the streets and motor highways.

On New Year's Day, 1942, the Government ordered the stoppage of the manufacture of new motor-cars and of the retail sale of new cars and lorries. A few days later the automobile industry was called upon to begin converting its plants to war production, a change that was carried out with remarkable speed. Instead of between 3,500,000 and 4,000,000 passenger cars a year that were formerly being built, the manufacturers began turning out a steady stream of army lorries, jeeps, tanks, aeroplanes, aeroplane parts and even ammunition.

Ban on New Cars & Lorries

To conserve rubber the rationing of tires began on January 5, 1942, and from that time on only war workers, doctors, and others in essential occupations were entitled to buy new tires. In the first month the effect was that only 357,974 tires were sold instead of the normal monthly turnover of 4,000,000. At the same time the Government restricted the retreading of old tires, and drivers had to do the best they could with what they had. Nor was this the whole of the American motorist's problem. A shortage of

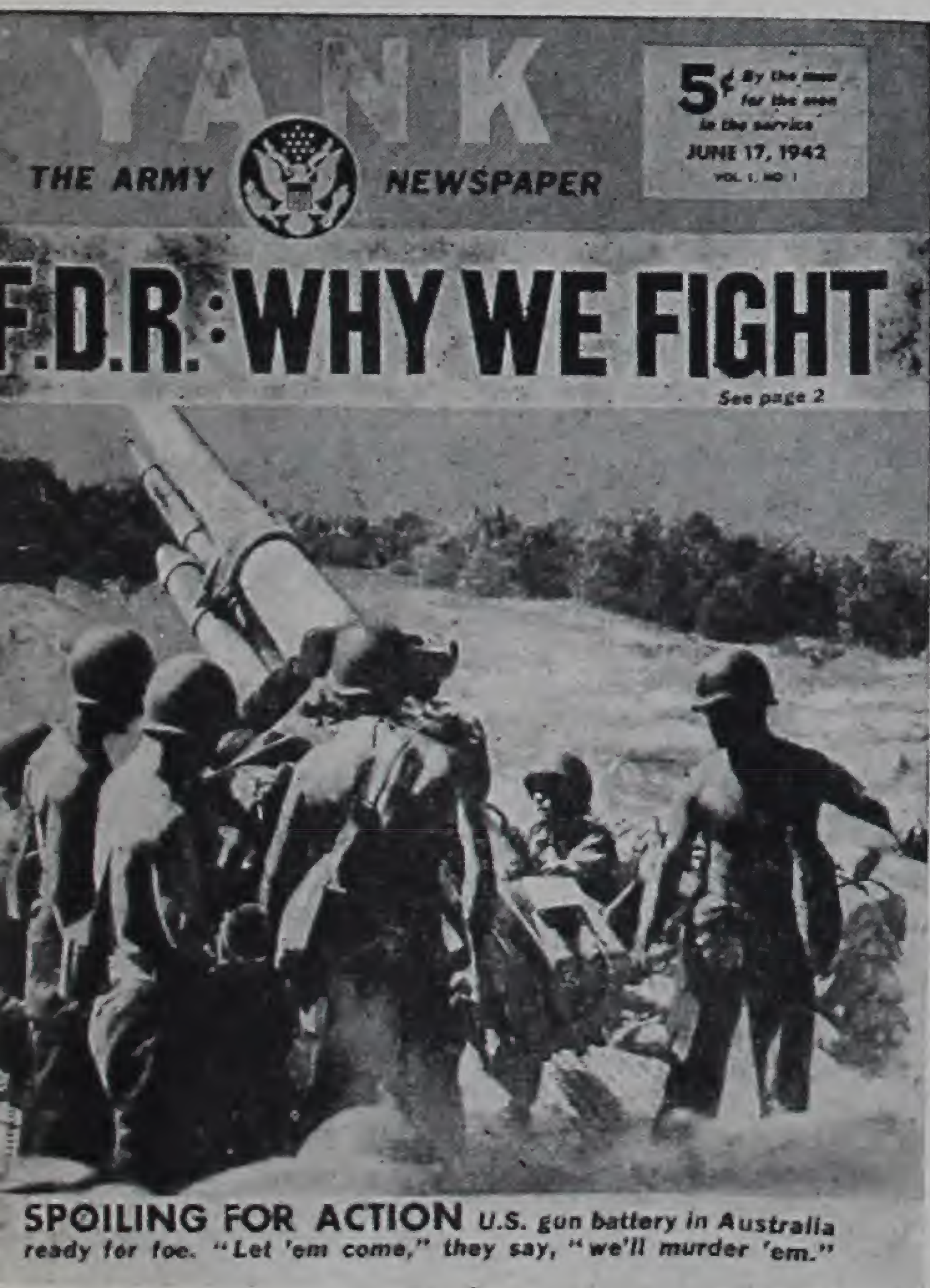
tankers that carried petrol soon made itself felt, particularly on the Eastern seaboard of the United States. Even before the war an informal system of petrol rationing had begun in the summer of 1941, when filling stations closed at 7 o'clock every evening in order to limit sales. On March 19, 1942, the Government ordered a 20 per cent cut in petrol retail sales, and filling stations began to ration supplies to drivers with renewed vigour. By May the situation had become so acute that official rationing came into force. Ration books were issued, and after May 15 the average American motorist was entitled to only three gallons of petrol a week. A larger ration was granted to those who were engaged in essential industries or who had to use their cars for business or other necessary purposes. Pleasure driving was no longer countenanced, and Americans had to find other ways of getting from place to place—or else they had to stay at home.

Shortages and restrictions steadily became the rule in every aspect of daily life. On January 27, 1942, Donald M. Nelson, head of the War Production Board, authorized Leon Henderson (Federal Price Administrator) to ration all goods and commodities sold at retail. Almost immediately the amount of cotton and woollen textiles available for civilian use was cut 50 per cent. Only 20 per cent

U.S. ARMY NEWSPAPER

The first issue of 'Yank,' appearing on June 13, 1942, contained a contribution by President Roosevelt entitled 'Why We Fight.' The cover, here reproduced, showed an American gun-crew in Australia.

Photo, "New York Times" Photo



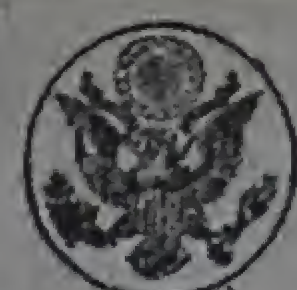
The Stamps contained in this Book are valid only after the lawful holder of this Book has signed the certificate below, and are void if detached contrary to the Regulations. (A father, mother, or guardian may sign the name of a person under 18.) In case of questions, difficulties, or complaints, consult your local Ration Board.

Certificate of Book Holder

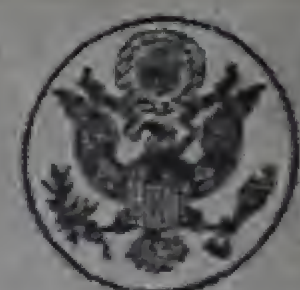
I, the undersigned, do hereby certify that I have observed all the conditions and regulations governing the issuance of this War Ration Book; that the "Description of Book Holder" contained herein is correct; that an application for issuance of this book has been duly made by me or on my behalf; and that the statements contained in said application are true to the best of my knowledge and belief.

(Signature of, or on behalf of, Book Holder) [Book Holder's Own Name]
Any person signing on behalf of Book Holder must sign his or her own name below and indicate relationship to Book Holder

(Father, Mother, or Guardian)
U. S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE: 1942 16-20800-1 OPA FORM No. 11-508



UNITED STATES
OF AMERICA



War Ration Book One

WARNING

- 1 Punishments ranging as low as Ten Years' Imprisonment or \$10,000 Fine, or Both, may be imposed under United States Statutes for violations thereof arising out of infractions of Rationing Orders and Regulations.
- 2 This book must not be transferred. It must be held and used only by or on behalf of the person to whom it has been issued, and anyone presenting it thereby represents to the Office of Price Administration, an agency of the United States Government, that it is being so held and so used. For any misuse of this book it may be taken from the holder by the Office of Price Administration.
- 3 In the event either of the departure from the United States of the person to whom this book is issued, or his or her death, the book must be surrendered in accordance with the Regulations.
- 4 Any person finding a lost book must deliver it promptly to the nearest Ration Board.

OFFICE OF PRICE ADMINISTRATION

No. 123456 -111

Certificate of Registrar

This is to Certify that pursuant to the Rationing Orders and Regulations administered by the OFFICE OF PRICE ADMINISTRATION, an agency of the United States Government,

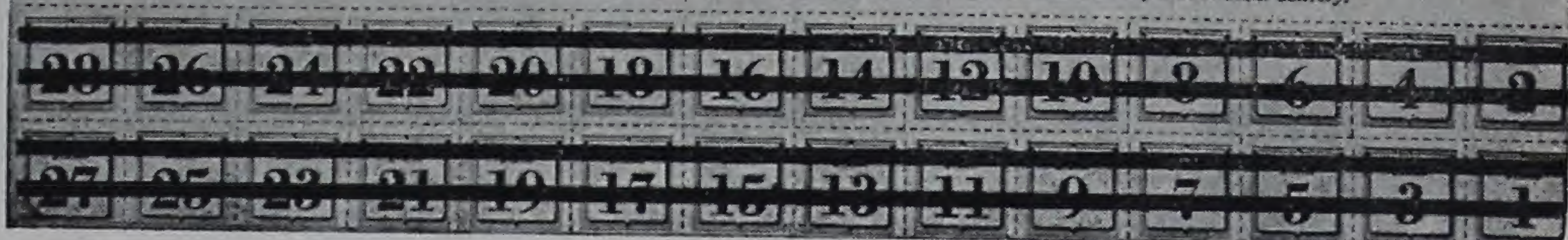
Name, Address, and Description of person to whom the book is issued:

(Last name) (First name) (Middle name)
(Street No. or P. O. Box No.) (Street or R. F. D.)
(City or town) (County) (State)

has been issued the attached War Ration Stamps this day of 1942, upon the basis of an application signed by himself, herself, or on his or her behalf by his or her husband, wife, father, mother, or exception. (Check one.)
(Signature)

Local Board No. County State

Stamps must not be detached except in the presence of the retailer, his employee, or person authorized by him to make delivery.



AMERICA GETS HER FIRST RATION BOOKS

Ration Book No. 1 was for sugar and coffee, and came into use in May 1942. The outside pages with holder's certificate are shown at top; the inside ones, with coupons and Registrar's certificate underneath. Petrol rationing (see p. 2145) followed soon after.

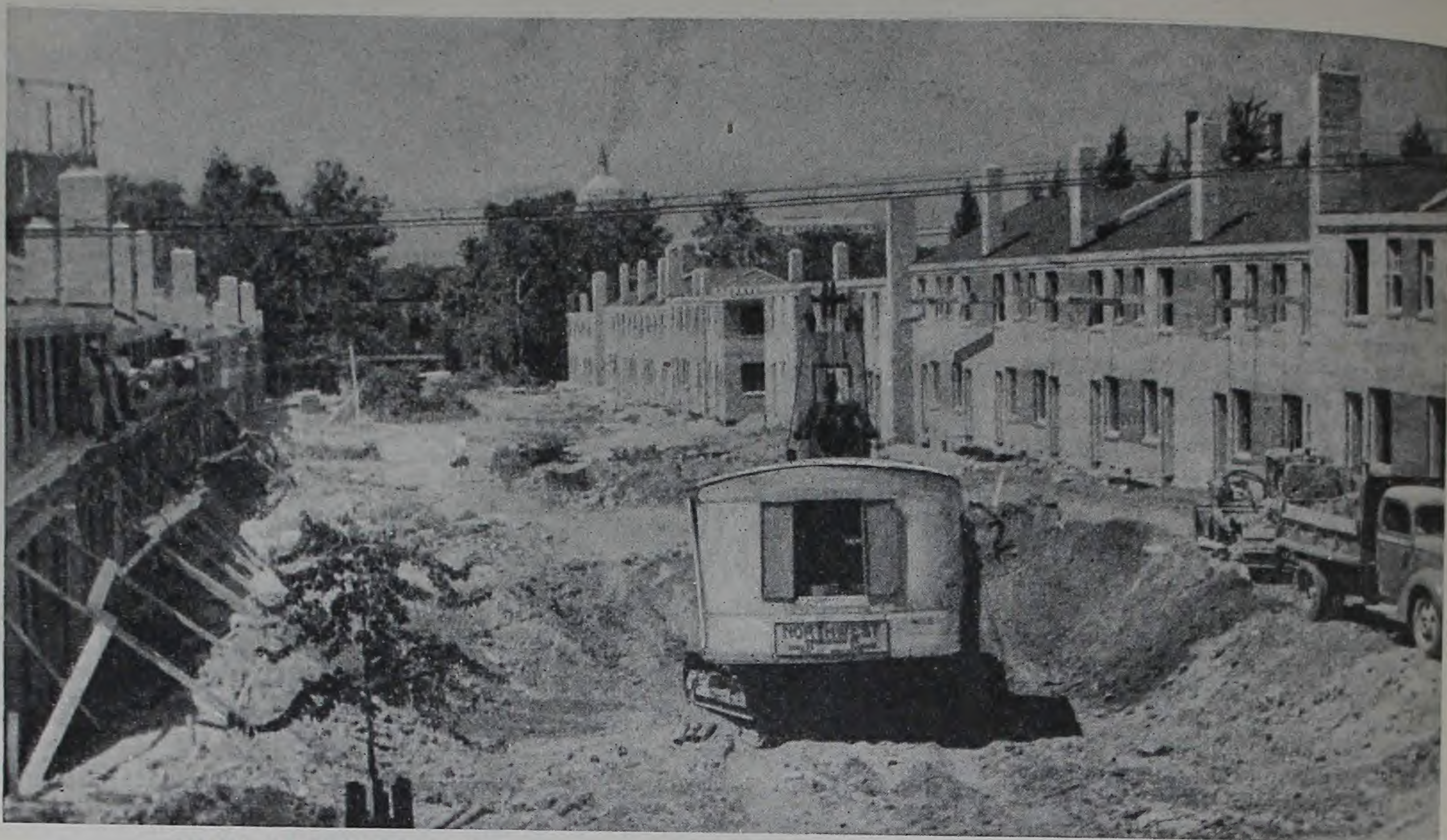
of the 1941 output of electric light bulbs was available for 1942; vacuum cleaners were subjected to an initial reduction of 25 per cent. After January 15 no more spirituous liquor might be manufactured, the alcohol being transferred to the production of explosives. However, it was estimated that the amount of liquor on hand would be enough for four years. Sugar made an early appearance on the scarcity list, and rationing became the rule, with a maximum quota for each person of 50 pounds a year. A 60 per cent reduction in the manufacture and delivery of tin cans, ordered by the War Production Board late in January, struck at the American fondness for canned foods.

The restrictions of car driving had led to a new vogue for the bicycle, but in April the sale of new bicycles was prohibited, and Americans were forced to rely still more upon their feet for locomotion. In the same month the manufacture of radio sets and photographic apparatus was discontinued for the duration of the war. Non-essential building also came under a ban, while regulations to save fabrics in ready-made garments opened an era in which men would have to forgo turn-ups on trousers and women would have to be content with plain skirts.

Not a day passed without some change in the way Americans were accustomed to live. On May 4 they got their first ration books, which were for sugar.

Petrol rationing, as we have seen, came a few days later. Everywhere shortages cropped up and restrictions came into force to modify the American tradition that everybody could do as he pleased. But it seemed that the great assault on their prized individualism was being taken in good part by the vast majority of the people. They realized that all these inconveniences and discomforts were necessary for the waging of a total war and, since they were more fully employed and better paid than ever before, and the country itself was not under attack, they also were aware that their burden was a light one compared with the peoples of countries actually ravaged by the war.

At the core of practically all America's problem in organizing for war and creating a war economy was the question of manpower—how to assign the greatest possible number as well as the right kind of men and women to various duties of combat service and war labour: the Selective Service Act of 1940, popularly known as the Draft, had already made military duty obligatory on millions of Americans. The result was that the strength of the Army had grown from 174,000 in July 1939 to over 1,600,000 towards the end of 1941. Then, as soon as America was in the war, the Draft was extended to all males between the ages of 18



MORE ACCOMMODATION FOR WAR WORKERS

War activities brought so many people to Washington that, in the American phrase, apartments were often rented from the blueprints—booked up before they were built. This photograph shows new building operations undertaken near the American capital early in 1942 in an attempt to ease the situation.

Photo, "March of Time"

and 65, with liability for military service for all between 20 and 45. The expansion of the armed forces from this point onward was so steady that at the end of the first six months after Pearl Harbour there were 2,500,000 men in the Army, 526,000 in the Navy and 100,000 in the Marines; 10,500,000 workers were employed in war plants and were thus entitled to deferment of military service.

It was not long before the respective needs of the fighting forces, industry and agriculture gave rise to a manpower controversy.

War Dept. Criticized Farmers and producers of war materials sought to hold back workers they regarded as essential, and in some quarters there was criticism of the War Department for aiming at an Army on a larger scale than would be needed. But since the military leaders were credited with knowing how many million men would be necessary for the dual war in Europe and the Pacific they were allowed to go ahead with little actual opposition. Naturally industry, business and numerous other peacetime activities began to suffer from growing labour shortages, while the everyday conveniences and comforts which the people looked upon as

a matter of course became increasingly scarcer. Inevitably women were pressed into service in ever larger numbers. Not only were they now employed in factories and workshops, but they were given opportunities in jobs that had never before been thought of as women's work. America had always been a country where women had more freedom and scope than elsewhere; now they were wearing the trousers to an extent unprecedented anywhere—and literally so as "slacks" came widely into fashion. Congress marked its recognition of the women's part in the war by creating the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps—the "WAACS"—the first of such organizations to release men in uniform from desk jobs for more strenuous kinds of service.

Altogether, therefore, the first six months after Pearl Harbour saw the United States make remarkably good progress toward becoming a nation organized for total war. In part that was due, as has already been said, to the many measures of preparedness that had been adopted and put into operation before the nation became directly involved in the conflict. But that progress would not have been possible except for the combination of

the vast natural resources, the extensive and highly developed industrial plant and equipment, the organizing ability and technical skill and abundant and vigorous man power that had already made the United States the greatest single productive unit in the world, and therefore the most formidable for the waging of a long war that depended as no other war ever had on the use of machines.

Yet even all this might not be enough against a resourceful and ruthlessly efficient enemy if with the machines there were not the right kind of morale among the men who handled them. Of that morale there was no doubt. No war in American history had provoked so little internal opposition, and nowhere was there any disposition to argue that it would suffice to remain on the defensive. The American people were as nearly unanimous as any people could be that only by smashing offensives, first against Germany and then against Japan, could the war be brought to a speedy and victorious conclusion.

On December 7, 1941, the day that the Japanese attacked at Pearl Harbour President Roosevelt won his long struggle for his belief that this was a war that America could not keep out of, and that when it went in it would have to be with everything America had. Behind him on that stand were the overwhelming majority of the American people.

LATIN AMERICA AND THE WAR: GROUPINGS AND REACTIONS

After Japan struck at the United States in December 1941 the 20 Latin American Republics were brought up sharply against the realities of the great conflict which had divided Europe and was now to threaten all America. How they acted during 1942, and some of their major problems, are here discussed, with an account of the Pan-American Conferences

IN considering the attitude of the 20 Latin American republics towards the Second World War it is essential to bear in mind certain fundamental characteristics common to them all. Not least of these is the historical fact that there is a Latin American "outlook on life" which is liberal and democratic. This applies to all the peoples, though not to all the present regimes: the "New State" of Brazil, for example, was a quasi-Fascist dictatorship, while the government of Argentina was oligarchical, reactionary and almost feudalistic. The Argentine Government was the only one among the twenty countries to show any pro-Axis leanings. Another characteristic of the Latin American nations is their willingness to get together to settle their disputes and to plan for common aims. The two characteristics mentioned decided in advance what would be the attitude of Latin America in the struggle, and there have been no surprises. Events and clashes of the war have produced the expected reactions. The table in page 2158 indicates attitudes and groupings.

No event served so greatly to canalize attitudes and groupings as the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbour, December 7, 1941. After it opinion

Awakening To Danger

crystallized; a whole hemisphere awoke to threatening danger, and began to act. Before that date, and of considerable importance, was the gradual realization of sinister Nazi intentions in regard to Latin America, as shown by blatant Fifth Column activities and public exposures of local German plotting. U-boat attacks made without warning on unarmed shipping belonging to Latin American countries or off their coasts created widespread indignation. A considerable contribution towards the creation of a pro-Ally public opinion was the defeat of the Luftwaffe by the R.A.F. in 1940, while the courage and character shown by the people of Britain during the period of heavy aerial attacks on cities and ports in 1940-41 evoked the sympathy and admiration of Latin Americans everywhere. Then there

had been the Battle of the River Plate (December 13, 1939). No Axis propaganda could counteract the psychological effects produced by these events, to which Pearl Harbour was the climax. While in 1939 the isolation of the Americas made Latin American neutrality tenable, isolation was no longer a reality after the 1940 Axis threat to Brazil from Dakar, and the great initial advantage won by Japan by her foul blow to U.S. naval power. A continent moved into action.

Interrelations among themselves and the relations of Latin American nations with the U.S.A., as shown by Roosevelt's policy and the trend of Pan-Americanism, facilitated the organization and coordination of war effort. The highly successful policy of the "Good Neighbour" launched by the first Roosevelt administration caused a steady weakening of Latin American hostility towards the U.S.A., which

had grown during years of an exploiting "dollar diplomacy." Pan-Americanism may be defined as the tendency of the independent nations of the New World to associate on a basis of common interests for common aims. The Pan-American Conference at Panama in 1939 initiated discussions on hemisphere problems arising out of the threatening world situation, and some solid progress was made. But the results of that Conference must be regarded merely as preliminary when one considers the basic achievements of the next Pan-American Conference, held at Rio de Janeiro, January 15-28, 1942. This was attended by representatives from the whole continent, with ten of its countries (including the U.S.A.) now at war with the Axis, and three with diplomatic relations broken off.

The remainder had either extended non-belligerent rights to American



WHEN V SIGNS MARKED ALL NAZI BUILDINGS IN LA PAZ

Bolivia broke off diplomatic relations with Germany, Italy and Japan in January 1942; she declared war on them in April 1943. Long before, however, the people of La Paz (the capital) had shown where their sympathies lay: the above photograph, taken in the late summer of 1941, shows Victory V's painted overnight on the front of an important Nazi building.

Photo issued by the Ministry of Information



CHRYSLERS BUILD M-3 TANKS INSTEAD OF MOTOR CARS

When the great automobile industry of America settled down to the building of armoured fighting vehicles and transport lorries, its output was enormous. In normal times it had turned out between three and four million passenger vehicles per annum, and now it had to tackle President Roosevelt's programme for 45,000 tanks, with hosts of other military vehicles, during the year. Above, General Grant tanks (M-3s) in the Chrysler works at Detroit

Photo, Pictorial Press



IDEOLOGICAL CHANGE-OVER AT SANTIAGO DE CHILE

Top, a meeting of local S.A. 'Assault Troops' in Santiago; a Chilean flag at left and Nazi banners behind. At the rear stands a Chilean officer: (summer of 1941). Chile broke off relations with the Axis on January 20, 1943, when there were huge popular demonstrations in favour of this course. Lower photograph shows the crowd in front of the Presidential palace in the capital.

Photos, "New York Times Magazine"; Keystone



nations at war or had reaffirmed solidarity in the face of Axis aggression. The U.S.A. and Mexico had already taken a realistic step by the creation of a Joint Defence Commission. The Rio Conference produced highly concrete results, which may be summarized as follows:

It was agreed that the republics, "in accordance with the procedures established by their own laws and in conformity with the position and circumstances obtaining in each country," would "recommend the breaking off of their diplomatic relations with Japan, Germany and Italy," and that they would not renew such relations without prior consultation.

Solidarity and determination to collaborate for hemisphere defence were reaffirmed.

While Argentina and Brazil opposed the proposal to adhere to the Atlantic Charter, the Conference took cognizance of the Charter and expressed approval that it conformed to the spirit of American heritage.

Argentina refused to agree to the proposal to declare all allies of the U.S.A. non-belligerent.

It was resolved that no American State at war with a non-American State should be treated by other republics as a belligerent, and it was recommended that facilities be granted to those countries which, in the opinion of each government, contribute to the defence of hemisphere interests.

Relations should be continued with governments in exile of Axis-occupied territories fighting for sovereignty.

Resolutions passed embraced a variety of decisions: for cooperation and co-ordination of all relevant activities, from Fifth Column to aviation facilities for American citizens and nations to the exclusion of those of the Axis, and the creation in Washington of an Inter-American Military, Naval and Technical Commission.

Other resolutions dealt with economic, commercial and financial measures for collaboration, including the elimination of barriers against the free flow of strategic minerals and war materials. Agreement was reached on a Joint War Production Plan, and for intensification of the work of the Inter-American Development Commission.

Finally, that collective security should be founded on "just, effective and liberal economic systems," and that a new order of peace must be supported by economic principles to ensure equitable and lasting international trade with equal opportunities for all nations. To this end an Inter-American Technical Economic Conference charged with war and post-war problems should be created.

Altogether some 40 resolutions, recommendations and declarations were approved by all America at this most important Conference, which must be regarded as a landmark in American history.

The 100 per cent success hoped for was not reached, chiefly because Argentina had forced a weakening of the original resolution in favour of all-round severance of relations with the Axis. Yet the progress made was solid; the Conference provided the essential blueprint for continental effort and



OPENING OF THE PAN-AMERICAN CONFERENCE IN THE
 President Getulio Vargas, of Brazil, made the opening address to the delegates, the Foreign Ministers of 21 American Republics : United States, Argentina, Panama, Salvador, Costa Rica, Cuba, Santo Domingo, Guatemala, Nicaragua, Haiti, Honduras, Mexico, Chile, Brazil, Colombia, Venezuela, Peru, Uruguay, Bolivia, Ecuador and Paraguay. Mr. Sumner Welles, American Under-Secretary of State, was leader of the United States delegation. Twice previously the



TIRADENTES PALACE AT RIO DE JANEIRO, JANUARY 15, 1942

Conference had met—in 1938 at Lima, and in July 1940, at Havana. On the present occasion their purpose, in the words of Mr. Sumner Welles, was 'to take counsel as to the course our Governments should take under the shadow of this dire threat to our continued existence as free peoples.' (See tabular statement in page 2158.) He called for unity, a common policy of defence and immediate action against Axis agents.

Photo, Keystone



NEW YORK WELCOMES BRITISH AND AMERICAN WAR HEROES

The tumultuous greeting to war heroes on June 8, 1942, as they rode up Broadway to a civic welcome by the Mayor, Mr. La Guardia. Among the guests of honour were : Sqdr.-Ldr. J. D. Nettleton, V.C. ; Wing-Comdr. M. Loudon, D.F.C. ; Flt.-Lt. C. Q. McColpin, D.F.C., 3rd Eagle Squadron ; Pilot-Officer A. F. Taylor, D.F.C. ; Flt.-Sgt. M. A. D. Riddell, D.F.M. ; Sgt. D. N. Huntley, R.A.F. ; 2nd Lieut. G. S. Welch, Lieut. Elliot Vandevanter, and Lieut. William Carruthers (U.S.A.A.F.) ; Lieut. J. M. Hall and Sgt. R. G. Herbert, D.C.M., M.M. (Commandos) ; Lieut. T. O. Boyd, D.S.O., R.N.V.R. ; Chief E.R.A. Harry Howard, D.S.M., R.N. ; Ensign D. F. Mason, U.S. Navy.

Photo, "New York Times" Photos

collaboration in the war, and may be considered the keystone of all-American collaboration.

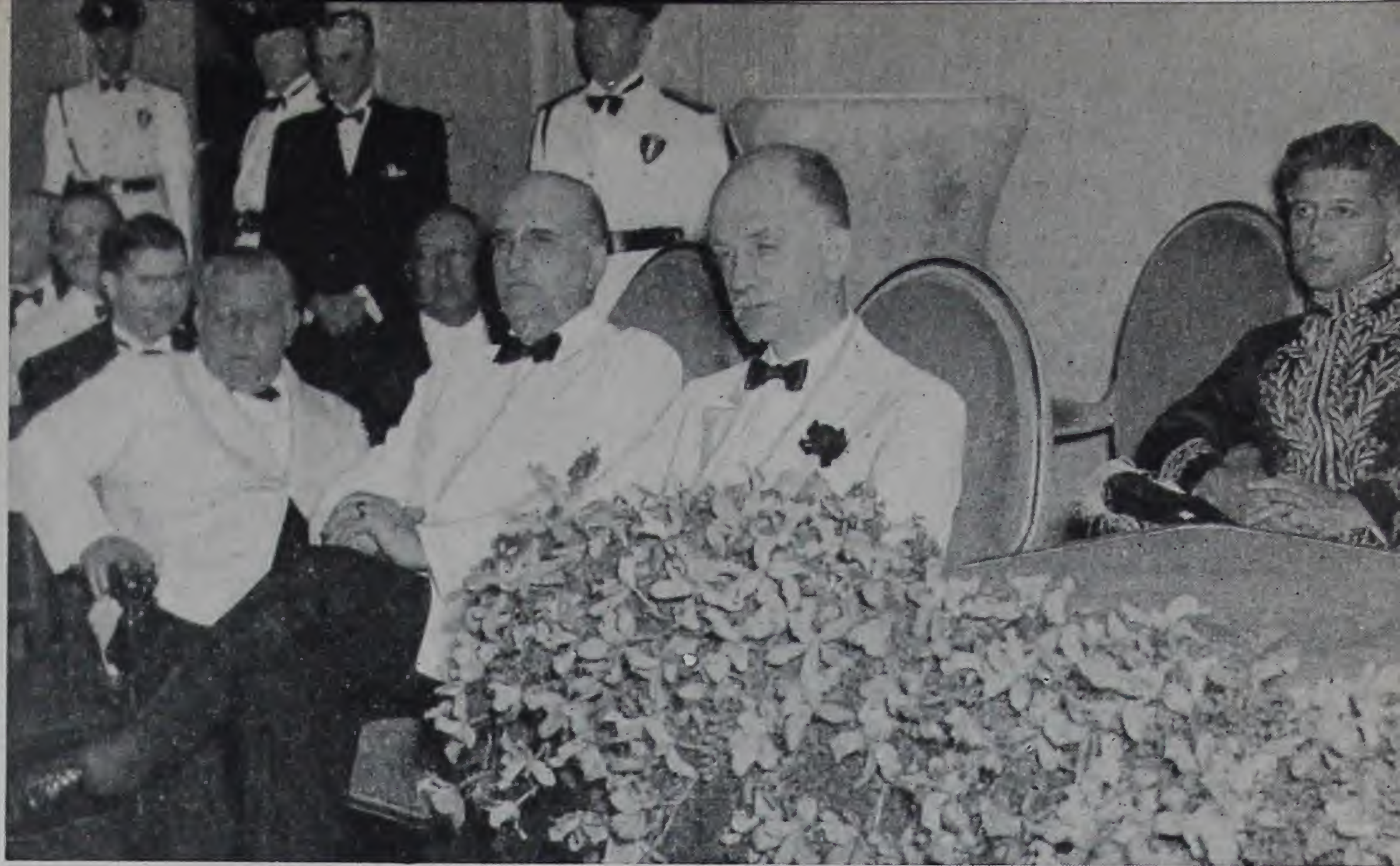
Notwithstanding this considerable achievement all was not plain sailing, and the Latin American nations were, in fact, tormented by difficulties and anxieties. First, the world shipping problem had rapidly become so acute after the outbreak of war that those countries had to face the prospect of severe economic crisis; and this had not diminished by the end of 1942. Every republic had to face in varying degree the Axis Fifth Column activities, which in some constituted a real menace. One million Germans in Brazil, 250,000 in Argentina, 50,000 in Chile, and thousands in the other countries—mostly Nazified Germans, organized for sabotage, subversion and even military action—this was an internal canker of perilous proportions. It caused a veritable nightmare for the safety of the Panama Canal, of north-east and southern Brazil, Uruguay and the Magellan territories of Argentina and Chile—all vulnerable areas. Vast Italian populations added to the danger: two millions in Argentina, as many in Brazil, 65,000 in Uruguay, 23,000 in Chile, and 30,000 in the other countries.

While many of their institutions were under strict Fascist control and collaborated with the Germans, it was estimated that two-thirds of the Italians

Strong Anti-Axis Groups

in Latin America were anti-Fascist and democratic. Their strongest link with Italy was the clergy, who did not subscribe to democratic doctrines and collaborated politically with Spanish clergy who were mostly Falangist in sympathy. In August 1942 at Montevideo a "Pan-American" Conference was held representing eleven million Free Italians. It declared absolute solidarity with the United Nations and approved the Atlantic Charter. President Roosevelt's master-stroke of political warfare in declaring that Italians in the U.S.A. were not to be treated as enemy aliens evoked joyous repercussions among the Italians of Latin America, and provided a powerful counter-force against the Nazi-Fascist-Falangist Fifth Column.

In quite another category were the Japanese, since events showed that every Japanese resident abroad was a probable agent of the Tokyo government. There were over 200,000 Japanese in Brazil, 22,000 in Peru, 6,000 in Mexico, 7,000 in Argentina, and 7,000 scattered throughout Central America. Everywhere they became a cause of apprehension—in São Paulo the police placed the Japanese menace above the



FEELINGS RAN HIGH IN NEUTRAL ARGENTINA

There were two million Italians and 250,000 Germans in Argentina, together with 7,000 Japanese, which perhaps accounted for that country's cautious attitude towards the Conference proposals at Rio de Janeiro in January 1942. Top, in front, seated, Mr. Sumner Welles (right) with Dr. Enrique Ruiz Guinazú (Argentine Foreign Minister) at a Conference function. Lower photograph, a brawl at Buenos Aires between medical students and pro-Fascist nationalists.

Photos, Planet News; Associated Press



German and Italian, and introduced drastic measures to deal with it. In addition to German, Italian and Japanese sources of anxiety, there was everywhere in Latin America the Spanish "Falange Exterior," that branch of the Spanish Fascist Party which functions abroad, proclaims the subtle doctrines of "Hispanidad" (Spanishness), and, because of linguistic, cultural and spiritual affinities with the peoples, was a magnificent cloak for the dissemination of totalitarian philosophy, for espionage, and pro-Axis activities generally. The Nazi Ibero-American Institute in Berlin under

General von Faupel, with branches in Barcelona and Madrid and agents in Bohle's "Foreign Organization" in every Latin American country, provided direction for the Spanish Falangists everywhere.

There was a genuine desire in all the Hispanic countries for friendship with a cleanly neutral Spain, which must always be to them the motherland and not just a regime. With this went two anxieties: first, for the pro-Axis activities of Falangists, and second, lest Nationalist Spain should be drawn into the war on Hitler's side. General Franco's publicly proclaimed (December

8, 1942) wish for a Hitler victory shocked millions of Hispano-Americans. The unequivocally pro-Axis declarations of responsible Spanish Ministers since 1939, and in 1942 the realization that Nationalist Spain was putting herself on a war footing, created profound suspicion and the growth of political estrangement throughout Latin America. In Mexico, the government decided in 1942 to treat Spanish republican refugees as allies, and all



WHEN MEXICO MADE UP HER MIND

On May 22, 1942, Mexico declared war upon Germany, Italy and Japan. Top, her President, Manuel Avila Camacho, promises unlimited cooperation with the United Nations. Right, poster calling on the people to remember May 13, when the Argentine tanker 'Potrero del Llano' had been sunk by a U-boat; below, demonstration in the Plaza de la Constitucion, Mexico City, after another such outrage.

supporters of General Franco as enemies. Elsewhere, a distinction was drawn between the two categories into which Spaniards—millions of them in Latin America—had divided themselves. The government of General Franco felt compelled to intensify propaganda to allay suspicions; and Falangists began to observe caution.

Such were the main outlines of the political picture of Latin America at the end of 1942. Argentina maintained neutrality and some aloofness, an official aloofness not representative of public feeling. The ruling oligarchy inclined to the view that the landed, industrial and financial interests it represented could not lose and might even gain by an Axis victory, but that the most certain gains would follow neutrality. Foreign Minister Ruiz Guiñazú, authoritarian in sympathy, held rigidly to neutrality. The disclosures in 1940-41 by Argentine Deputy Taborda of local Axis conspiracies, the publication in 1941 of Roosevelt's map of Ger-

man intentions in Latin America, Sumner Welles's warnings in October 1942, and the sinking of Argentine shipping by U-boats did not shake the immovable attitude of the Argentine government.

From the beginning, Mexico's attitude was never in doubt, for Mexico was politically the most progressive Latin American democracy. By May 1942 Germany claimed to have sunk over 150,000 tons of "enemy" shipping in the Gulf of Mexico, the Caribbean and to the east of the Antilles. This claim indicated the nature of the war to be



waged on Mexico's Atlantic doorstep and the problems to be faced. The government indicated its willingness to do anything within its power to help the United Nations. Mexico declared war upon Germany, Italy and Japan on May 22, 1942. Unrestricted submarine warfare had struck at the hemisphere's lifelines at every converging point. Mexican bases for America's naval units and aircraft, plus facilities provided by the defence bloc formed by Caribbean republics at war, all

helped to counter the U-boat menace. The menace to her long and vulnerable coastline from Japanese naval power in the Pacific caused Chile to maintain neutrality, though the people were whole-heartedly pro-Ally. She broke off diplomatic relations with the three Axis Powers on January 20, 1943, and next day President Rios stated that "The road chosen by Chile will lead to sacrifices which we shall face with the conviction that they are the price to pay for the defence of democracy and the dignity and future of our country."

Brazil, closest economically of all the

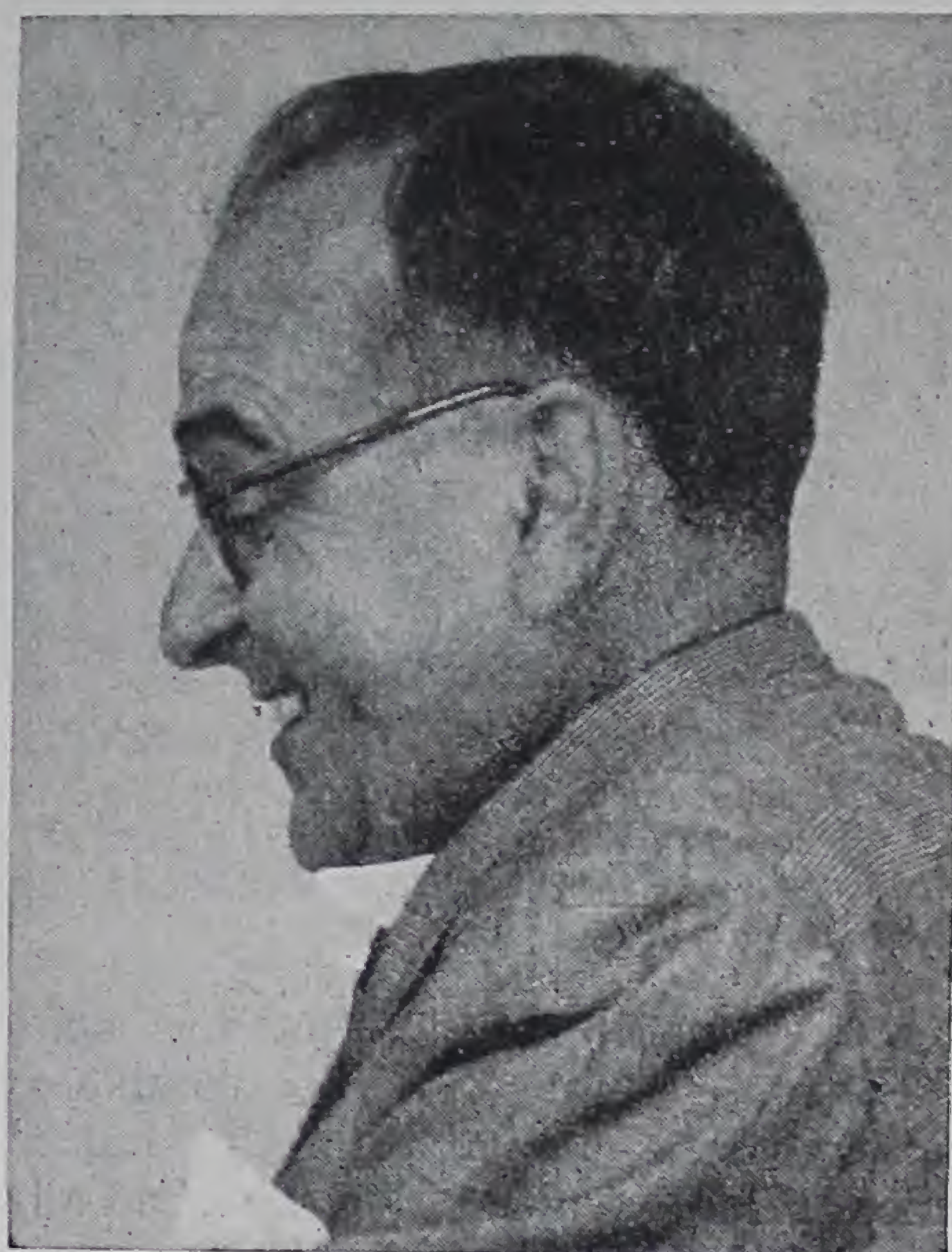
Nations. On April 18, 1942, the oil installations on the Dutch island of Curaçao were shelled by a U-boat (see illus., p. 2128). Here and at Aruba were immense refineries. Cuba, Haiti and Santo Domingo moved in accordance with the wishes of Washington; Panama virtually became United States territory.

The sinkings on the Atlantic seaboard and in the Caribbean accelerated the creation of machinery for collaboration in hemisphere defence and for active assistance to the United Nations. The Washington Pact (January 1, 1942), the Caribbean Commission (March 9, 1942) and the Inter-American Defence Board (March 30, 1942) were its most important instruments. The first Inter-American Conference on Social Security was held in Santiago in September.

One other factor had profound influence throughout Latin America: the German aggression against the U.S.S.R. and the heroic fight of the Russians. Hitherto the Latin American attitude in regard to the Soviets was a mixture of suspicion, hostility and in-

difference. Now it changed to admiration and friendliness, and finally to desire for the resumption of diplomatic relations, and Mexico, in fact, decided to resume relations. The Anglo-Russian Alliance gave impetus to this change of opinion.

All the factors enumerated above contributed towards focusing, from the United Nations' point of view, on one vast objective towards which the Latin American countries could make their



BRAZIL DECLARES WAR UPON GERMANY AND ITALY

Brazil had a million Germans, twice as many Italians, and 200,000 Japanese within her borders. On August 22, 1942, she declared war on Germany and Italy and broke off relations with Japan. Below, a patriotic demonstration in front of the U.S. Embassy, Rio de Janeiro; left, a German bookshop wrecked some months earlier. Above, Brazil's President, Dr. Getulio Vargas.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Central Press

republics to the U.S.A., maintained neutrality until August 1942, when national patience was exhausted by the sinkings of her ships by U-boats. (On January 28 she had broken off relations with the Axis Powers.) The other republics may briefly be mentioned. Until April 1943 Bolivia remained more interested in home than in foreign politics or the war, while Venezuela (who, like Bolivia, had broken off relations with the Axis) sold vast quantities of petroleum to the United





AXIS DIPLOMATS LEAVE BRAZIL AND PARAGUAY

Here is the scene on the quay as the Axis representatives prepared to leave Brazil after the rupture of diplomatic relations by Brazil (January 28, 1942) and Paraguay (January 30). Baggage is being got ready for the steamer which took them to Lisbon. Brazil declared war upon Germany and Italy on August 22.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

greatest contribution: economic collaboration. For this no complete statistics are available. Of Latin America Hitler said: "We shall find all we want there." There is hardly a war material or a strategic mineral which one or other or several of the 20 republics cannot provide. The vital importance of Latin America to the United States war effort cannot be gainsaid: by December 1941 the U.S.A. was obtaining from the southern republics 34 per cent of her copper, 20 per cent of tungsten, 25 per cent of zinc, 20 per cent of lead, 33 per cent of antimony and important percentages of other strategic minerals. Britain also drew heavily for war materials and for meat and grain.

The list of Latin American products essential for war would almost fill a column. Rubber, cotton, wool, copper,

Products manganese, iron, graphite, monazite, platinum,
Essential for ite, monazite, platinum,
War Effort petroleum, cobalt, zinc, molybdenum, sulphur,

asbestos, antimony, tin, bismuth, barium, cinnabar, emery, kaolin, mica, molybdenite, saltpetre, silver, lead, soapstone, talc, wolfram, tungsten, rock crystal, diamonds: the list is formidable. In view of Allied losses of rich territory to Japan one may well ask where the United Nations would stand without the vast potential of Latin American resources. The continent of 20 republics, stretching from the U.S.A. to Cape Horn, occupies a vital strategic position for the United Nations, and is

now playing a part even more important than it did in the war of 1914-18. Here is an immense storehouse capable of providing all the sinews of war, one which received the fullest and most detailed attention of Nazi Germany, and

was marked down for eventual aggression and enslavement.

It was that "outlook on life" of the Latin Americans which proved to be the decisive factor in bringing them over to the side of the United Nations. It was their willingness to collaborate for common ends which made their collaboration so useful. It was their economic and industrial wealth which rendered them invaluable.

LATIN AMERICAN REPUBLICS AND THE SECOND GREAT WAR (To the end of 1942)

Neutral: Argentina Chile†	Declaration of war against:		
	Germany	Italy	Japan
Belligerents:			
Panama	10-12-41	10-12-41	9-12-41
Salvador	10-12-41	10-12-41	8-12-41
Costa Rica ..	11-12-41	11-12-41	8-12-41
Cuba	11-12-41	11-12-41	9-12-41
Santo Domingo	11-12-41	11-12-41	8-12-41
Guatemala ..	11-12-41	11-12-41	9-12-41
Nicaragua ..	11-12-41	11-12-41	8-12-41
Haiti	12-12-41	12-12-41	8-12-41
Honduras ..	12-12-41	12-12-41	8-12-41
Mexico	22- 5-42	22- 5-42	22- 5-42
Brazil*	22- 8-42	22- 8-42	
Diplomatic Relations broken:			
Colombia	19-12-41	19-12-41	19-12-41
Venezuela ..	31-12-41	31-12-41	31-12-41
Peru	25- 1-42	25- 1-42	25- 1-42
Uruguay	25- 1-42	25- 1-42	25- 1-42
Bolivia†	28- 1-42	28- 1-42	28- 1-42
Ecuador	29- 1-42	29- 1-42	29- 1-42
Paraguay	30- 1-42	30- 1-42	30- 1-42

* Brazil broke off diplomatic relations with Japan on 22-8-42, but by the end of 1942 had not declared war against that country.
† Bolivia declared war in April 1943.
‡ Chile broke off relations with Germany, Italy and Japan on January 20, 1943



END TO FALANGIST INTRIGUES AT HAVANA

Backed by Nazi funds, local Falangists (pro-Fascists) in Cuba carried out subversive work under the guise of social activities. This photograph shows a Falangist restaurant in Havana which the authorities closed down early in 1941. Cuba declared war upon the Axis a few days after Japan entered the war.

Photo, Keystone

AGREEMENT IMPLEMENTING LEASE-LEND PROGRAMME

The American Lease-Lend Act became law on March 11, 1941. There were somewhat prolonged negotiations between the British and United States Governments before, on February 23, 1943, their representatives signed the far-reaching Agreement the text of which is here printed. It provided for reciprocity, so that when American troops went overseas to Britain or the Dominions aid was afforded to them through the machinery of 'Lease-Lend in reverse.'

AGREEMENT BETWEEN THE GOVERNMENTS OF THE UNITED KINGDOM AND THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA ON THE PRINCIPLES APPLYING TO MUTUAL AID IN THE PROSECUTION OF THE WAR AGAINST AGGRESSION. WASHINGTON. FEBRUARY 23, 1942.

WHEREAS the Governments of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland and the United States of America declare that they are engaged in a cooperative undertaking, together with every other nation or people of like mind, to the end of laying the bases of a just and enduring world peace securing order under law to themselves and all nations :

And whereas the President of the United States of America has determined, pursuant to the Act of Congress of the 11th March, 1941, that the defence of the United Kingdom against aggression is vital to the defence of the United States of America ;

And whereas the United States of America has extended and is continuing to extend to the United Kingdom aid in resisting aggression ;

And whereas it is expedient that the final determination of the terms and conditions upon which the Government of the United Kingdom receives such aid and of the benefits to be received by the United States of America in return therefor should be deferred until the extent of the defence aid is known and until the progress of events makes clearer the final terms and conditions and benefits which will be in the mutual interests of the United States of America and the United Kingdom, and will promote the establishment and maintenance of world peace :

And whereas the Governments of the United States of America and the United Kingdom are mutually desirous of concluding now a preliminary agreement in regard to the providing of defence aid and in regard to certain considerations which shall be taken into account in determining such terms and conditions, and the making of such an agreement has been in all respects duly authorized, and all acts, conditions and formalities which it may have been necessary to perform, fulfil or execute prior to the making of such an agreement in conformity with the laws either of the United States of America or of the United Kingdom have been performed, fulfilled or executed as required ;

The undersigned, being duly authorized by their respective Governments for that purpose, have agreed as follows :

Article 1. The Government of the United States of America will continue to supply the Government of the United Kingdom with such defence articles, defence services, and defence information as the President shall authorize to be transferred or provided.

Article 2. The Government of the United Kingdom will continue to contribute to the defence of the United States of America and the strengthening thereof, and will provide such articles, services, facilities or information as it may be in a position to supply.

Article 3. The Government of the United Kingdom will not, without the consent of the President of the United States of America, transfer title to, or possession of, any defence article or defence information transferred to it under the Act, or permit the use thereof by anyone not an officer, employee or agent of the Government of the United Kingdom.

Article 4. If, as a result of the transfer to the Government of the United Kingdom of any defence article or defence information, it becomes necessary for that Government to take any action or make any payment in order fully to protect any of the rights of a citizen of the United States of

America who has patent rights in and to any such defence article or information, the Government of the United Kingdom will take such action or make such payment when requested to do so by the President of the United States of America.

Article 5. The Government of the United Kingdom will return to the United States of America at the end of the present emergency, as determined by the President, such defence articles transferred under this Agreement as shall not have been destroyed, lost or consumed, and as shall be determined by the President to be useful in the defence of the United States of America or of the Western Hemisphere or to be otherwise of use to the United States of America.

Article 6. In the final determination of the benefits to be provided to the United States of America by the Government of the United Kingdom, full cognisance shall be taken of all property, services, information, facilities or other benefits or considerations provided by the Government of the United Kingdom subsequent to the 11th March, 1941, and accepted or acknowledged by the President on behalf of the United States of America.

Article 7. In the final determination of the benefits to be provided to the United States of America by the Government of the United Kingdom in return for aid furnished under the Act of Congress of the 11th March, 1941, the terms and conditions thereof shall be such as not to burden commerce between the two countries, but to promote mutually advantageous economic relations between them and the betterment of world-wide economic relations. To that end, they shall include provision for agreed action by the United States of America and the United Kingdom, open to participation by all other countries of like mind, directed to the expansion, by appropriate international and domestic measures, of production, employment, and the exchange and consumption of goods, which are the material foundations of the liberty and welfare of all peoples ; to the elimination of all forms of discriminatory treatment in international commerce, and to the reduction of tariffs and other trade barriers ; and, in general, to the attainment of all the economic objectives set forth in the Joint Declaration made on the 12th August, 1941, by the President of the United States of America and the Prime Minister of the United Kingdom.

At an early convenient date conversations shall be begun between the two Governments with a view to determining, in the light of governing economic conditions, the best means of attaining the above-stated objectives by their own agreed action and of seeking the agreed action of other like-minded Governments.

Article 8. This Agreement shall take effect as from this day's date. It shall continue in force until a date to be agreed upon by the two Governments.

Signed and sealed at Washington in duplicate this 23rd day of February, 1942.

On behalf of the Government of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Northern Ireland :

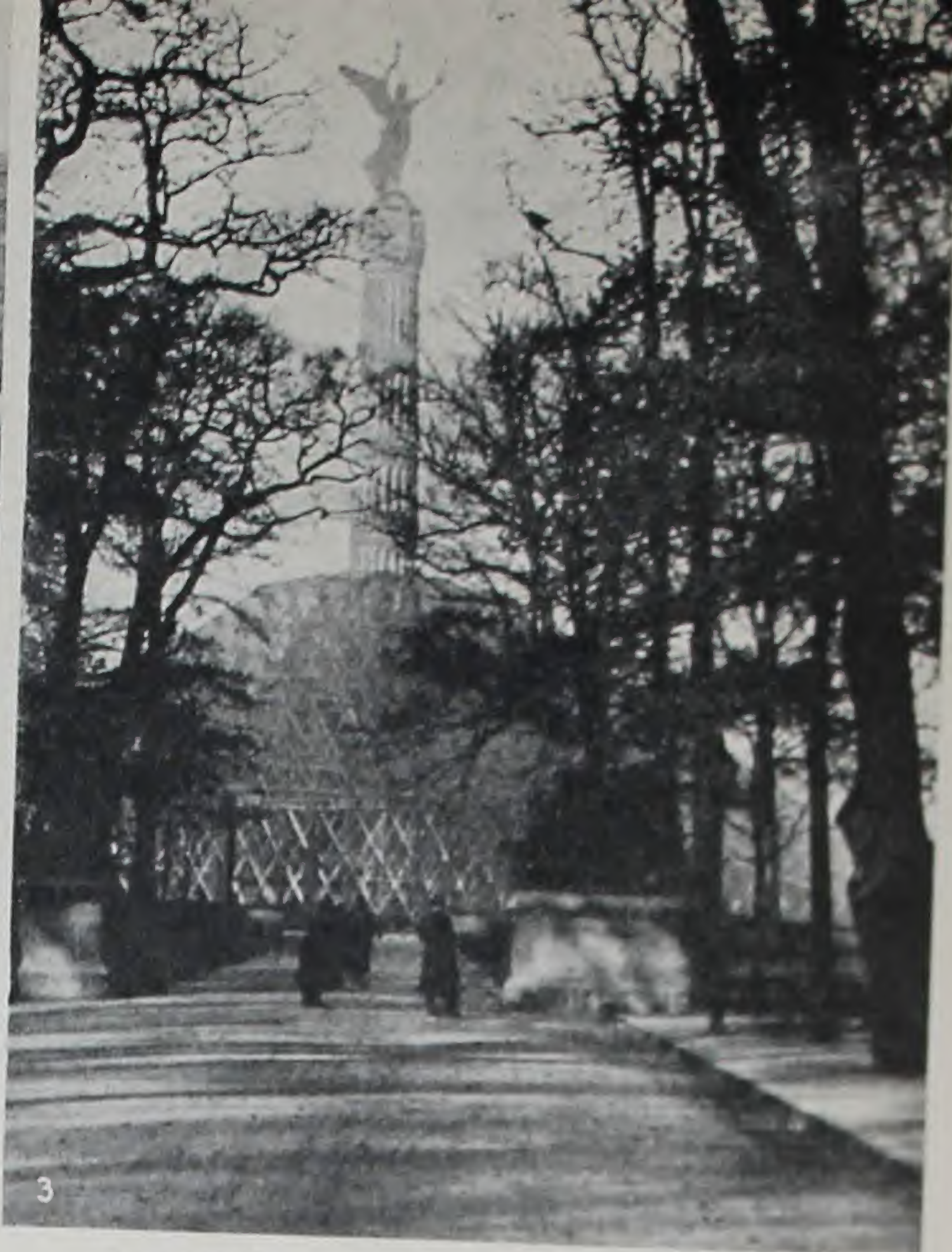
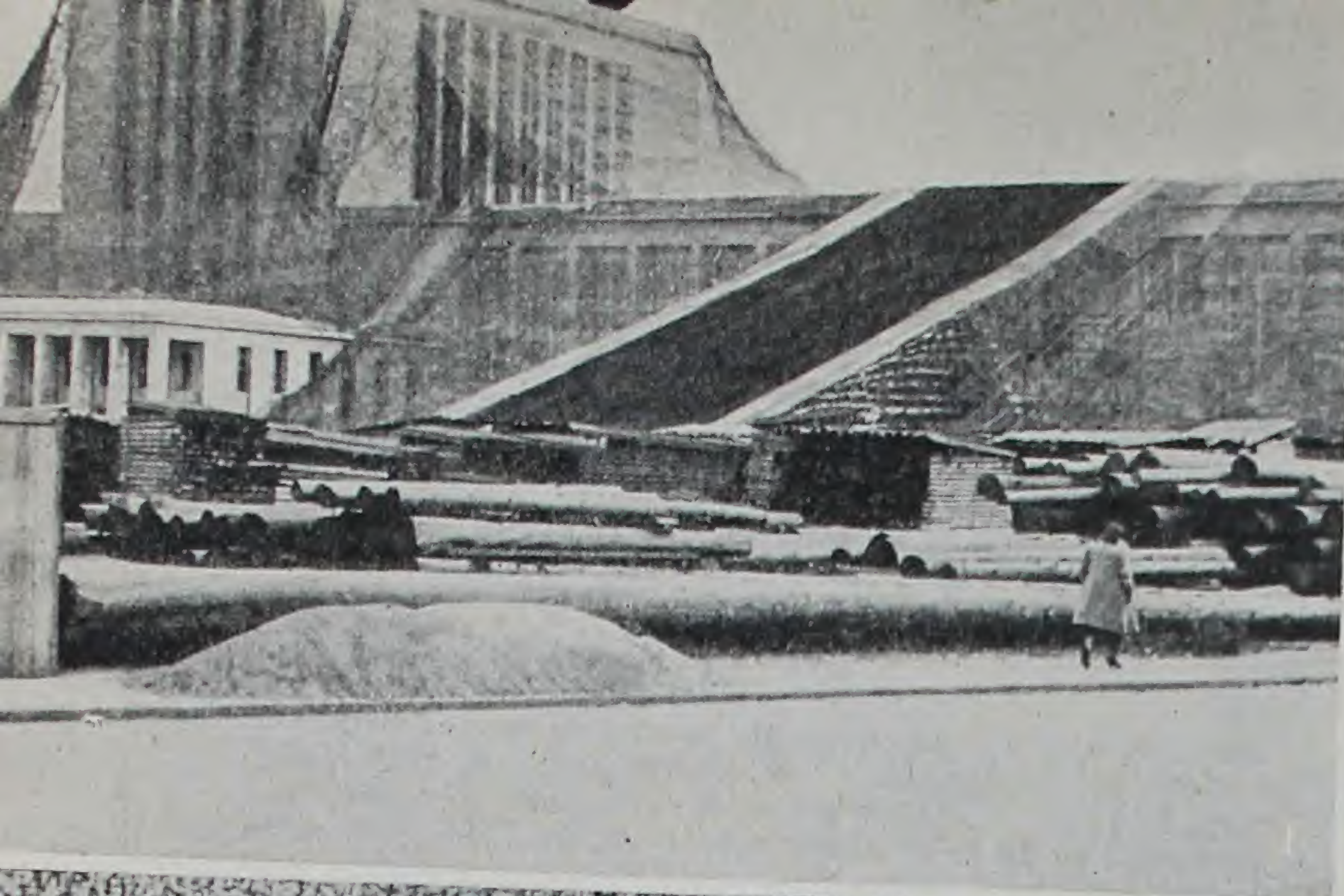
(L.S.) HALIFAX.

His Majesty's Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary at Washington.

On behalf of the Government of the United States of America :

(L.S.) SUMNER WELLES.

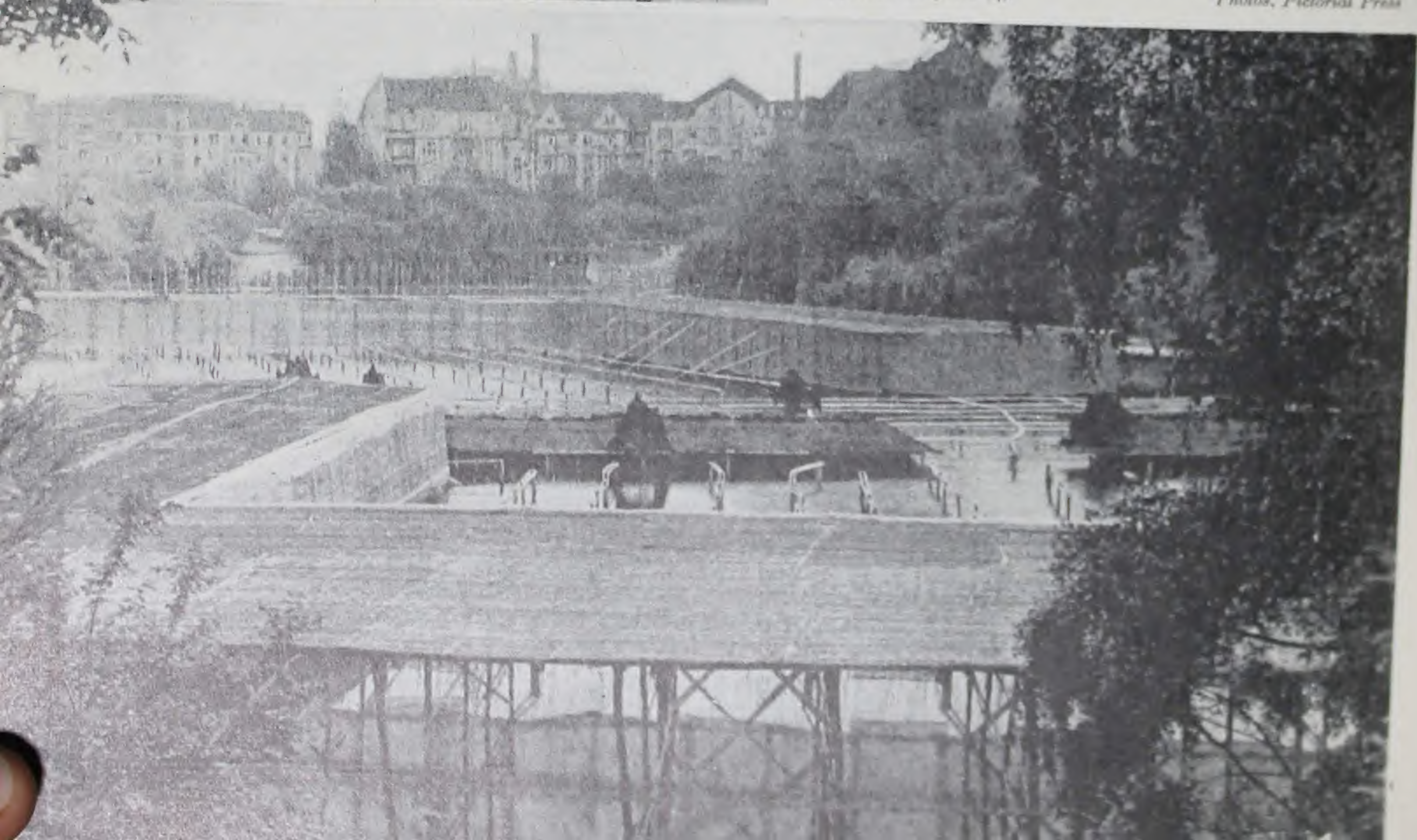
Acting Secretary of State of the United States Government.



CAMOUFLAGE TRIBUTE TO THE R.A.F.

In and around Berlin camouflage against air attack was carried to extremes. By a lavish use of netting an attempt was made to disguise big building blocks so that roads appeared to run across them (1). The pavement of the great east-west traffic artery (2) was hidden by netting on poles, from which the tops of spruce 'trees' protruded; the Victory Column in Grosser Stern, a square on this same thoroughfare, was painted grey and its base concealed by a timber structure (3). On the lake in the Lietzensee park the Germans erected a suburban landscape, with grassy lawns and red rooftops supported on posts (4).

Photos, Pictorial Press



TWELVE MONTHS WHICH MARKED THE TURNING OF THE TIDE IN GERMANY

A review of events on the German Home Front during the 12 months which followed the invasion of Russia. This period saw the first substantial setback to Hitler's armies and the failure of the tactical and strategical methods which had gained him lightning success in Western Europe a year earlier. Inside Germany it was a period of questioning and disillusionment

THE vast conquests by Hitler's armies up to the invasion of Russia had been achieved with about a quarter of a million German casualties. Germany would have been well pleased to call a halt and consolidate her gains, and millions of Hitler's people failed to understand why it was necessary to begin a war with Russia, the ally of two years' standing. But when this new venture seemed to be going well the feelings of surprise, bewilderment and anxiety gave place to satisfaction at the success of yet another of the Fuehrer's master-strokes. From the coveted granary of the Ukraine would come corn to swell the diminishing supplies of the Reich; oil of the Caucasus would soon be available in plenty; above all, the Bolshevik bogey would be laid for good and all.

The many who had been perturbed by the Nazi-Soviet Pact of August 1939 became more easy in mind as that episode was put into its proper perspective as a clever piece of typical Hitlerian strategy. Now they knew where they stood. After the Russian armies had been dealt a few knock-out blows the German forces would advance to Leningrad and Moscow and there dictate a peace which would bring all Europe under German control. The Bolshevik regime would collapse, to be replaced by a collaborationist government ready to work with Hitler. The entire business would be settled before the end of the year. It was an alluring prospect.

Hitler's armies drove back the Russians, and at the end of three

weeks had reached the Stalin Line marking roughly the partitioning of Poland. Germans were told: "The main strength of the Soviet armies is now broken." By early August Smolensk had fallen. Then the Russian armies began gradually to bring the invaders to a halt. Neither Leningrad nor Moscow fell, and the Stalin government was as firm as a rock. Scorched-earth tactics denied food and shelter to the invaders; somewhat plaintively a German newspaper of the time complained that:

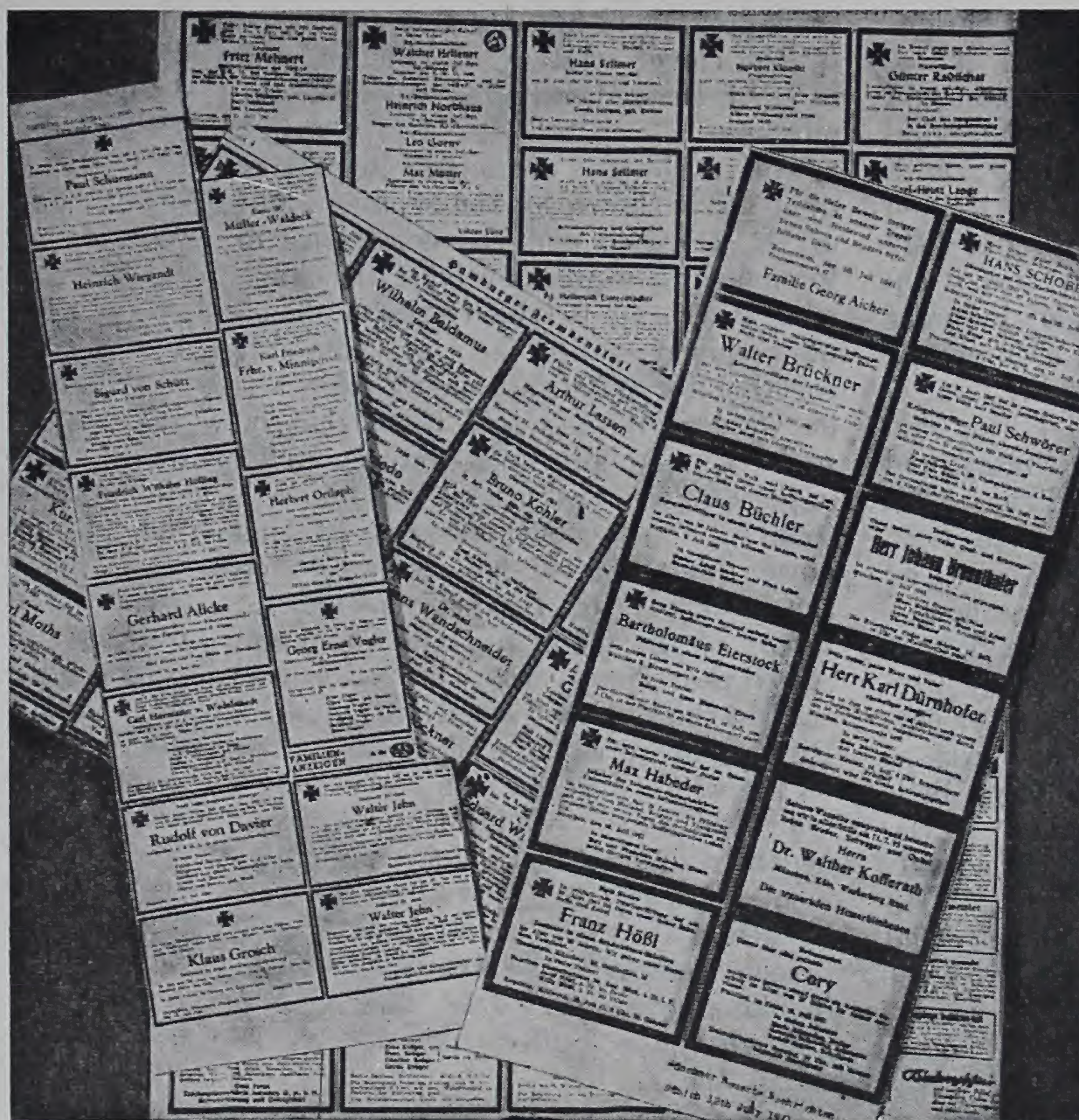
"we have to reckon with the Russians' policy of destroying everything so as to deprive their enemies of every possibility of housing and feeding themselves. . . . Unlike what happened in France (1940) it

is no longer the foreign country but Germany herself which is our true base of supply."

This was a different sort of campaign. Instead of sending home silks and furs and luxury foodstuffs the German soldiers were soon to be clamouring for warm garments to keep out the intense cold. From the Ukraine only half a million tons of corn were obtained to supplement the meagre supplies of Germany, where bread shortage had caused the consumption of potatoes to jump from 13 to 23 million tons. Tractors and lorries and farm machinery had to be sent from the Reich to the Ukraine, with the men to work them.

Casualties were on a very different scale, also. Soon the German newspapers began to have pages filled with

the traditional "In Memoriam" notices: on this page is a photograph of some from the Deutsche Allgemeine Zeitung, Berlin; Hamburger Fremdenblatt; Muenchener Neueste Nachrichten, and the Voelkischer Beobachter, Berlin. (Alarmed by the multitude of death notices the authorities tried to control their publication, and prescribed a brief uniform style. But soon people reverted to the more personal form.) The Voelkischer Beobachter later restricted the number of notices to 20 per day. By the middle of 1942, after a year's campaigning in Russia, the German casualties must have totalled at least 1½ million, of which a million had been sustained on the Eastern front. Increasing drafts for the German army and ancillary services soon began to deplete the supply of



FRACTION OF THE PRICE PAID IN RUSSIA

Most of the memorial notices in these cuttings from newspapers published in Berlin, Hamburg and Cologne during the period July 12-16, 1941, refer to German officers killed on the Russian front. There were so many that newspapers had to ration them, and Goebbels ordered a brief, formal notice to be used in future.

Photo, G.P.U.



FIRST DELIVERY FROM THE COVETED UKRAINE 'GRANARY'

Hitler and other Germans had long coveted the bountiful produce from the fertile black-earth regions of the Ukraine, and one of the first acts of the Nazi gauleiter after German forces entered the country was to dispatch a trainload of butter, poultry, eggs and other food supplies, seen here on arrival in Berlin. As the text explains, the invaders were foiled by the Russian scorched-earth tactics, and obtained little more, while they had to send German labour and machinery to cultivate even that.

Photo, Keystone

labour for agriculture and industry, and this deficit was not fully made up by the war prisoners of various nationalities set to work in the Reich. Three months after the Russian invasion had begun there were over two million foreigners working in Germany, with probably three-quarters of a million prisoners of war. By the spring of 1942 half the agricultural labour was alien, while over the entire field of industry one in four employed was a foreigner.

In his speech in the Berlin Sports-palast on October 3, 1941, Hitler said that Russian prisoners then numbered 2½ millions, while he claimed that more than 14,500 Soviet aircraft had been

Hitler's
Gross Mis-
calculations

destroyed or shot
down; 22,000 guns and
18,000 tanks had been
destroyed. Many Ger-

man listeners appraised these statements by the claim for aircraft, which was so palpably an exaggeration that little credence was given to the rest. Hitler boasted that "this opponent is already broken and will never rise again." His most important utterance was that about a new offensive which was to finish off Russia before the end of the year:

"For 48 hours a gigantic operation has been in progress which will help to defeat the enemy in the East. I am speaking on behalf of those millions who are at present fighting."

This operation, of course, was the drive against Moscow. Dictated as much as anything by domestic politics and

the urgent need to still the mutterings on the German home front, it made swift progress at first but was frustrated by the clever strategy of Zhukov, and in early December Hitler called off the offensive.

The stubborn optimism in official quarters is shown by the strange affair of Dr. Dietrich and the conference of foreign press representatives. Dietrich, who was head of the German official news agency, called the correspondents together for important news—this was on October 9—and told them that 60 to 70 Russian divisions were encircled in pockets, and that Russia was finished, to all intents and purposes, as a fighting power; he wagered his reputation on the accuracy of this statement. A report of the German High Command stated that Timoshenko had "sacrificed the last thoroughly trained and equipped Russian army capable of giving battle on the whole Russian front."

It was small wonder that Germans began to distrust the official announcements blazed out by loudspeakers erected in the main streets, and listened in secret to foreign broadcasts. Goebbels, in his newspaper *Das Reich*, castigated these "unteachables," as he called them:

"Two death sentences and recent terms of penal servitude prove that some people cannot refrain in the evening, behind closed doors, from secretly turning on to the London broadcasts in order to enrich their political and military knowledge with British misrepresentation."

Such listeners may have heard Russian figures for the German losses on the Eastern Front: over 3,000,000 men killed, wounded or taken prisoner; 9,000 aircraft shot down.

Another matter that worried the German people was the worsening of relations with America. There were uneasy memories of the effect of American participation in 1917. Officially inspired attacks on the President appeared in the newspapers early in July. One journal called Mr. Roosevelt "Number 1 Aggressor." In another was a denial of an imaginary report that Germany would break off diplomatic relations with the U.S.A.

One way in which the Nazis sought to divert wrath from themselves for the Russian set-back was to blame the Jews. Since, it was argued, the Jews in Russia were destroying crops and burning buildings, besides wreaking cruelties on Hitler's

Mass
Deportations
of Jews

soldiers, all Jews in Germany would henceforth be marked and distinguishable for what they were. The yellow badge of the Star of David would be worn on the left breast. But this campaign missed fire, except for organized rowdyism and brutality. People in general were sympathetic with the branded unfortunates, and shopkeepers even risked prosecution for supplying them with more than the permitted amounts of foodstuffs. Simultaneously there started (September 1941) a mass deportation of Jews to Poland. It began in Hanover and soon spread through the old Reich and the Greater Reich. All through the autumn and winter these evictions went on.

Though British raids on Berlin sent hundreds of thousands scurrying to shelters every time the alarm sounded, the physical damage inflicted in the earlier and lighter attacks was not great. Berlin was much camouflaged; dummy suburbs were built in wood and canvas outside the city, and dummy fires were lighted at night to decoy our bombers. The anti-aircraft defences were immensely strong. On the anniversary of the big raids on London the R.A.F. visited Berlin (night of September 7-8, 1941), and from before midnight until nearly 4 a.m. dropped bombs on the centre and suburbs. A month earlier there had been the first of the Russian air attacks, when a single bomber had taken the defences completely by surprise and had dropped two bombs outside the Stettiner railway station. Later there were six more raids by Russian airmen, and though the damage done was not great these events served to increase confusion

and further weaken morale. Concentrated raids on industrial targets were another matter. On July 6-8 1941 there was the devastating three-night attack on Münster, when possibly a quarter of the city was wrecked.

A feature of the German defences was the concrete and steel tower, a hundred feet high, to accommodate an A.A.

Flak-Towers to Defend Berlin

battery with its locators and searchlights. The lower part of the structure was designed as a shelter. Such towers were erected at key-points, and other batteries were placed on the tops of specially strengthened existing buildings. Camouflage was carried to enormous lengths, when entire streets would be roofed over with green netting, and lakes and railway stations, for example, would be disguised in similar manner with netting and canvas. At the beginning this may have misled our bombers, but the ruse was soon penetrated.

A cross-section of German morale during the first six months of the Russian venture is given by an analysis of letters to German soldiers on the Eastern Front, made by the Soviet authorities. Some 16,000 letters were

examined, all found either on the battlefield or on captured Germans. Letters written from June to August 1941 displayed resentment at the war in 18.5 per cent, increased in November and December to 75 per cent, and in January 1942 to 77 per cent. Three-quarters of the letters sent from Germany to the Eastern front expressed dejection, discontent, complaints and indignation against the war. In the period September-October, 1941, 81 per cent of letters contained complaints connected with losses; 64 per cent complaints about the protractedness of the war; 30 per cent about the air raids on German cities; and 19 per cent about food difficulties. (Soviet War News, April 9, 1942.) It confirms this analysis when we note that Goebbels admonished housewives not to write complaining letters to their menfolk at the front.

Although food rations were meagre there was no dire shortage; the lack of fats pressed most hardly upon all. Meat was cut to three ounces per person per week in August; butter was reduced to two ounces in September, and skimmed milk was substituted for some of the fat ration. Peasants were forbidden to sell their

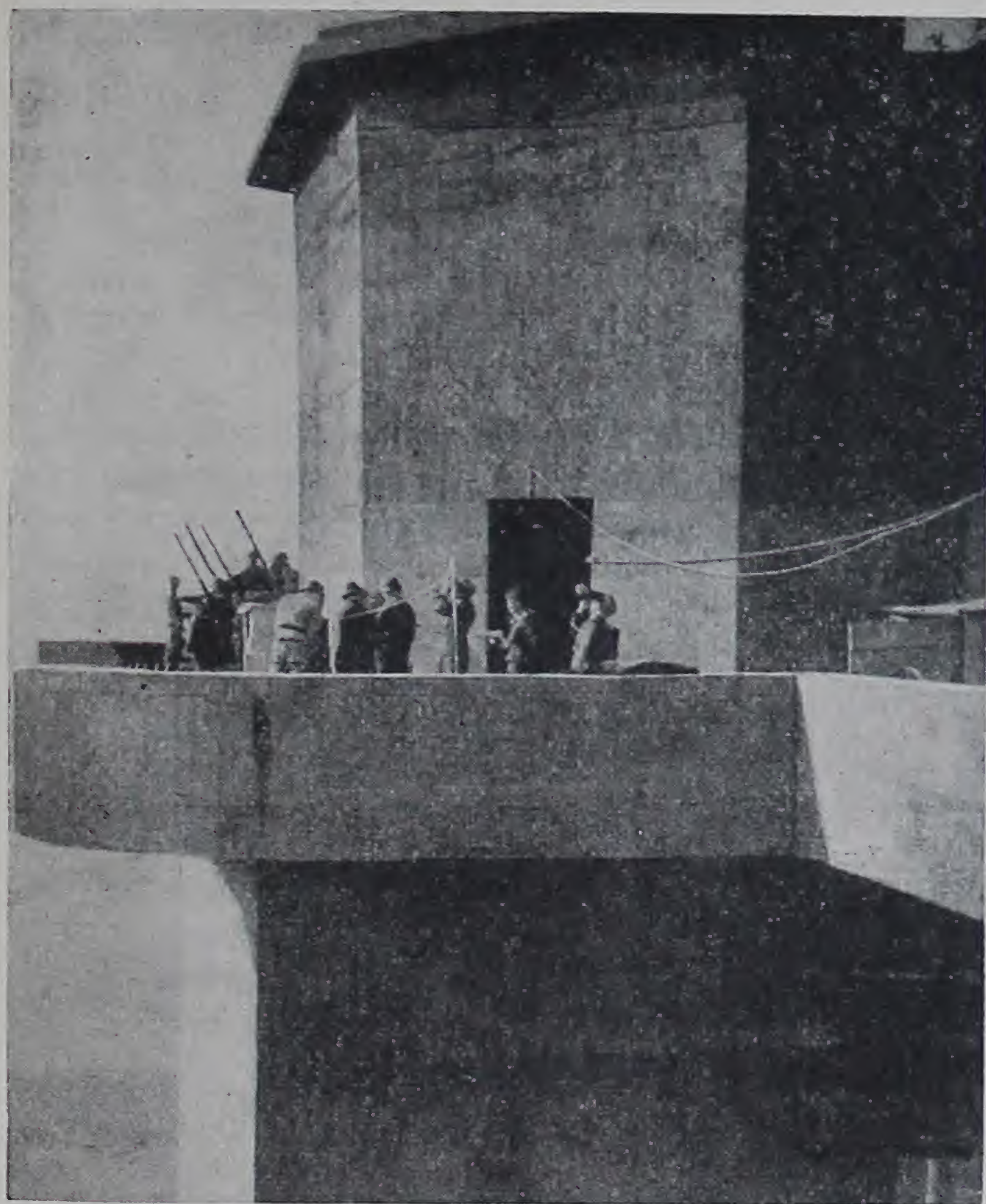
produce otherwise than through authorized channels, but speculators greedily bought up what they could persuade the farmers to sell. In this connexion two peasants were prosecuted for a strange attempt to hoodwink the local police. With a girl in bridal dress between them on the seat they stopped their lorry outside an inn and went inside for refreshment. To an inquiry why the girl would not join them they said that she was going to the neighbouring town to be married by proxy to a soldier in Russia, and felt a little "blue." They stayed drinking so long that a curious policeman strolled up and spoke to the bride-to-be. When she made no reply he investigated—to find that beneath the wedding garments was a slaughtered hog which the peasants were



STAR OF DAVID BADGE FOR JEWS IN GERMAN TERRITORY

A Jewish business man who, like all Jews in Germany, was compelled to wear on the left breast the six-pointed yellow star. Posters on the hoardings at this date (a few months after Hitler's invasion of Russia) told people that 'He who bears this mark is an enemy of our nation.'

Photo, Keystone



AT THE ALERT ON A GERMAN FLAK-TOWER

Anti-aircraft batteries were mounted on high towers of steel and concrete sited in cities and industrial areas. In some cases the lower part of the structure was utilized as an air-raid shelter.

Other batteries were installed on existing high buildings.

Photo, Associated Press

taking to sell clandestinely in the town not far away.

In June 1941 the meat ration stood as follows, per week per person:

Ordinary workers	Night workers	Heavy workers	Very heavy workers
400 grams	600 grams	800 grams	1,000 grams

After a reduction in April 1942 the allowance became:

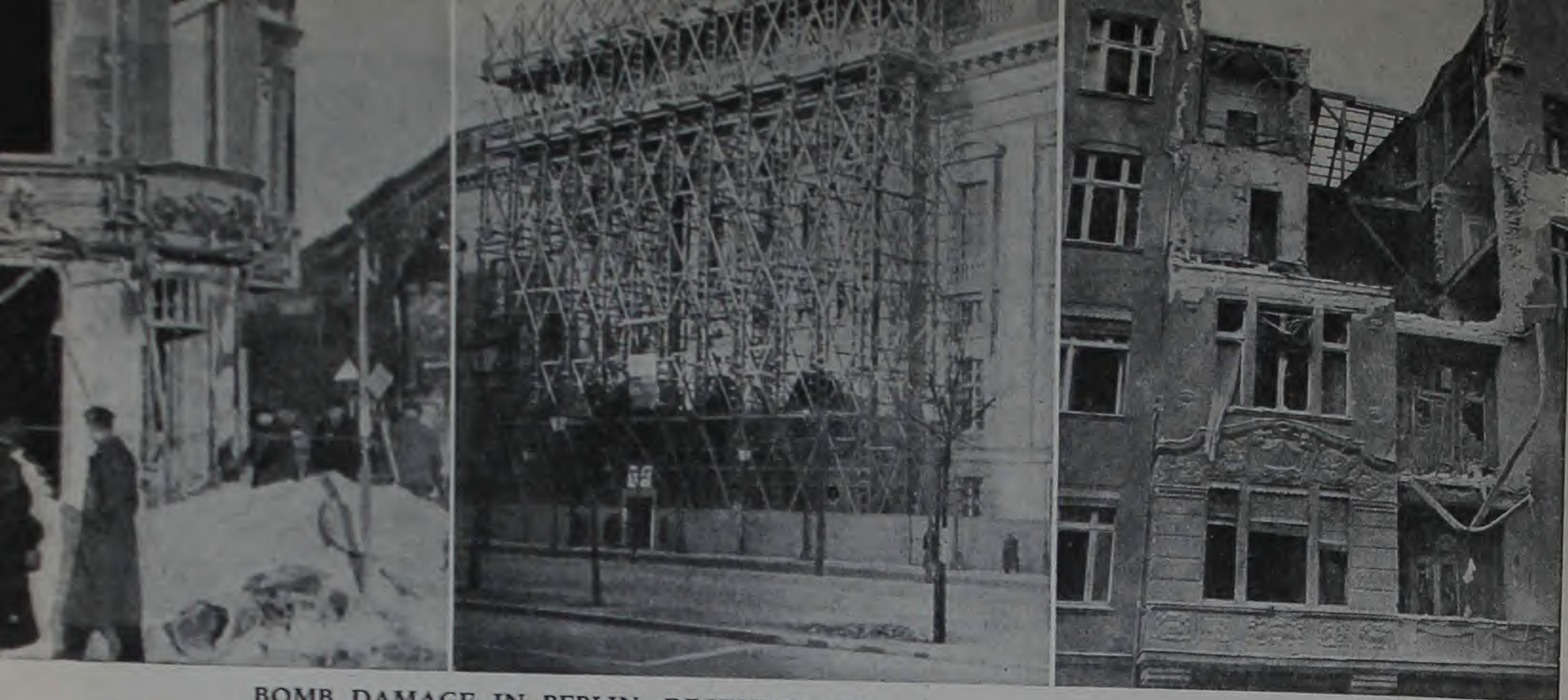
Ordinary workers	Night workers	Heavy workers	Very heavy workers
300 grams	450 grams	600 grams	850 grams

In October 1942 there was an increase, and Goebbels made much of it, coining the slogan "The War Works For Us":

Ordinary workers	Night workers	Heavy workers	Very heavy workers
350 grams	550 grams	700 grams	950 grams

But, as will be observed, the weekly ration still stood below that of June 1941. Moreover, the official rations could not always be obtained at the shops.

In August-September, 1941, there was a significant limitation of "Brownshirt" activities. The S.A. (*Sturm-Abteilung*, i.e. storm-troopers) had been Hitler's striking force during the climb to power, and had been rewarded with honours and high places since that victory of 1933. It had suffered in the purge of 1934, and had seen the swift



BOMB DAMAGE IN BERLIN, DECEMBER 1941

After concealing and minimizing the effects of R.A.F. and Russian raids for a long while the Germans changed their policy and began to 'play-up' bomb-damage in their propaganda—when it had greatly increased in degree and could no longer be hidden from the people. Left, in Tauentzienstrasse after the R.A.F. raid of December 20-21, 1941; centre, repair work on the Prussian State Library building, Unter den Linden; right, in Meinekestrasse.

Photos, Pictorial Press

growth of a rival party army, the S.S. (*Schutz-staffel*, i.e. protective squadron). But, under Viktor Luetze, it went on giving para-military training to hundreds of thousands, and from the beginning of the Second Great War had constituted a leaven of sound party men in each company of troops at the various fronts. In August 1941 (this is given on the authority of Howard K. Smith, Berlin correspondent of *United Press**) the official journal of the S.A., the *S.A. Mann*, was discontinued and a ban was placed on district S.A. meetings. The familiar brown uniforms were henceforth to be worn only on specific orders.

Concurrently there was an enlargement of the S.S.—in numbers, in duties, and in authority. Its supreme commander, Heinrich Himmler, was also chief of the Gestapo (*Geheime Staatspolizei*, i.e. secret State police).

Hitler's
Personal
Army

The *Waffen-S.S.* (armed or military S.S.) was thrown into the struggle on the Eastern front, in time of emergency, though its nominal duties were policing the region of combat and dealing with guerillas and underground enemies. This organization was built up into a separate army numbering probably half a million, with divisions in the occupied countries and others in Germany itself. These were in addition to the ordinary S.S., occupied with police work such as the rounding up of Jews, supervision of factories and other

industrial concerns, and various duties connected with civilian Germany. Hitler soon withdrew his *Waffen-S.S.* divisions from the Russian front, where it seems they had been thrown in only when it seemed likely that a swift decision might have been possible. Probably the main object of this force was to serve as a buckler between the leading Nazis and any possible uprising. With its separate training establishments and its unorthodox methods of recruiting, the *Waffen-S.S.* stood apart from the *Reichswehr*, with a direct individual allegiance to Hitler. It could be employed, if need should arise, as his personal army against the *Reichswehr* generals and their following.

On November 8, 1941, Hitler made his customary oration to the Old Guard of the Munich Putsch of 1923. He was still making fantastic claims of success in the Russian campaign, and still apparently confident that his glowing prophecies would be fulfilled. Boldly he declared: "Never before has a gigantic empire been smashed in a shorter period than has Soviet Russia this time." After stating that the Germans had taken 3,600,000 prisoners he went on to calculate that on this basis there must have been a total loss of at least 8 to 10 million Soviet soldiers. "No army can ever recover from such losses, not even the Russians." Russian territory occupied, Hitler went on to claim, represented an area about five times as large as England, comprising about 60 to 75 per cent of all industries and raw materials in Russia. About

Leningrad Hitler made an admission and a boast.

"We are now on the defensive, and the other side must attempt to break through. I shall certainly not sacrifice one more man than is absolutely necessary. The city is encircled and no one will ever free it. It will fall into our hands."

A fortnight later Rostov was recaptured, and the Russian counter-offensive became general along the entire front early in December. But official propaganda was still in the strain of cheerful confidence. The fact was, of course, that the blitzkrieg had failed and that instead there had to be waged a long war in which infantry would now have to take the shock and do the hardest work. Official spokesmen began to lift the veil a few weeks later, when it must have become obvious that the truth could no longer be concealed from the people at home. A winter campaign with all its horrors and hardships—its fears and worries for the womenfolk—was unavoidable.

Switch
in
Propaganda

Writing in the *Voelkischer Beobachter* in mid-December, an official historian admitted that the German High Command had underestimated the strength and efficiency of the enemy; that they had belatedly come to realize that, man for man, the Russian soldier was at least the equal of the German. Then official propaganda changed to a stressing of the discomforts, even miseries, of the men at the front as the temperature fell to 25 degrees below freezing point. On December 11 Hitler addressed the Reichstag. He announced the Axis declaration of war against the United States, and said that Germany had signed an agreement with Italy and Japan not to conclude an armistice or

* "Last Train from Berlin," London, Cresset Press.

peace with the United States or Great Britain except in complete mutual agreement. He made the usual fantastic statement about Russian casualties and losses, and put those for Germany at: 162,314 dead; 577,767 wounded; and 33,334 missing. "On the Eastern front it was only the outbreak of winter that could check the German operations, but with the coming of summer there would be no further check." The German soldiers had fought in the winter storms of November and December, freezing in snow and ice. Most of his speech was given up to abuse of President Roosevelt.

The German radio hinted at coming movements to the west, when the Russian front had been stabilized. The *Westdeutsche Beobachter* spoke of the complete change in the world picture.

"After June 22 we turned again towards the east. Today, six months afterwards, we know that nothing was as we had expected it to be."

On December 12 *Das Reich* (Goebbels's organ) said:

"Our German unity is only of recent date. We are still bearing the scars from the divisions of the old party politics. Carefully and jealously we have to watch that they do not reopen even in a single place."

The plain warning given by Hitler in his speech had pointed to considerable apprehension on the Home front:

"At a time when thousands of our best men are dying nobody must expect to live who tries to depreciate the sacrifices made at the front. No matter under what camouflage he tries to disturb this German front or to undermine the resistance of our people, or to weaken the authority of the regime, or to sabotage the achievements on the Home front, he shall die for it."

In a Berlin communiqué of December 17 there came the news that shortenings of the front were being undertaken according to plan for the transition from offensive operations to positional warfare in winter. On December 19 Hitler dismissed Field-Marshal von Brauchitsch and himself took over the command of the German army. The official proclamation declared that reasons of State demanded that all powers should be concentrated in one hand.

"The realization of an inward call and his own will to take upon himself responsibility weighed with the statesman Adolf Hitler when he resolved to be his own Generalissimo." The announcement went on to enumerate the factors which had "induced the Fuehrer to follow his intuitions and to influence in the strongest

possible manner the operations and equipment of the decisions in this sphere."

Hitler made a long appeal to the German army at the same time.

Goebbels next day (20th) broadcast an appeal for gifts of warm clothing for soldiers at the front, and read a message from Hitler. Door-to-door collections of clothing would be made from December 27 to January 4—felt-lined boots, jack boots, socks, stockings, underclothing, pullovers, scarves, gloves, blankets and ground sheets. "Those at home," said Goebbels, "will not deserve a single peaceful hour if even one soldier . . . were to be exposed to the rigours of winter without adequate equipment."

On the night of December 20-21 there was a British raid which underlined the growing power of the R.A.F. A vivid description was given by Joseph W. Grigg, Jr., of the United Press staff.*

"There were two separate alarms, and planes flew over the city at intervals for the greater part of the night. The flak barrage, which had been strengthened since its early fiascos, kept up a non-stop crashing which rocked the office where I happened to have night duty. The all-clear sounded at 7 a.m., but as the weary, under-slept Berliners crawled grumbling from their shelters, a British plane turned about, flew back, and dropped a couple more bombs. A great cloud of smoke billowed over the downtown district from a fire in a big department store in the Alexanderplatz, a stone's throw from the Secret Police headquarters. Two bombs, aimed

possibly at the near-by Zoo station, landed plumb in the middle of the broad Tauentzienstrasse, in the West End, blew out store windows right and left and smashed through on to the subway tracks beneath. Factories started work hours late that morning, papers were not delivered, there was no bread in the bakeries, the whole life of the capital was in chaos until early noon."

On Christmas Eve Goebbels broadcast in gloomy strain, telling the Home front to become worthy of the soldiers at the front. Ribbentrop painted the horrors and misfortunes which would ensue if the people did not support the soldiers in their fight. Not only the Nazi regime but the entire people were involved.

It was Germany's hardest Christmas. The *Frankfurter Zeitung*, after saying



COUNTING HIS GAINS

In a speech at the Berlin Sportspalast on October 3, 1941, Hitler made extravagant claims of successes, and said that Russia was already broken and would never rise again. Below, left, a German sentry on the Russian front wears a woman's fur coat. All sorts of strange apparel were used to supplement inadequate official issues.

Photos, Associated Press

this, pointed out that the tasks that the German people had to face were never greater and graver. The *Hamburger Fremdenblatt* said:

"There had never been anything harder than the fight of the infantry before Moscow. In their worn-out overcoats, with green hoods on their heads full of frozen breath, steel helmets covered with old shirts, they look more like old peasant women."

This calculated gloominess had a purpose. Nazi propaganda could not ignore

* "This is the Enemy," Frederick Oeschner and others. Wm. Heinemann, Ltd., London.



the prevailing depression and discontent on the Home front, and the next best thing was to sublimate this mood and direct the mawkish sentiment of which German character is so largely compounded into a harmless, and perhaps useful, channel. By dwelling on the hardships of the menfolk in Russia attention might be diverted from the grotesque mismanagement by Hitler and the High Command which had brought about the catastrophe that threatened on the Eastern front. However, grumbles such as those in the following extract from *Das Reich* show that a substantial number of people were not toeing the line:

"But certain people, especially those who are little affected by the war, have grown accustomed to take their small, often negligible, daily troubles much too seriously. . . . When, at Christmas, railwaymen have to carry potatoes, coal and vegetables for the Home front, and arms, munitions, woollen clothing and provisions to the battle front, and have therefore no time to convey pleasure-seekers to Oberhof or Garmisch, the grievance becomes the subject of hours of excited discussion. . . . They seem to regard the soldier as one whose business it is to win the conflict for them. Some people complain when *Deutschlandsender* is switched off because of air-raid dangers, as if they really could not be expected to take the trouble to find some other German broadcasting station."

Bearing in mind the drilling and training and regimentation the Germans had been subject to during the pre-war and war years under Nazi rule, it



NEW HEAD FOR THE 'ORGANIZATION-TODT'

Dr. Fritz Todt (he held the military rank of Major-General) was killed in an air accident during February 1942. He was succeeded by Professor Speer (right), here seen being congratulated by Goering (centre) on his appointment as Minister of Munitions, and Inspector of Roads and Water and Power.

Right-hand photo, Sport & General

is remarkable that there were so many grumblers that Goebbels had to take them to task in this way.

So the New Year opened with the Eastern armies involved in a bitter conflict in which for the first time they had to yield ground to the enemy. Euphemisms like "shortening of the front" and "positional warfare" did not delude the Home front. The bubble of German invincibility had been pricked; the advantage gained by a treacherous onslaught and the long years of arming had been evened out. It was now indeed a fight for existence

against the ever-growing might of the Allies. The war might go on for years more. Already there was official talk of a coming spring offensive. The thoughts of the older people went back to the grim years of 1917 and 1918—to the defeat and the lean decade that followed.

Various changes were made in the army commands. Von Bock had been retired in December at about the time of Von Brauchitsch's dismissal. On January 17 came a brief announcement of the death of Field-Marshal Walther von Reichenau, Commander-in-Chief of the army group before Moscow. He had had a stroke, said the terse official statement, and died on his way back to Germany. Reichenau was in his early fifties, an athletic and robust man who had distinguished himself in the Polish campaign, where he swam the Vistula at the head of his men, and in the drive through the Low Countries and France. After the collapse of France he had been promoted Field-Marshal. At the close of the 1914-18 war he had been a Major. Von Bock was brought back to succeed Reichenau. Other leaders, including Von Rundstedt and Guderian, had dropped out owing, it was stated, to ill-health, which seems a flimsy excuse, since several were soon reinstated in commands.

Early in January it was given out that half a million fur coats, 2½ million pairs of stockings, and 1½ million jerseys had been collected for the soldiers in Russia. A strange item in this list was 3,714,630 shawls. On the 30th, in Berlin, Hitler addressed Nazi party members and some soldiers from the Eastern front. He said that the worst was behind in Russia, and in the spring



GOEBBELS INSPECTS AN EMERGENCY WAREHOUSE IN COLOGNE

Testimony to the damage inflicted by R.A.F. raids on industrial buildings, the German caption of this photograph states that it shows a temporary warehouse established after the original one had been wrecked by British bombs. On the shelves and benches are service blankets. Goebbels at front, left.

Photo, Associated Press

they would start rebuilding. "How this year will end, I do not know," he went on. "Whether it will bring victory I do not know . . . but wherever the enemy appears we shall break him. This year will again be a year of victory." As in other speeches, he insisted that there would not be another 1918. Doubtless he realized only too well that in the minds of older Germans there was ever present the spectre of defeat. However much many of them might dislike the Nazi regime they would support it and him rather than face the prospect of a military collapse like that of 1918, with its aftermath of hunger, humiliation and inflation. Hitler pointed out that the only road open to Germany was that of fighting and success, which was true enough as long as the Germans adhered to him and his confederates.

Major-General Fritz Todt, Minister of Munitions and the organizer of the vast work behind the German fighting fronts, was killed in an air accident in February, and Professor Speer was appointed to succeed him. Another

Death of Dr. Todt appointment, a few weeks earlier, had been that of Jakob Werlin as inspector-general of the motor vehicle department, responsible only to Hitler. Transport problems had been worsened by the R.A.F. attacks and the consequent transfer of many manufacturing plants eastward. Over the head of Seldte, Minister of Labour, a controller was appointed in the person of Dr. Mansfeld; at the end of March Mansfeld was superseded by Fritz Sauckel, Gauleiter of Thuringia.

Evidently more forceful methods than those of Mansfeld were needed. Ley, leader of the Labour Front, had been touring the country to stimulate production, and had told workers that, though they often worked 16 hours daily, they must demonstrate to the world that, like the soldiers of Germany, they were the best in the world. The Labour Ministry invented the slogan: "Two to Produce as Much as Three." In April Sauckel issued a decree that school children from the age of ten upwards were to work on the land "in short spells or uninterruptedly, according to agricultural requirements." This was to be in force until November.

A reduction in fat, meat and bread rations was announced on March 19, and came into force on April 6 (see page 2163). It was due, said the official explanation, to the fact that very large numbers of foreign workers and prisoners of war had to be fed. Later, Goebbels stated in *Das Reich* that a postponement of such cuts would have resulted, within six to eight weeks, in



DOENITZ WELCOMES JAPANESE SUBMARINE COMMANDER

The German caption claims that a Japanese 'submarine-cruiser' visited a 'naval stronghold' on the French Atlantic coast and that such craft were cooperating with the Germans in the Atlantic. Admiral Doenitz, commander of the German submarine forces, is here seen as he greets the Japanese commander.

Photo, Associated Press

more serious difficulties in the food situation. Weather conditions had been bad for agriculture during the previous two years; potatoes were short everywhere, and some towns had no vegetables. (Potatoes were soon afterwards rationed at 5 lb. per head per week.) On May 23 Walther Darre, Minister for Agriculture, was replaced by Backe.

Hitler spoke at a Berlin commemoration of the war dead on March 15, 1942:

"Only today do we realize the full extent of the preparations of our enemies. Whatever fate lies in store for us it can only be less onerous than what lies behind us. The Bolsheviks, who could not defeat the German troops and their allies in one winter, will be annihilatingly defeated by us in the coming summer."

On April 26 Hitler addressed the Reichstag. He asked for new powers—

"the legal right to compel everyone to do his duty, and if, in my opinion and in accordance with my conscience, he does not carry out his duties, to dismiss him irrespective of who he is or what acquired rights he may possess. . . . I therefore expect German justice to understand that the German nation does not exist for the convenience of that justice, but that justice exists to serve the nation."

Here was a clear and unmistakable exposition of the Nazi creed. Goering, who spoke next, named Hitler supreme law lord, and a decree to this effect was approved by the Reichstag. For the disasters on the Russian front Hitler blamed the early and severe winter—the worst winter, he said, for 140 years. "We have mastered a fate that broke another man 130 years ago," he said,

referring to the defeat of Napoleon I. As to the air war, he charged Britain with having started the bombing of civilians, and said that from now on he would repay blow for blow.

Beginning with the big raid on Luebeck on the night of March 28-29, the R.A.F. had gone on to batter Rostock on four consecutive nights (April 23-26), while Augsburg had been bombed in daylight on April 17. The Luftwaffe countered, on the night of April 24-25, with a "reprisal" raid on Exeter—a fairly safe operation. Then, after our thousand-bomber raid on Cologne (May 30-31), Hitler sent his airmen to attack Canterbury the following night. But the R.A.F. made two more thousand-bomber attacks—on Essen (June 1-2) and Bremen (June 25-26)—while Luebeck and Flensburg were bombed in daylight on July 16. At last, under these massive blows, Germany's war industry began to suffer, while civilian morale was affected. Cold comfort was given by a Kiel newspaper which said that the best shelter was a strong heart, and not concrete. After the Rostock bombings the *Hamburger Fremdenblatt* said that it was entirely senseless to travel to Rostock, because the inhabitants left long ago for places like Mecklenburg.

The A.R.P. services seem to have gone to pieces under the heavy blows oft repeated, for at the end of May, after the raid on Cologne, Himmler took over control and the S.S. everywhere were placed in charge of A.R.P.

The move suggests that workers were becoming restive and were leaving the neighbourhood of much-bombed towns. Evacuation was strictly regulated; women and even children, "needed for work in the town," were obliged to remain.

In Hitler's speeches and in other official utterances there was apparent a realization that until Britain had been brought to her knees Germany's gains could not be consolidated. Indeed, the "New Order" could hardly proceed until the island enemy had been laid low once for all, and the chosen weapon was the U-boat, since the Luftwaffe had failed. On January 30 Hitler had said that:

"on the seas our submarines have been smashing Roosevelt's plans. He intended . . . to drive the German submarine from the ocean and to leave only a tiny channel to be defended by the British; and this was the reason for the fall in the sinkings of vessels. It was not due to a shortage of submarines; on the contrary, the number of submarines had increased enormously."

The Japanese attack had relieved Germany of fear in the American quarter, he continued.

The man entrusted with submarine warfare was Vice-Admiral Karl Doenitz, U-boat Oberleutnant during the First Great War. On October 1918 he had been captured in the Mediterranean off Malta, and went into a British prison camp till the end of the war. A zealot to whom the rising Nazi party gave free rein, he built up a great submarine force and introduced the system by which these craft could be constructed in quantity inland and transported in parts to the assembly yards at the coast—much as is done with mass-produced cargo vessels today. At the head of the German navy was Grand Admiral Erich Raeder, who had built up the fleets as Doenitz had the underwater squadrons. (Later Raeder was to be superseded by Doenitz, who was 15 years his junior.) In October 1941 Hitler had spoken of a change in war production, and had said that in large sections Germany had been able to stop manufacture. The truth was probably that a shift had been made

to the production of U-boat parts and components.

The U-boat squadrons moved to the waters off America, and for a time had things much their own way. There was a shortage of escort vessels, and U.S. merchantmen had at that date not been provided with defensive armament. In his speech of April 26 Hitler said: "German U-boats are making themselves more and more felt. Numbers increase from month to month in a regular flow. Today the highest figure in the world war is left far behind."

route. But the traffic could not be stopped.

In conclusion, a few facts may be given about Germany's relations with her allies and victims; more will be found in other Chapters dealing specifically with those countries. Quisling and Terboven visited Hitler on February 13, 1942, and were made much of. Quisling, before returning to Norway, proclaimed that country's fidelity, gratitude and devotion to Hitler. From Rumania, Antonescu had been summoned, and was received by Hitler in company

with Keitel and Ribbentrop on February 11; nothing but the usual platitudes about "faithful friendship" and "fighting in brotherhood side by side" were published about this meeting, but it probably meant new demands upon Rumania's man-power and industry, and it was said that 16 divisions had been asked for by Germany. Of different stuff was the conference between Hitler and Mussolini at Salzburg (April 29-May 1). Military and air leaders of both sides were present at the discussions, which were concerned mainly with the Mediterranean situation or with demands for reinforcements on the Russian front. German newspapers went out of their way to deny rumours that Italy wanted a separate peace. From Switzerland Hitler was said to have demanded 75 locomotives as a price for continued coal supplies.

On June 4, 1942, Hitler visited Marshal Mannerheim, ostensibly to greet him on his 75th birthday. Leading generals accompanied the Fuehrer. The Finns had been growing restive and had shown that they were ready, for their part, to conclude peace. The German set-back in the past winter had alarmed Finland, and Hitler's visit had the object of allaying this apprehension. In this he seems to have succeeded, but the position, both economic and military, at the end of June was a difficult one for the Nazis. All would depend on the fortunes of the coming offensive, for which there had been unparalleled preparation during the last few months.

Aus deutscher Kriegsgefangenschaft

Der französische General Giraud geflüchtet

Berlin, 25. April.

Der französische General Giraud, der sich in deutscher Kriegsgefangenschaft befand, ist aus der Festung Königstein geflüchtet.

Dem General war wegen seines Gesundheitszustandes größere Bewegungsfreiheit gewährt worden. Er machte sich dieses Entgegenkommen zunutze und entfloh.

100 000 RM. Belohnung

Jeder, der dem entflohenen General bei seiner Flucht behilflich ist, wird mit dem Tode bestraft. Für die Ergreifung des Generals sind 100 000 RM. Belohnung ausgesetzt. Der nebenstehend abgebildete General Giraud ist 1,82 bis 1,85 m groß, schlank, hat graue Haare und grauen Schnurrbart und spricht deutsch mit französischem Akzent. Sachdienliche Mitteilungen nimmt jede Wehrmacht- und Polizeidienststelle entgegen.



General Giraud
PK.-Aufn.: Kriegerber. Smolarczyk (PBZ.)

100,000 REICHSMARKS FOR HIS RECAPTURE

Dated April 25, 1942, this German advertisement offers the sum for the recapture of General Henri Giraud. Taken prisoner on May 20, 1940 (see illus., p. 856), he had been a prisoner of war in the fortress of Koenigstein, whence he escaped in April and made his way via Switzerland to Vichy. In November 1942 he escaped from France by submarine and went to North Africa to command the French forces fighting there with the Allies.

Photo, "New York Times" Photos

The other main objective, after the submarine war against Britain and America, was the checking of convoys to Russia. In February the battleships "Scharnhorst" and "Gneisenau" had broken out of Brest, together with the heavy cruiser "Prinz Eugen." They had reached the comparative safety of North Sea ports, though battered en route and after getting there. From German and Norwegian harbours surface craft and submarines, aided by aircraft, sallied out to shell, bomb and torpedo Allied merchantmen and escorts on the northern route to Russia, for much aid was reaching the Soviet by this

NAZI-OCCUPIED EUROPE: DENMARK, NORWAY, BELGIUM AND HOLLAND

Covering the eighteen months July 1941 to December 1942, this Chapter is based on information made available by the Free Governments and the Danish Council in London. The story is necessarily incomplete, for reasons of security but it sheds a light on the perils, hardships, courage and achievements of our loyal allies languishing under Gestapo rule

ALLOWING for local diversities, Nazi policy in the occupied countries of the west was similar in fundamentals. As long as there was a reasonable chance of collaboration or of tolerance by the inhabitants and local administrations the German officials permitted a degree of autonomy and a semblance of freedom, while taking all military measures which seemed at the moment to be necessary. In the Netherlands and Belgium they had been eager to persuade the people that the war had ended, and that once the fact of German conquest had been accepted, life would go on much as before. Obviously this move, if it succeeded, would save the enemy much in effort and manpower: resources and materials would be available for the Reich, and the policing of the occupied territories would be easy. So, with the aid of local quislings, an attempt was made to mollify, and the Nazi rule was light unless resistance was encountered. During the twelve months July 1941 to June 1942 the military prospects of the Allies were not rosy, and the spectre of a second front in Europe had not yet arisen to perturb the enemy. He could afford to go slowly with the dragooning of the conquered lands. But as the months went on his policy was obviously coloured by fear of an eventual Allied invasion.

Apart from measures such as the building of defensive works and the strengthening of garrisons, two other important steps were taken to hamstring the local patriots. Food supplies were cut down

How Patriots Were Persecuted

in stages to the point at which they merely permitted a bare subsistence; men and women were drawn away for forced labour in Germany; a rigid control was clamped down upon workers, so that any opposition or recalcitrance was punished by the cancellation of relief or the withdrawal of rations. Extreme reprisals were taken on the relatives of men who slipped the country to join the Allies. Gradually a docketing of ex-soldiers was carried out, to be followed later by wholesale imprisonment or deportation to prevent

any assistance to an Allied landing force. The population was evacuated from "danger" points, so that no collusion with the liberators could be possible. It seems an inescapable conclusion that the conquered peoples were deliberately brought to near-starvation point in order to cripple resistance.



**RIBBENTROP WELCOMES
SCAVENIUS**

Erik Scavenius, the Danish Foreign Minister, was summoned to Berlin in October 1942 to receive Nazi orders, and a fortnight later he formed a new administration of which he became Premier. Above, he is seen on arrival at Berlin a year before (November 24, 1941) to sign the Anti-Comintern Pact: Ribbentrop (right) is greeting him.

Photo, Associated Press

Where it suited Nazi policy a country was left for some time with a certain measure of autonomy, political and economic—and for just as long as the results warranted. For two-and-a-half years Denmark was favoured among Nazi victims, and the Germans instanced her as a shining example of the benefits to be derived from compliance with the "New Order." But towards the end of 1942 this policy altered. In October Erik Scavenius, Danish Foreign

Minister, was summoned to Berlin to receive the latest German demands, one of which was that a new government must be formed forthwith. On November 8 Scavenius became Premier in an administration selected to please the enemy. Three days earlier Karl Rudolf Best had replaced Von Renthe-Fink as German Ambassador at Copenhagen. Best was an officer of the S.S. and the Gestapo, with little experience of diplomatic service. Other German demands were for more Danish workers to go to Germany, for increased supplies of manufactured products, and for cargo ships to be built in Danish yards.

About Scavenius there were conflicting opinions. After he had signed the Anti-Comintern Pact at Berlin on November 25, 1941, he was regarded as a traitor and had to return by a devious route to the Danish capital. But Scavenius

**Riddle
of Erik
Scavenius**

was merely carrying out the wish of his Government, to which the King consented—though the extreme pressure exerted by the Germans left no alternative but that of open resistance to the Nazis. Gunnar Leistikow, former foreign editor of Social-Demokraten, Copenhagen, regarded the action of Scavenius in forming the new Cabinet of November 8 as "a last attempt to stave off—for a time at least—the complete Nazification of the country."*

Before the war Britain had taken half of Denmark's exports of dairy produce. Germany at once emptied the country of foodstuffs and other commodities over and above a subsistence margin. Then there began a progressive killing off of livestock. In April 1942 the production of pork and eggs had dwindled to one-third. A million pigs had been commandeered, alive or in carcass, representing nearly the entire annual production. By the middle of 1942 some 50,000 Danes were working in Germany. By the end of 1942 the Danish National Bank had paid out to farmers, shipowners, industrialists and others £115,000,000 since the invasion, representing goods delivered or services rendered to the

* "Foreign Affairs," January 1943, New York.



COPENHAGEN'S WARM GREETING TO KING CHRISTIAN

In extremely difficult circumstances Christian X did his utmost to cheer his people and to avert some of the evils of Nazi rule. Here he is seen on the thirtieth anniversary of his accession to the throne. Not long afterwards he met with a riding accident and on October 27, 1942, temporarily handed over his duties to Crown Prince Frederik.

Photo, Associated Press

Germans. All that the Bank had to show as cover was a credit of equal amount on the Clearing Account in Berlin. Fuel rations (Denmark was dependent on Germany for coal) for domestic consumption were very small. The cost-of-living index rose by 65 per cent, while wages increased by 20 per cent only: many commodities became too dear for the lower wage groups.

Yet, so long as the Danish Government could satisfy Nazi demands, the country still had a fair measure of freedom, while her neighbour Norway

Danish
Royal
House

writhed under the brutalities of the Gestapo and the heavy hand of the occupying army and officials. Small wonder that Government and King strove to avert the ultimate evil of Gestapo rule. King Christian X, in the thirtieth year of his reign, had to hand over his duties to Crown Prince Frederik in October 1942, because of illness which followed a riding accident. The King, when changes of Cabinet were enforced, firmly refused to accept any Government which had not a Parliamentary sanction. In the crisis of November 1942 Parliament had had to choose between Scavenius and the quisling Frits Clausen, Leader of the Danish Nazis. The King showed in many ways his abhorrence of Nazi methods. When Danish torpedo-boats had to be given up to the Germans he shook hands with each of the crew, some 800 in all.

The mettle of Norway's resistance to the Nazis was demonstrated by the

attitude of the Church, which as long ago as October 1940 had set up a Council under the seven bishops, the first step in the creating of a Church Front to protect religious liberties. In the following January these ecclesiastics, led by Bishop Berggrav, had protested to Skancke, the quisling Minister of Church and Education, against the violence and brutality of the Hird (quisling storm-troopers) and against the Nazi decree which abolished the right of doctors, lawyers and clergy to retain secrecy about matters confided to them in the execution of their duty—the Magna Carta of conscience, the bishops termed it. The Norwegian Clergymen's Union had been one of the 43 trade and professional organizations which had signed the manifesto to Reichskommissar Terboven on May 15, 1941 (see page 1788).

In September Skancke circularized the clergy asking them to sign an appeal in connexion with the so-called crusade against Bolshevism and international Godlessness. Since practically all the clergy refused to sign, the Minister had to let the matter drop.

Things came to a crisis on February 1, 1942, at Trondheim. A quisling bishop, Blessing Dahle, was to conduct a Festival Service to mark Vidkun Quisling's appointment that same day as Minister-President, or Premier. Dr. Fjellbu, Dean of Trondheim, postponed his own service until 2 p.m.; Dahle preached to a small congregation of local pro-Nazis at 11 a.m. As soon as Dahle had finished, the cathedral began

to fill with worshippers to hear the Dean, but the police closed the doors. Outside, for half an hour, thousands of people, including nearly the entire clergy of Trondheim, sang hymns and the National Anthem; within, Dr. Fjellbu preached to those who had gained admission before the police had intervened. A few days later the Dean was dismissed. On Feb-

February 23 the seven bishops met at Oslo; next day they resigned their administrative offices, while maintaining the right to exercise their spiritual vocation. All the clergy but two supported this action, as did religious bodies throughout Norway. Dean Hygen, of Oslo, was asked by Skancke to take over Bishop Berggrav's functions, but refused and resigned his own office. At Easter other deans and the clergy resigned in a body. Early in April Bishop Berggrav was arrested.

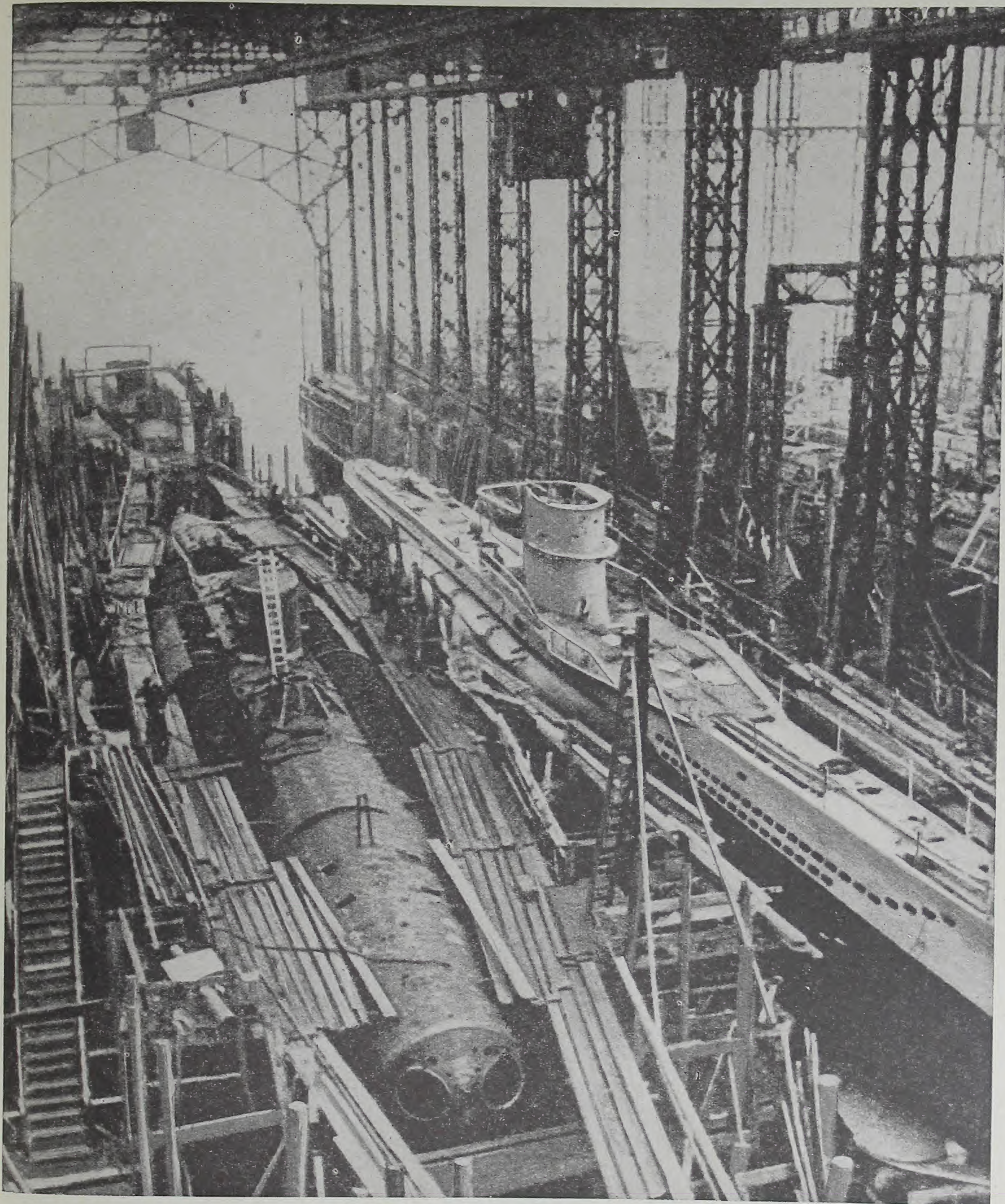
A Provisional Church Council was formed, and in August discussions were opened with the quisling Church authorities, but on September 26 the leaders of the Norwegian Church abandoned the discussions. The obstacle was the demand that, before any negotiations could be opened, the bishops should give a declaration in which they publicly



DANISH NAZIS FOR RUSSIA

Less than 2,000 Danes volunteered for the Frikorps Danmark, recruited to serve with the Germans in Russia. Here, in imitation Nazi garb, are some of the earliest to join. The Danish Nazis, who had three out of 149 seats in Parliament, were headed by Frits Clausen, a former doctor elected to Parliament in 1939.

Photo, Associated Press



MORE U-BOATS FOR THE ONSLAUGHT ON ALLIED SHIPPING

Admiral Karl Doenitz, commander of the German submarine forces, was a pioneer in the mass production of underwater craft in inland engineering works and their assembly at coastal shipyards. By means of these comparatively small and simplified submarines he hoped to break the strength of the United Nations. Here are some nearing completion—probably at a French Atlantic base.

Photo, Keystone



ANTI-TANK GUN IN STREET FIGHTING

H. Schnurpel



MACHINE-GUNNERS

Franz Eichhorst



MAY 10th, 1940

Paul Padua

HOW GERMAN ARTISTS SAW THE WAR

Many examples of the widely varied output of British war artists have already been given in this work, and in this and the opposite page German art during the war period is illustrated. The difference in outlook and treatment is illuminating. Whereas British painters were obviously entirely untrammelled by any restriction of style or handling, with the result that their work was both spontaneous and convincing, the German artists exhibit a portentous solemnity and almost slavish realism to which they have evidently been condemned by the dictates of official Nazi culture. With them the heroic gesture is predominant and the traditional glorification of the soldier heavily emphasized. As records of contemporary military uniforms these German paintings are no doubt excellent, but they scarcely set down for posterity the reactions of a great nation in the throes of a life-or-death struggle for existence.

Paintings exhibited at the Munich Art Exhibition, 1941 and 1942



LIGHT MACHINE-GUNNER B. Hartman



ADVANCE IN THE WEST

Wilhelm Sauter



BEARER OF KNIGHTS CROSS TO IRON CROSS OF THE BODYGUARD OF ADOLF HITLER

Ernst Krause



IN THE ATLANTIC

Claus Bergen



Photo, Central Press

NEW MERCHANTMEN TO REPLACE NORWAY'S WARTIME LOSSES

Launched at a Scottish shipyard on December 21, 1941, by Norway's King, the 'Kong Haakon VII' was the first replacement to her Merchant Marine which, by this date, had lost 300 of its ships in war service for the Allies. Of the fine fleet of Norwegian tankers Mr. Noel Baker (of the Ministry of War Transport) in April 1942 said that they were to the Battle of the Atlantic what the Spitfires were to the Battle of Britain in 1940.

recognized the quisling Government. The breach was later widened when quisling nominees were appointed to new congregational councils, with orders to prevent the use of the churches by the dismissed bishops or priests. State police had to be called in to force the old councils to give up registers, archives and keys.

Norwegian teachers were just as consistent in their refusal to implement the "New Order." They had gone on strike in November 1940, and many had been dismissed; there had been another strike in February 1941 to protest against quisling interference. In the following April there was a curt warning that any who then refused to join the Nazi-controlled organization would be banned from the schools. Nearly all stood out, and in reprisal some 500 were packed into a small coasting vessel and sent to the north of the country to work for the Germans. Conditions were appalling, and food was so scanty that some of the men who were employed to unload carcasses of meat at a port ate part of the flesh surreptitiously while carrying it.

Pro-Nazis controlled law and justice, for the 15 judges of the Supreme Court, who had resigned in November 1940, had been replaced by Quisling's nominees. In the spring

**Bogus
'People's
Court'** of 1941 a "People's Court" had been established to try political prisoners. In February 1942 the Nasjonal Samling (Quisling's party) set up its court to try its own members. As to the medical profession, since its determined stand against the dismissal of Dr. Giessing, Director of the Dikemark Mental Hospital near Oslo, in April 1941, it had been more or less left alone.

Despite the appointment of pro-Nazis as chairman and secretary of the Trades Union Congress the members had remained steadfast. They sent an ultimatum to Terboven on June 30, 1941, demanding the reinstatement of dismissed officials and the opening of wages negotiations. In part they won, for their officials were released and the Nazi controller was withdrawn. When in the following September a decree was issued forbidding workers to buy milk at their work places a series of strikes broke out in Oslo. Terboven took this opportunity to crush the trade union movement: Viggo Hansteen, the legal adviser of the T.U.C., and Rolf Wickstroem were executed; about a thousand workers were given long terms of imprisonment. A decree by Terboven made strikes and lock-outs illegal and imposed the death sentence. Odd Fossum, head of the Nasjonal Samling's

trade group organization, was appointed chairman of the T.U.C., and quisling commissars were put in charge of the unions.

The strength of the Nasjonal Samling at the end of 1941 was estimated at about 36,000 members, including children. Many youngsters had joined the Hird and travelled in gangs through towns and villages terrorizing people. Boys of 13 and 14 brandished their weapons and had been known to make peaceful citizens, at the revolver point, lie down in the gutter and drink dirty ditch-water, and recite the Lord's Prayer. In February 1942, as has been



BISHOP BERGGRAV OF OSLO

Leader of the council of seven Norwegian bishops set up in October 1940 to protect religious liberties. All seven resigned on February 24, 1942, after the dismissal of the Dean of Trondheim. In the following April Bishop Berggrav was arrested by the Nazis and imprisoned for a time.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

seen, Vidkun Quisling was elevated to the rank of Minister-President, and the members of his council then became ministers. Quisling moved to new offices in the Royal Palace at Oslo. He lived in a 46-roomed house outside Oslo, on the peninsula of Bygdoy. He expelled the owners of eight villas in this neighbourhood and roped off large areas to give him safe seclusion. He was watched over by a bodyguard of Norwegian S.S. troops in Hird uniform—dark blue, with the Norwegian version of the swastika in gold on the left arm.

Among Norwegians free to voice their opinions Quisling's authority was virtually non-existent, while the Germans merely used him as a tool. On his first appearance as Minister-President he said that Norway was free to, and would, conclude peace with Germany. At the

end of 1942 this prediction had not been fulfilled. He had also said that the existing arrangements would lead to the establishment of a Riksting (National Assembly).

Norwegian seamen and shipowners were the target of much vindictiveness. In August 1941 the Shipowners' Association, till then supervised by the Gestapo, came under a German controller. Later on, in February of the next year, it was taken over by the Quisling Party; almost every Norwegian shipowner disavowed the Association. Captains and crews of merchant ships which had gone over to the Allies were offered bribes, via the radio, if they would sail their ships into Axis-controlled ports. In the spring a daily broadcast was begun to Norwegian seamen, giving them pathetic messages from their relatives in Norway and imploring them to return home "with their ships." These bogus messages were concocted from details given in forms on which relatives had been told to furnish particulars of sailors serving abroad.

In June 1942 Terboven ordered the shipowners to set up a committee for achieving closer cooperation with the Nazi-controlled Association, but this move failed. Finally, shipowners were made to pay income tax (150 per cent of average earnings, 1938-39) on a presumed profit earned by their ships sailing in Allied service. An example of the seamen's spirit is the exploit of a handful who seized the small passenger ship "Galtesund," plying between Bergen and Oslo, and sailed her to Britain in April 1942.

Norwegians were much cheered by the raids carried out from Britain by Combined Operations Command, as it came to be called. Norwegians themselves had taken part in the raid on fish oil plants and shipping in the Lofotens on March 4, 1941 (see p. 1889), when a number of patriots had been transported to Britain. A detachment of Norwegian soldiers formed part of the mixed force which raided Spitsbergen on August 25, 1941. Coal and oil dumps were destroyed, the mines wrecked, and again many Norwegians among the population were brought off. Just after Christmas (December 27, 1941) the islands of Vaagso and Maaloy were attacked by Commandos, the objectives here being oil stores, wireless stations and industrial plant (see p. 1892). The stimulus and encouragement such raids afforded to the oppressed people can well be imagined.

A brilliant R.A.F. raid in daylight by four Mosquitoes interrupted Quisling's

speech on the afternoon of September 25, 1942, at the Gestapo H.Q., Oslo, to the Nasjonal Samling. A parade of the party had to be cancelled.

Ironically enough it was on a group of traitors of the 1914-18 period that the Nazis relied for the dragooning of Belgium after the surrender in May 1940. General von Bissing, head of the German administration in 1914-18, had sought to divide Belgians by cultivating the Flemish-speaking sections, whom the Germans, like the Nazis a

Belgian
Traitors

generation later, claimed as cultural and racial kinsmen. He set up the "Conseil des

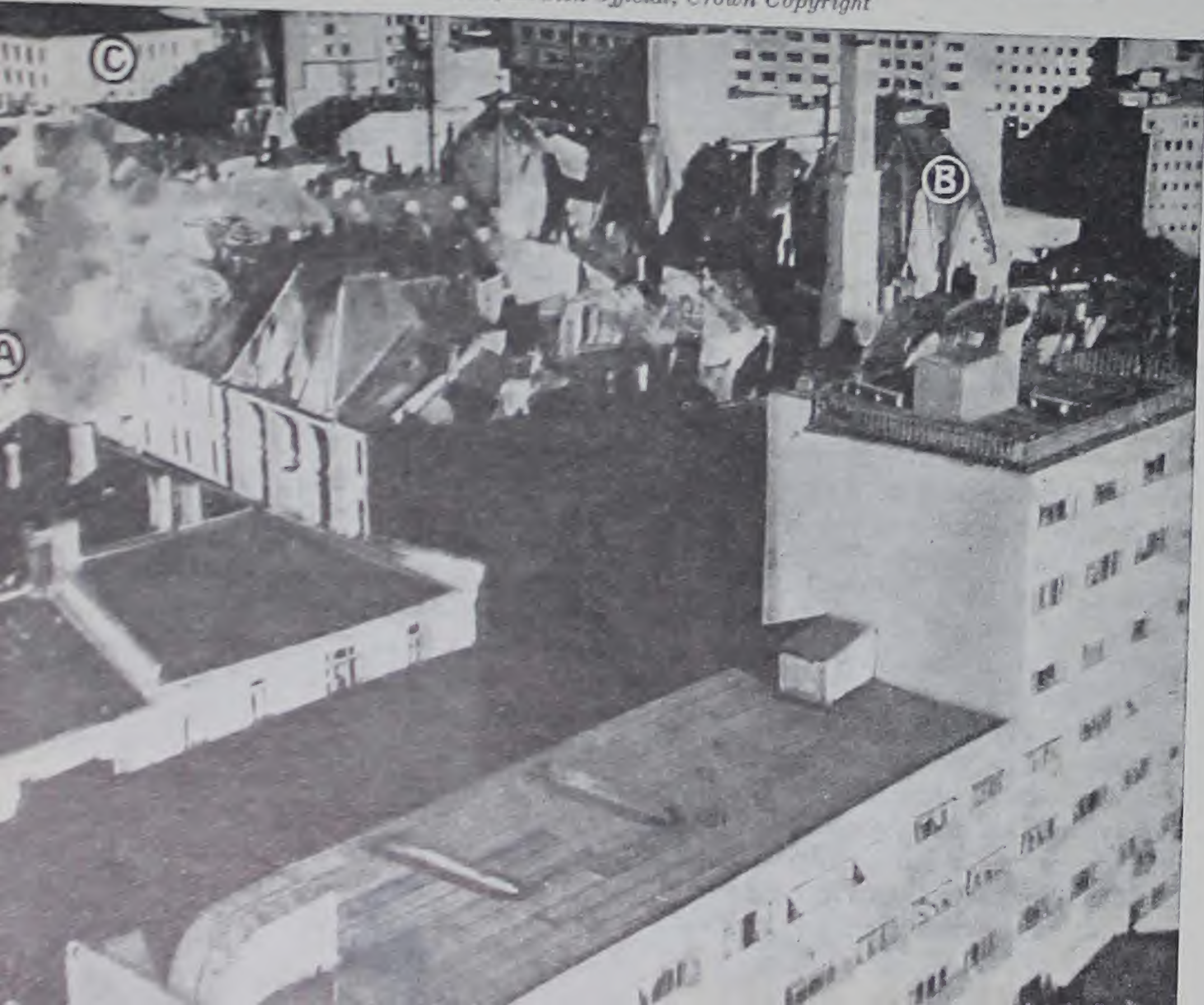
Flandres," with a membership of a score of Flemish teachers and suchlike, headed by Dr. Borms, who after the war was condemned to death by a Belgian court but was later reprieved. There were others whom Von Bissing suborned. In 1940 the Nazis began where he had left off: the former traitors were now invested with powers over their compatriots. In September 1940 Borms was made president of a so-called reparations commission which gave money rewards to some of these people. Borms himself received an indemnity first of 100,000 francs and later of 1,000,000, with a monthly pension of 5,000 francs. He became the titular leader of the Flemish nationalists.

While Walloon (French-speaking)

WHEN R.A.F. MOSQUITOES BOMBED GESTAPO H.Q. AT OSLO

The photograph below was taken from the first of the Mosquito reconnaissance bombers which, on September 25, 1942, bombed the Gestapo Headquarters (A) from about 100 feet: (B), the central cupola on which our pilots saw the Nazi flag; (C), the University building.

Photo, British Official, Crown Copyright



Belgian prisoners of war were kept in prison camps the Flemish were sent back home. Extensive areas were proclaimed to be Flemish by the Nazis, and certain large cities also, including Brussels. Children were taken away from French classes and made to learn Flemish. Politically and culturally, every inducement was held out to the Flemish nationalists. A "Vlaamsch National Verband" was set up, into which other Flemish organizations were merged, including the Flemish section of the Rexists. Its head was Staf (Gustave) De Clercq, who has been described as a "public-house Fuehrer"; the nominal leader was Borms. De Clercq appointed Gouwleiders (district leaders), formed a Flemish brigade of storm troops, and instituted a Flemish Guard to maintain order in the newly created Flemish provinces. Members of the V.N.V. were given high posts under the German administration. The party had sent 16 deputies to the Belgian Parliament. De Clercq had been arrested as a doubtful character by the Belgian police on May 10, 1940, but later, of course, obtained his freedom.

Léon Degrelle, founder and leader of the Rexist (pro-Fascist) party, had also been arrested on the morning of the German invasion, together with his three fellow deputies. They were sent to France, but were freed after the Franco-German armistice in June.



SALUTE TO PATRIOTS

A national day of mourning for the Norwegian victims of the Gestapo was secretly fixed for February 17, 1942: black and red mourning crosses were painted overnight in many prominent places; here, at the entrance to the underground station in Oslo, are some on signposts and lamp standards.

Photo, Associated Press

Then there was Henri De Man, a former finance Minister, leader of the enemy-sponsored "Union of Manual and Intellectual Workers," which took the place of the former trades unions. To the Belgian workers he urged a policy of resignation and acceptance of the German conquest—views which he proclaimed in his journal, *Le Travail*. The Rexists republished their newspaper, *Le Pays Réel*, which the Belgian Government had suppressed; the Brussels pro-Fascists issued the *Nouveau Journal*, while the enemy's official organ was the *Brusseler Zeitung*, printed on plant commandeered from the Brussels daily, *La Dernière Heure*. The chief organ of the Flemish nationalists was the *Volk en Stad*.

Despite this superabundance of quisling newspapers—and there were other minor ones—the great bulk of the Belgian people went stolidly on their way, unaffected by the extravagant slogans and the more subtle propaganda. As a sample of Rexist publicity we may cite Degrelle's description of the Walloons as "French-speaking Teutons sprung from the same race as their brothers in the north and east." By an insidious perversion of what normally

was an inoffensive nationalist movement the Germans fomented grievances among the Flemish-speaking population and tried to infect even the Walloons with similar racial absurdities. In the main the Flemings refused to be a party to the Nazi intrigues. They preferred to bear the same hardships and privations as their Walloon compatriots. At the beginning of 1942 the strength of the Flemish nationalists was about 5,000 members, and of the Rexists about 2,000. Numerically these parties were insignificant, and only the German backing gave them such power as they enjoyed. They quarrelled among themselves and were by no means unanimous or united in their subversive activities.

During 1942 German infiltration into

workers. There was steadily increasing pressure on workmen and independent craftsmen to "volunteer" for work in Germany. If men refused, their unemployment relief ceased. Small manufacturers, hard hit by the slump, were given the option of going to Germany; in default their ration cards were cancelled. The Germans claimed that 300,000 men had volunteered, and it is probable that in fact two-thirds of this number had taken up work across the frontier under what amounted to duress.

Normal food rations at the beginning of 1942 amounted to (per person per week) $3\frac{1}{2}$ oz. fats, $10\frac{1}{2}$ oz. meat, 3 lb. bread, $2\frac{1}{2}$ oz. coffee, $\frac{3}{4}$ lb. sugar, $6\frac{1}{2}$ lb. potatoes, 7 pts. milk. Often the full

in Germany, for the total number in enemy hands after the surrender was no more than 70,000, of whom many had been repatriated. Refugees, too, had come back from France, and the enemy, with an eye to their value in the labour market, had even provided transport for their return. The average loss of weight among Belgian working men was 18-26 lb., and among women 14-26 lb. Cases of tuberculosis increased a hundredfold; rickets, an almost unknown complaint in normal times, became common. An investigation of schoolchildren in Brussels showed that less than one-fifth attained a normal weight for their age group. The severe winter of 1941-42 claimed many victims among the very young and the aged; at Ghent the mortality was the highest ever recorded. Belgium is a densely populated country—700 inhabitants to the square mile—and normally imported more than half the food supply needed for her people; in consequence the German invasion and occupation left her in dire straits.

Pro-British manifestations were observable in all sections of the people. The Flemish newspaper, *De Nationaal-Socialist*, reported the existence among the Antwerp police of a pro-Ally culture group. When R.A.F. machines were forced down and

**Homage
to R.A.F.
Pilots**

the crews taken prisoner there was a spontaneous exhibition of sympathy. On the graves of British pilots killed in crashes there were flowers brought by people who walked miles to pay this tribute. Russian prisoners of war sent to the coast for defence work were given cigarettes, food and clothing. When British bombers flew over at night en route to Germany, Belgians went to their windows or to the roof tops to watch, and there were cries of "They are here!" At Ostend, crowds gathered in the streets during an alert to watch the R.A.F. bombers. In Flanders there was a custom of keeping a vacant place at the table, reserved symbolically for "den Engelschman"—the Englishman who should come to liberate Belgium.

Sabotage of German-controlled plant and equipment of all kinds was widespread, despite the extreme penalties meted out. Railway tracks were sabotaged all over the land; buildings were set on fire; petrol was stolen from enemy dumps; factories, garages and engineering works were blown up in a never-ceasing attack on all that might aid the enemy. By the end of 1942 the known executions of patriots numbered 3,000—ten times as many as during the four years of German occupation, 1914-18. The flame of patriotic ardour



V FOR VICTORY ON AN OSLO HIGHWAY

Citizens of Oslo chalked Vs on walls and buildings, and under cover of night painted them on roadways, official buildings, and the offices of the Nazis, using pitch for light surfaces and white-wash for darker ones. When the Nazis obliterated the Vs, they were as promptly painted again. Here is an enormous example with King Haakon's cipher painted on a main roadway.

Photo, Royal Norwegian Government

industry, commerce and banking was extended. Apart from the requisitioning of such material as locomotives (1,800 out of 4,200), railway coaches (80,000 out of 120,000), lorries (practically all) and the enforced switch-over of engineering and other works to Nazi purposes, there was an attempt to acquire a long-term control of financial, insurance and commercial concerns.

Three-quarters of the coal output was sent to Germany, and during the severe winter of 1941-42 even the meagre ration of domestic coal—nominally about 1 cwt. per week per household—could not be obtained. The German-controlled trade union of Henri De Man won favour with neither employers nor

amount of these foods was not obtainable, and potatoes, for instance, disappeared altogether for a time. In August 1942 the rations stood at: fats, $2\frac{3}{4}$ oz.; meat, $5\frac{1}{2}$ oz.; bread, 3 lb.; sugar, 2 lb.; potatoes, $4\frac{3}{4}$ lb.; milk was issued only to children and pregnant women.

Figures given by a Nazi-controlled newspaper in August 1942 indicated that between December 31, 1940, and the same date in 1941 the Belgian population had decreased by 37,282. Births for 1941 were approximately 34,000 fewer than for an average year between 1931 and 1939. This could not be explained away on the ground of a large number of men being prisoners

burned brightly in the men and women of this generation as in the last.

In Belgium, as in Norway, the clergy led the people in resistance. In 1914-18 the Archbishop of Malines had been Cardinal Mercier (a Walloon), who had defied General von Bis-

Cardinal
Van Roey

sing. This time it was a Fleming, Cardinal van Roey, who encouraged

his flock to abstain from anything approaching collaboration with the enemy. In January 1942 the Cardinal in a sermon declared: "The Church . . . cannot tolerate conditions that would stifle her, such as those existing in Germany. It is illegal for Catholics to collaborate with an oppressive regime. On the contrary, they must resist it." He refused to recognize a quisling burgomaster of Malines appointed in January. Six months later, on National Independence Day, he paid an official call in the traditional way upon the Chevalier Dessain, the real burgomaster whom the enemy had dismissed. The clergy consistently refused to officiate at services for Belgian Rexist and Flemish nationalist soldiers killed on the Russian front, actions in which they were backed up by the Cardinal and the bishops. In an address to a congress of Belgian young people at Wavre on August 11, 1941, Van Roey again emphasized that it was wrong to collaborate in the establishment of a tyrannical regime.

Of clandestine newspapers there were at least 60—including of course the revived *La Libre Belgique*, which had published its first number of the 1940 edition on August 15 of that year

and ran soon to a circulation of 40,000—passed from hand to hand. In July 1941 sixteen inhabitants of Liège were sentenced by the German military court for having edited, written and circulated illegal pamphlets and newspapers. The penalties ranged in this case—a typical one—from eight months' solitary confinement to 25 years. The latter sentence was pronounced upon Jean Julsonnet, a lawyer.

Heroic Burgomaster Adolphe Max, of Brussels, whose stalwart opposition to the German administration in 1914-18 made him the incarnation of resistance, had a worthy successor in Dr. F. J. van de Meulebroeck. At the end of June 1941, when he was superseded by a Nazi nominee, Dr. Meulebroeck issued a proclamation stating that if he had complied with certain German demands he would have spurned honour and duty, and have disobeyed one of the fundamental laws of his country. "I am, I remain, and will remain the one and only lawful burgomaster of Brussels. . . . I am therefore not saying goodbye, but 'au revoir.' In leaving you temporarily I ask you to endure your hardships and sufferings . . . calmly, courageously and with confidence." These were the inspiring phrases of his farewell. The Burgomaster was arrested the same day, together with the Chief of the Brussels Police and the owner of the Guyot Press which had printed the proclamation. The press was closed, and a fine of 5,000,000 francs was imposed on the inhabitants of Brussels. A month earlier the Alderman of Verviers had taken similar



DR. BORMS—TWICE A TRAITOR

Borms, seen at the microphone addressing Flemish Volunteers before they left for the front in August 1941 to fight alongside the Germans in Russia, had been a traitor who aided the enemy in the war of 1914-18. Now he was rewarded by the Nazis and given a large subsidy in cash, becoming the leader of the Flemish Nationalists.

Photo, Associated Press

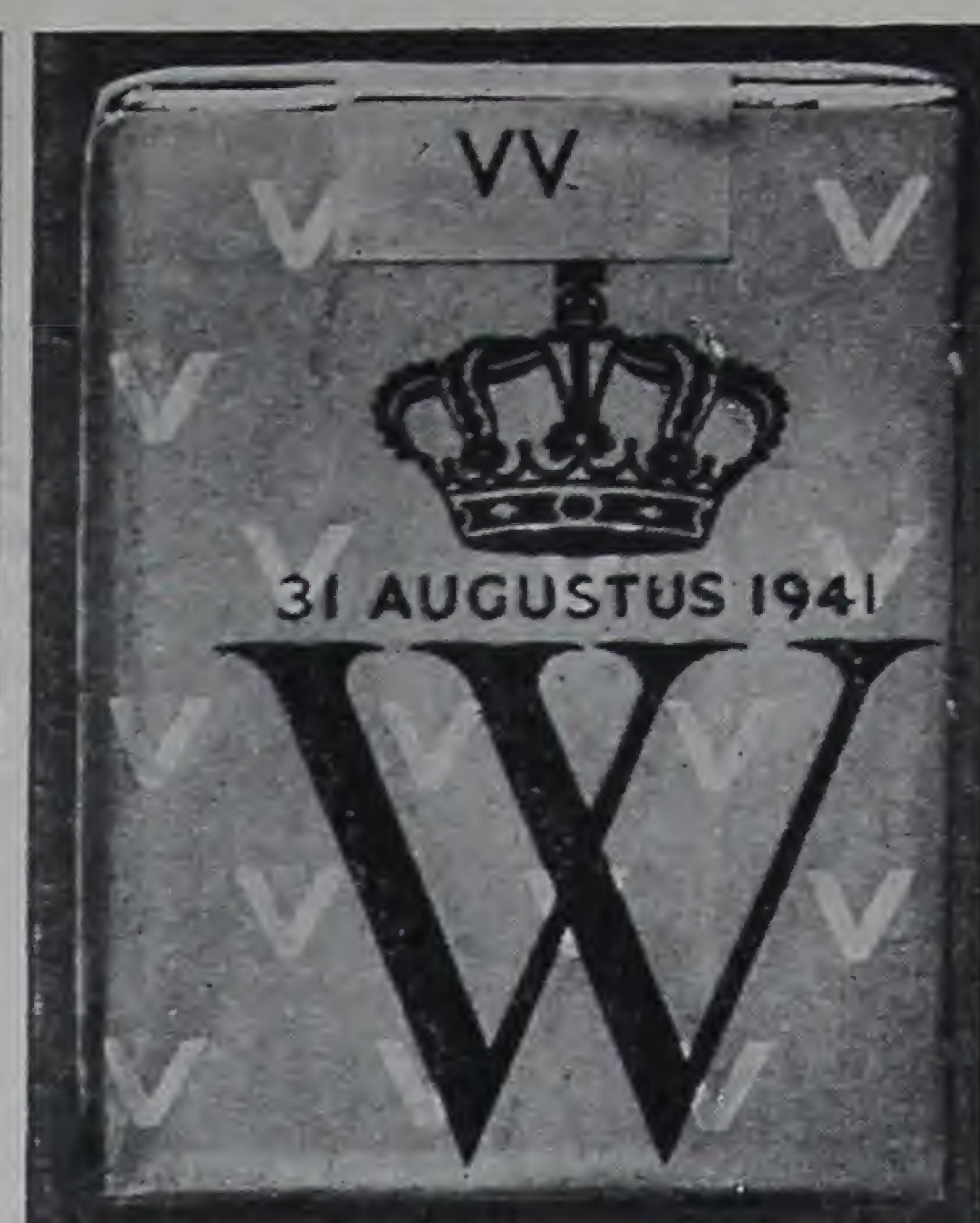
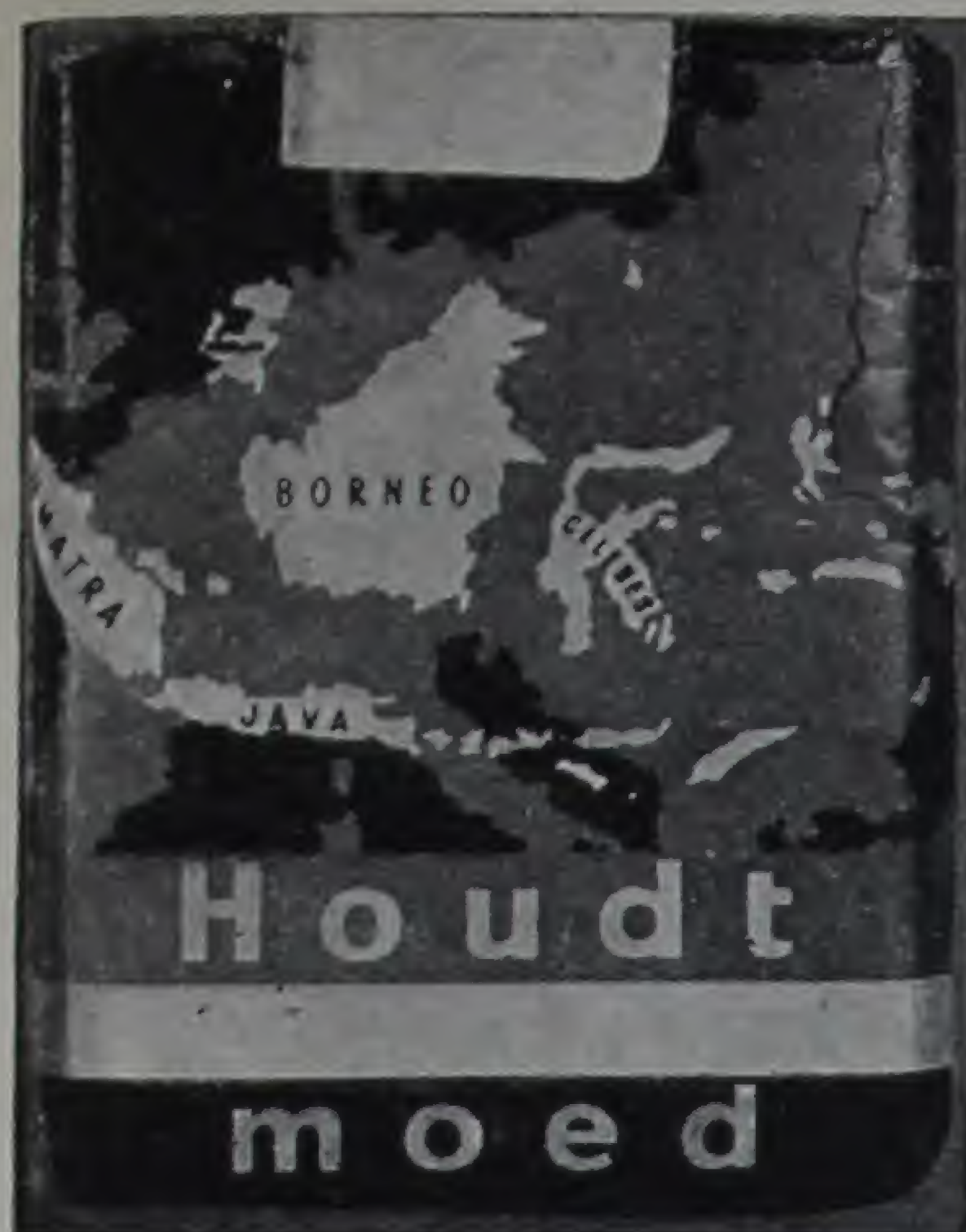


UNION JACK OVER BELGIAN TOWN

Early in 1942 unknown Belgian patriots in a town near Brussels climbed an electric pylon one night to affix a Union Jack—an act typical of many which showed where the people's sympathies and hopes were placed. Next morning the Nazis ordered firemen to take down the flag: two are seen during this operation.

Photo, "Daily Telegraph"

action against a Rexist burgomaster. King Leopold maintained consistently the attitude he had adopted when he became a prisoner at his castle of Laeken on May 28, 1940. His position had been made clear by Cardinal van Roey in a pastoral letter shortly after. The King had signed neither pact nor treaty, even of a military nature, with the Germans; he had in no way infringed the constitution of the Belgian people. Leopold considered himself a prisoner of war; he refused to parley with the enemy and was just as steadfast in his refusal to be moved by appeals made to him by quislings of either



GIFTS TO THE DUTCH FROM THEIR QUEEN

To mark the sixty-second birthday of Queen Wilhelmina on August 31, 1942, thousands of packets of cigarettes were scattered over the Netherlands by the Royal Air Force. The packets bore the legends (left) 'Be Courageous' and 'The Netherlands Shall Arise' (centre). Right, the Royal cipher and Vs for Victory on packets dropped for the 1941 birthday of the Queen.

Photos, G.P.U.; "News Chronicle"

Flemish nationalist or Rexist brands. A few days before November 15, 1941 (the King's name day), the Germans forbade any public demonstration; "since the King regards himself as a prisoner of war," said the official communiqué, "he will certainly not wish for any political demonstration in his honour."

On September 11, 1941, the King married Mademoiselle Marie Lilian Baels, daughter of a former Belgian Minister of Agriculture. He stated that his wife renounced the title and rank of Queen, and made it a condition of the marriage that any children of the union would have no claim to the throne. She would be known as Princess de Réthy. On July 18, 1942, a son was born and was named Prince Alexander.

Despite superficial resemblances in the fate of Holland and Belgium there were wide differences. Belgium had a population of over 8,000,000, mainly engaged

**Holland
Under
Nazi Rule**

in non-agricultural pursuits, while the Netherlands, with a million more inhabitants,

was mainly agricultural. Both were densely populated, the average per square mile in both countries being about 700 persons. The Netherlands was happy in the circumstance that its Royal House was free in Britain or other Allied lands, there to fan the flame of patriotic resistance and to inspire the war effort in the Dutch Empire. The timely broadcasts of Queen Wilhelmina to her oppressed people had an immeasurable effect in mitigating spiritual and physical hardships and strengthening their will to resist the Nazis. Even after the catastrophe in the Far East, when the Netherlands East Indies were overrun by the Japanese, they did not lose heart.

All Dutch parties except the National-Socialists were dissolved in July 1941. The Fifth Column menace in Holland

had been grave on account of the many Germans who had settled in the country and had become, except for their political activities, completely naturalized to all appearances. Some had clung to their German allegiance, but even these, until the Germans under Hitler began to arouse that fevered nationalism which distorted all normal values, had given no cause for alarm to the Dutch administration. They began to collect a following of Dutch people, some of whom became more Nazi than the Germans. But when, in 1942, General Christiansen, the German Military Governor, tried to recruit the Dutch Nazis for service against Russia he found few willing to go. A totalitarian regime was imposed on the country, and in August 1941 all central, provincial and local governing bodies were dissolved. There was the same struggle of the Church leaders as in Belgium and Norway. Both Roman Catholic and Protestant clergy warned their congregations not to be misled by the Nazi "crusade" against Bolshevism, which was set in motion in all the occupied countries. Schools were closed, or staffed with men willing to comply with the German idea of education.

The former Premier, Dr. Colijn, was arrested in July, with members of his party. After a broadcast by Queen Wilhelmina on her birthday (August 31) the Reichskommissar, Seyss-Inquart, banned the use of Royal names or emblems for brands and labels of goods, or by professional organizations. All Crown properties were at the same time seized by the Nazis. Foreshadowing action which followed, Seyss-Inquart in November told the Dutch that an independent Netherlands was not to figure in the Nazi "New Order." This declaration at a single stroke demolished the wishful plans of the Dutch Nazis who, under Anton Mussert, had anticipated their reward in the shape of place and privilege.

On the morrow of the Japanese attack on British and American outposts in the Far East Queen Wilhelmina issued a proclamation which was broadcast by the Premier, Dr. Gerbrandy, for her over Radio Orange, from which the following passages are quoted:

"Now that the friendly American and British peoples are being attacked, the Kingdom of the Netherlands puts all its military power and all its resources at the disposal of the common war effort. . . . I count on the navy, the army and the air force, on all civil servants, and on all the civil services whose war duty now begins. I and all my subjects count on all the courage, the determination and the perseverance of all in the Indies."

How nobly the Netherlands East Indies answered the call is told in Chapters 207 and 208.

The familiar pattern of Nazi repression already described in earlier sections of this Chapter was manifest in Holland—and the same types of opposition and underground resistance. During January 1942 four Dutchmen were shot as members of a secret organization; four more were shot, in Northern France, for intelligence work against the invaders; five farmers were executed for aiding British airmen forced down in Holland; 20 men were sentenced to imprisonment for distributing anti-German leaflets. So the catalogue could be extended for later months. In February 500 were sent to a concentration camp near Amersfoort on the charge of placing bombs in the houses of quislings.

In April the number of Dutchmen sent to labour in Germany had grown to 150,000. Next month more labour decrees were issued. In August all women between 18 and 40 were ordered to register for recruitment for Nazi women's labour battalions. Seyss-Inquart issued a decree that Dutchmen would be drafted to guard factories,

**Dutch
Patriot
Martyrs**

railways, etc. The penalty for negligence resulting in damage was death. As the result of the intensified drive for labour the number of Dutchmen sent to Germany had doubled by September, and was then over 300,000. Anti-Jewish laws were made more rigorous. In October 1941 nearly 800 Jews were sent to the sulphur mines in Austria, where many died. In the following April the Dutch Government in London stated that out of 1,200 sent to the concentration camp at Mauthausen about 700 had perished. In May 1942 all Jewish property was registered as the first step towards seizure. Next month the first of the big round-ups took place, and as a result 6,000 Jews were assembled at Amsterdam for transportation to Russia and Poland.

It was reported in June that the Germans had a long-term plan to colonize parts of conquered Poland and

Farmers
Sent to
Poland

Russia with Dutch
farmers compulsorily
removed from Holland.

The cost of this scheme was to be met from funds confiscated from the East Indies concerns whose capital was in Dutch banks. In October the prices of all East Indies shares and international stocks were pegged.

Broadcasting from England in October 1942, Queen Wilhelmina sternly warned all Netherlands who collaborated with the Germans that they would have to accept the consequences, and that these would be serious indeed. But, judging by the counter-measures taken by the Nazis against Dutch patriots, those to whom the Queen's warning was addressed formed a small minority. In May 1942 the German-

DAYTIME BOMBING OF PHILIPS VALVE WORKS AT EINDHOVEN

Employing 15,000 Dutch people, the immense Philips establishment was making valves and radio apparatus for the German war machine. Workers were coerced into continuing their task, for the enemy's benefit, by threats to withdraw food ration cards. On Sunday, December 6, 1942, the Royal Air Force put a brake on production by a heavy and concentrated attack by nearly a hundred light bombers in daylight.

Photo, British Official : Crown Copyright



BELGIAN HOMAGE TO BRITISH AIRMEN AT BRAINE-LE-COMTE

In October 1942 a British bomber hit by German gunfire crashed in Belgium and its crew were killed. Five thousand Belgians gathered to pay homage to seven of the bomber crew whose remains were found and buried at Braine-le-Comte cemetery. Note the flowers which have been placed at the graveside and on the coffins.

Photo, British Official : Crown Copyright

controlled press complained about rampant sabotage in every industry and trade; in October there were reports of stubborn resistance and increasing sabotage. Punishments became more drastic and the taking of hostages began. Two thousand officers of the Dutch Army, with 460 prominent citizens, were sent to a concentration camp in May. Soon after, another group of prominent Dutchmen was arrested: among them were former Ministers and

Members of Parliament. In July 1,000 hostages were taken; next month five were shot in reprisal for the blowing up of a train, and 200 more were arrested. The first woman to be shot for sabotage had been executed in July. According to a report which came from Moscow, during July and August Dutch patriots destroyed 40 goods trains, set fire to five German aircraft, and blew up a torpedo store in Haarlem.

Much against their will many Dutch workers had to take part in the production of material for the Nazis, but the strict control of rationing and the use of this system to coerce people into obedience left almost no alternative but starvation. The odious manoeuvre was the same as that described in the Belgian section. But the R.A.F. did its best to apply a brake to such forced production. At Eindhoven was the great radio works of the Philips concern, where enormous quantities of valves and similar apparatus were turned out. It was heavily bombed in daylight by the R.A.F. on December 6, 1942.

In October the Nazis began to evacuate people from the Netherlands coastal area, and by the end of the year this operation was almost complete. Preparations were made to meet an Allied landing. An even sterner control was imposed on the long-suffering people of Holland, but the reason for this measure was clearly seen, and in itself was heartening.



VICHY FRANCE AND THE OCCUPIED REGION, JANUARY—JUNE, 1942

This period saw the opening of the Riom trial of 'war-guilt' prisoners and its hasty suspension under Hitler's orders in the middle of April; other events, notable in different connexions, were the escape of General Giraud from Koenigstein and the return of Laval to power as Chief of Government, his main mission being to procure French labour for the Reich. Six character sketches of Vichy personalities are printed in page 2187

ON January 1, 1942, Marshal Pétain broadcast to the French nation.

He once again spoke of the dangers to which France and her Empire were exposed, and suggested that a sincere "rapprochement" between Germany and France could be brought about only by a modification of the statute imposed on France by Germany. "Our dignity," he said, "will be restored, our economy relieved."

He referred also to the heavy costs of occupation, the crushing nature of which was borne out by the Minister of Finance's budget for 1942 which, presented on the same day, he estimated would be 120-125,000,000,000 francs. This figure, though comparable to that of 1941 (130,000,000,000 fr.), was in effect immeasurably greater, since, as the Minister (M. Bouthillier) declared, the burden of the tribute payable to Germany became heavier in the same

measure as France's economy grew feebler and she accumulated a debt which grew in proportion to her continued impoverishment.

Approximately 50 per cent of France's budget being needed to pay the costs of occupation, no inference is possible other than that the Reich was ruthlessly determined to use the weapon of economic force to bring France into line, a point emphasized by Hitler's retention of over 1,250,000 prisoners-of-war and exploitation of French agriculture. Further proof of Germany's determination to enforce this policy was provided by the threat, contained in a

note presented to Vichy towards the end of March 1942, to occupy all French territory unless her demands for huge quantities of food, wine, and locomotives were met.

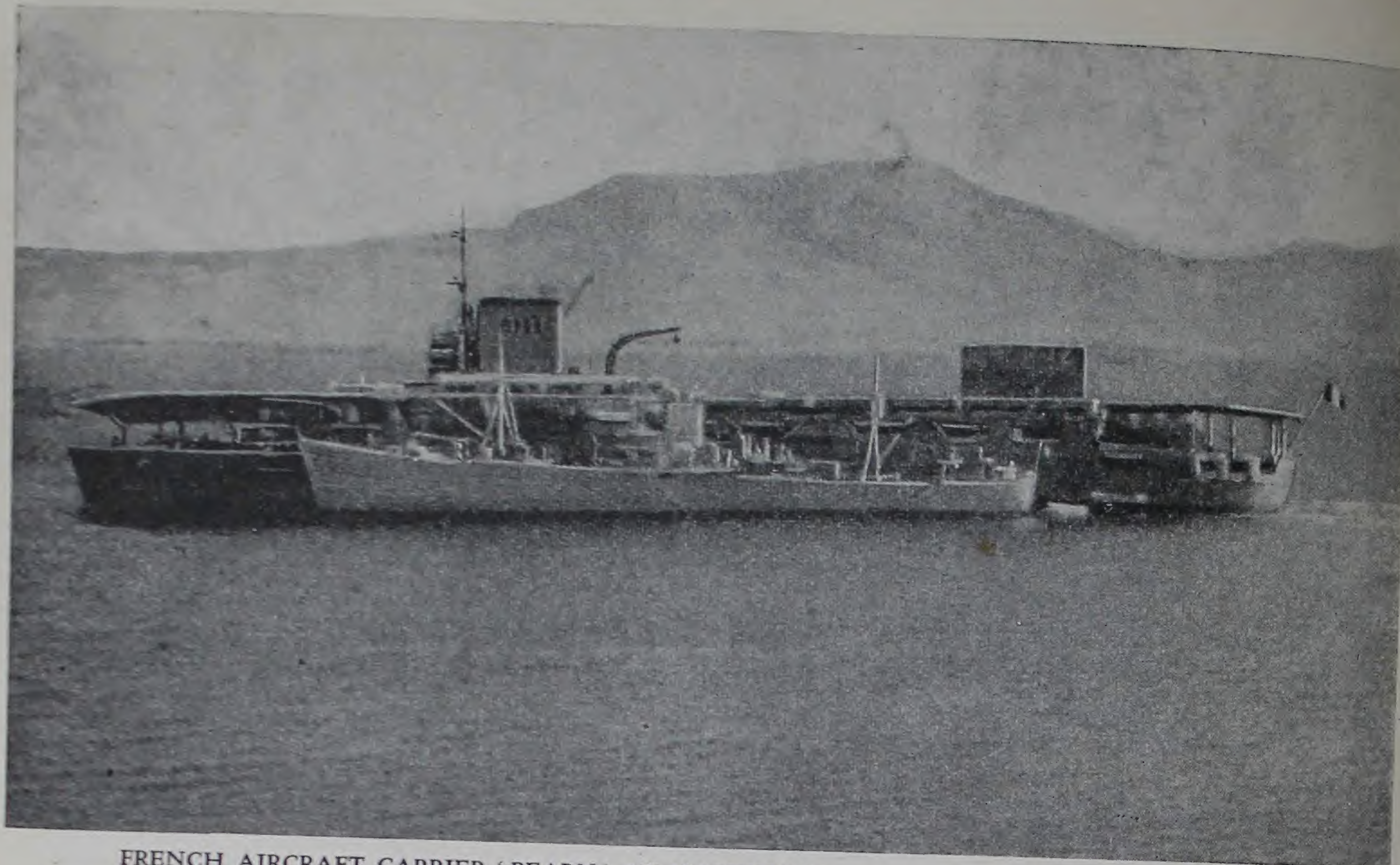
Moreover, as was revealed by the British Minister of Economic Warfare, Mr. Hugh Dalton, on February 9, German pressure was enforcing the systematic delivery of large and valuable military supplies to their troops in Libya by the French authorities in North Africa. Despite the unsatisfactory nature of Vichy's replies to representations by the United States, during which negotiations all U.S. ship-

SITTING OF THE RIOM SUPREME COURT OF JUSTICE

This Court was set up to try the 'war-guilt' prisoners, including Daladier, Blum, Gamelin, Guy La Chambre, Jacomet and Pierre Cot. It proved to be a travesty of justice and, even so, concerned itself mainly with the causes of the French defeat. Hitler forced its adjournment on April 2, 1942, after six weeks. Nearly 14 months later (June 13, 1943) a decree of Vichy in the Official Gazette closed the Riom court. On the left is the Public Prosecutor, Cassagneau; at the back are the six judges and their three deputies.

Photo, Sport & General





FRENCH AIRCRAFT CARRIER 'BEARN' AT MARTINIQUE

Of 22,146 tons displacement, the 'Béarn' was one of three warships (the others were light cruisers) which the United States asked the Governor, Admiral Georges Robert, to immobilize in May 1942; another request was that merchant ships at Martinique should be put at American disposal. Robert agreed on May 14 to immobilize the warships. Below, Admiral Leahy, American Ambassador to Vichy (right), bids farewell to Marshal Pétain on his recall to Washington for consultation (April 17, 1942).

Photos. "Daily Express"; Associated Press



ments to North Africa were suspended, America continued to seek a satisfactory settlement of this problem. The return of the newly repaired battleship "Dunkerque" from Oran to Toulon on February 21, 1942 (increasing as it did Allied anxiety regarding the future of the still formidable French fleet),

coupled with the United States' recognition of Oceania (March 2) and Free French Africa (April 4), aggravated still further the strained relations between the two nations.

A few days after Pétain's New Year broadcast Marcel Déat, who had become the head of the "Rassemblement

National Populaire" the previous October, attacked the Marshal's policy of "attentisme" in a Paris radio talk, saying that France risked losing her role in Europe, North Africa and her Empire if she continued to evade thorough-going collaboration. "All false collaborationists," he said, "and the men who want to 'wait-and-see' are deserters."

On January 9 Pétain received General Dentz (former C.-in-C. of the Vichy forces in Syria) and three days later, significantly, Vichy issued a statement demanding the return of the islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, which had been occupied by the Free French on December 24, 1941.

The intrigues and counter-intrigues resorted to by those who had used France's downfall as an excuse to indulge in power politics continued to be a source of perpetual worry to Hitler, who sought, above all, for real collaboration, the lack of which De Brinon, the Vichy Ambassador to Paris, complained bitterly about in an interview given to Paris journalists on January 30.

On February 19, 1942, the trial of the "war-guilt" prisoners was opened at Riom, the accused being: M. Edouard Daladier (Premier and Minister of War and National Defence in September 1939), M. Léon Blum (Premier in the "Front Populaire" government of 1936), Gen. Gamelin (Allied Generalissimo,



IN UNOCCUPIED FRANCE

Until November 11, 1942, when Germany occupied all France, there had been the zone nominally under Vichy control. Here are glimpses of life there. (1) The 'Youth Army' known as 'Les Compagnons de France' on parade in Marseilles; (2) a stocking line waiting to enter a Marseilles department store during a rationing period. From Marseilles also comes (3), where a Frenchman examines posters which read: 'For the People of France; For the Bread of Frenchmen'; 'For the People against the Starvation-mongers.' Petrol shortage is reflected in (4), at Nice, which shows a line of 'gazogene' taxis that run on compressed gas in cylinders.

Photos, Pictorial Press



September 1939 - June 1940), M. Guy La Chambre (former Air Minister), M. Robert Jacomet (Controller-General of Armaments), and M. Pierre Cot (Air Minister under M. Blum). Pierre Cot was tried "in absentia" as he was then in America. The indictments were: (i) "betrayal of duties"; (ii) "attempts against the security of the State," and stated, "inter alia," that the French forces were not ready when the war began, that training was inadequate, arms insufficient, air support negligible, and that production had slackened as a result of the labour legislation of MM. Blum and Daladier.

The trial, arranged to determine the

question of the responsibility for the war, proved itself a very mockery of traditional French justice. Far from dealing with the "political causes of the war," the trial concerned itself only with the causes of the French military defeat—these would seem to be summed up thus: (i) The move into Belgium; (ii) The weakness of the "hinge" on the Meuse; (iii) The delay in evacuating the Maginot Line; and (iv) The abandonment of the Paris region. The trial thus defeated its purpose while allowing widespread publication of facts prejudicial to Vichy and Germany and their policy of collaboration. This unexpected outcome, which angered Hitler to the point

of giving public expression to his dissatisfaction in his Reichstag speech of March 15, forced his hand and compelled him not only to apply pressure for the postponement of the trial, but also to bring about a new French government, one completely subservient to Berlin. The first was achieved with the indefinite adjournment of the court on April 2, later suspended by a decree-law promulgated on April 14.

A factor strongly supporting Berlin's intrigues was Pétain's traditional hatred of Britain, one of many frequent expressions of which took place as a result of the heavy British air attack on the Renault works at Billancourt in the environs of Paris on March 3, 1942 (see illus., p. 2121). This legitimate blow at Axis war-production was bitterly attacked by Pétain in a message read at the funeral of the victims on March 7, a vituperation ably backed up by both Vichy and German-controlled radio and press.

It was not, therefore, surprising that the hotchpotch of Vichy political intrigues should gradually begin to assume definite shape, Pétain, Laval, Darlan and Abetz having frequent conversations.

April Intrigues at Vichy

On April 4 Admiral Darlan, addressing the "Conseil National," said that 1942 would be a decisive year for France, and referred to the danger of Bolshevism—"the political change of position of our former allies, who are now the allies of Bolshevism, the most deadly foe of the French people." This warning was followed nine days later by another one, issued this time by Marcel Déat, who had escaped a second attempt on his life when a bomb was thrown at him on March 26 at Tours. An ardent supporter of collaboration with Germany, Déat in a speech in Paris said that the fate of France would be decided in a few hours. France, he said, could either come out openly for collaboration in the new Europe, or Germany would take measures to enforce her will on France. "We can," he said, "participate in a European victory or a British defeat. . . ."

The following day (April 14), the recent prolonged and heavy attacks on the Vichy "attentistes" by the German-controlled press and radio, demanding that Vichy should define its attitude "once for all," which had hastened the climax of Laval's intrigues with Pétain and Abetz, bore fruit with Laval's seizure of power.

Announcing this, both Berlin and Vichy stated that Laval would return to office as "Chief of the Government with special powers," that the Cabinet would be reconstructed on a new basis



FIRST REPATRIATED FRENCH WAR PRISONERS

On June 22, 1942, Laval appealed to French workers to go to Germany in exchange for soldiers whom the Germans undertook to release. Much pressure was brought to bear on the workers, especially on those who had been evacuated from the coastal strip between Boulogne and Dieppe. Above, in Compiègne station, returned soldiers in the first trainload talk with a batch of workmen who are going to the Reich under the exchange scheme.

Photo: "New York Times" Photos

by Marshal Pétain, and that Admiral Darlan, dropping the present office of Vice-Premier, would leave the Cabinet and remain the head of the French Armed Forces, nominally responsible only to Pétain.

Laval, proclaiming his policy, declared that he would aim at maintaining friendly relations both with Germany and the U.S.A., and these would be based on the solution of the following problems: Maintenance of the integrity

Laval's of the French Empire;
Return France's attitude in the
to Power war between Germany and Britain; and the
Alsace-Lorraine question, which only
"friendly understanding" with Ger-
many would solve.

On April 17 Pétain received the formal resignation of the former Cabinet, and the next day announced the new Cabinet, of which the Ministers were as follows:

Chief of Government, Foreign Affairs, Information and Interior: *M. Pierre Laval*.
Minister Without Portfolio: *M. Lucien Romier*. Minister of Justice: *Prof. Joseph Barthélemy*. Minister of Finance: *M. Pierre Cathala*. Minister of Agriculture and Food Supplies: *M. Jacques Leroy-Ladurie*. Minister of Education: *M. Abel Bonnard*.

The following day Pétain sought to justify the newly constituted Cabinet in a broadcast in which he said that at a moment as decisive as June 1940 he found himself associated once more with Laval, to continue the task of national recovery.

Under Pétain's presidency the first meeting of the new Cabinet was held in Vichy on April 20, Darlan also being present. Later the same day Laval, in a broadcast to the nation, said that he always returned to power when France was in peril, and blamed the French defeat on former governments. "For a long time," he said, "I have always affirmed that a 'rapprochement' between France and Germany was the indispensable condition of European peace. . . . At Montoire a new political principle was admitted, one in which neither the honour nor the vital interests of France were sacrificed. . . . The gigantic struggle Germany is waging against Bolshevism has not only extended the scope of the war but revealed its real meaning. Do you imagine that the Soviets, if victorious, would stop at our frontiers?" Accusing Britain of numerous military crimes, Laval ended by appealing for unity and cooperation in building the new France.

This strong propaganda speech was followed by an Order of the Day, issued by Admiral Darlan to the Vichy forces, saying "Rely on me, as I rely on you, to



IN THE FRENCH CONCENTRATION CAMP AT GURS

More than 200,000 men and women were imprisoned in concentration camps in Unoccupied France—Jews, so-called Communists, and refugees from other European lands. In most cases their only offence was that they were opposed to Nazism or Fascism and had not concealed their views. Bored, dejected, unhappy, they whiled away the long days of captivity.

Photo, Pictorial Press

follow the path of honour and defend the Empire under the high authority of the Marshal."

These political developments, the cause of an immediate increase in dissension, anti-Vichy and anti-German demonstrations, and sabotage in both zones, were received with anxiety in the Allied countries, and brought about a further split among Vichy officials abroad, some of whom joined the Free French.

An event of great significance to the Allied cause was the arrival in Unoccupied France on May 2, 1942, of General Henri Giraud, to attend the Franco-German talks at Moulins. Giraud, who had been a prisoner of war since May 20, 1940, had escaped from Königstein fortress in Saxony a week before (*see illus. p. 2168*). He was allowed full freedom of movement, the reason apparently being Vichy's hope of gaining his adherence to and active participation in their policy of collaboration with Germany.

Further talks took place in Moulins on May 11, in which Laval and Goering met to discuss current problems, among them that of speeding up the dispatch of French labour to Germany, in regard to which Laval had already commenced an intense propaganda drive for recruits, and for which numerous German recruiting bureaux had been set up in

France. A gesture on Pétain's part, not without significance, was the release the previous day of 500 "political prisoners."

Then came the British occupation of Diego Suarez, the naval base in Madagascar, on May 7, as a precaution against Japanese aggression. This move was strongly condemned by Pétain in a message to the Governor-General, M. Annet, on May 5, while Laval denied that Japan had attempted to gain control of the island. Similarly, Laval condemned the United States' precautionary action in Martinique—expressed in her note of May 10, in which she required "the immobilization of French warships and aircraft under American supervision*; American control of wireless and telegraphic communications and mail censorship; American control of commercial traffic and of persons travelling to and from the Antilles; French military and naval forces to be used for police duties; merchant ships at present immobilized to be put at American disposal; and gold and Government funds to be frozen for the future use of the French nation." In a note Laval acceded to some of these demands and expressed

Occupation of Madagascar

*French warships at Martinique included the aircraft carrier "Béarn" (22,146 tons) and the cruisers "Emile Bertin" (5,886 tons) and "Jeanne d'Arc" (6,496 tons).

France's willingness to negotiate through the Governor of the island, Admiral Georges Robert, regarding the other matters.

That Pétain was little more than a figurehead in the new Cabinet—an opinion widely held abroad—received some confirmation on June 6, when Laval replaced M. François Valentin, Director-General of the Legion (which had in effect become little more than an auxiliary police instrument of the Vichy Government), by M. Raymond Lachal, one of his own most ardent supporters. Pétain himself, speaking at a Legion dinner a few days later, gave

representatives of workers at Vichy on June 14. Declaring that in the interests of France he ardently desired and confidently expected a German victory, because France would become Communist otherwise, he reminded his audience that every French worker going to Germany released a young German worker to fight against Communism on the eastern front.

On the second anniversary (June 17) of the Armistice Pétain broadcast a message to his country in which he admitted the failure of his government to overcome hunger, want, discontent, and even anger among the people.

or to resign themselves to the downfall of their civilization. "I have been in power for two months," he said; "events have hardly been favourable to me. The Government finds itself confronted with new difficulties—British aggression in Madagascar and American intervention in the Antilles." Referring to Giraud's sensational escape from Germany, France's lack of raw materials, her great unemployment, he indicated that the only hope for the future of the country lay in sending French workers to the Reich.

During this decisive period of France's history dissension, unrest and sabotage were rife everywhere, particularly after Laval's return to power. This outward and active expression of French hatred for the conquerors and the Vichy regime was countered here, as elsewhere, by pitiless measures of repression, by shootings and other reprisals, and by imposing new and petty laws and curfews designed to curtail even further the limited freedom of the masses. Executions were so numerous that only one or two instances can be mentioned here. On February 2, as a result of dynamite attacks on German army installations and the wounding of German soldiers in January, General Otto von Schamburg, the Military Governor of Paris, announced that 100 French youths—"Jews and Communists"—would be deported to Eastern Europe and that six others had already been shot. This was followed two days later by a decree by General von Stulpnagel imposing sentences of forced labour, imprisonment, fine, and even death for people refusing to deliver any goods for requisitioning which might be demanded.

A Free French report dated April 21, 1942, stated that it was believed 500 Frenchmen had been executed by Germany for taking part in a rising following the British Commando raid at St. Nazaire on March 28.

Among bomb "outrages," which were numerous, most significant were those aimed at five local headquarters of Déat's Rassemblement National Populaire in Paris in early February, and similar attacks on the offices of Doriot's National People's Party at Cannes, Niort, Nantes, and Bourges in late June. Anti-Nazi and Anti-Vichy demonstrations were of frequent occurrence, as were also food riots, street battles and, especially, attacks on German soldiers. An indication is given by a statement published in Vichy that during 1941 the French police had made 5,390 arrests and 12,773 searches, and that between July 1, 1941, and February 18, 1942, some 230 acts of sabotage had been detected.



RENAULT LORRIES DENIED TO THE GERMAN WAR MACHINE

The great Renault factories at Billancourt, near Paris, were bombed by the R.A.F. on the night of March 3, 1942, and immense damage was done to the shops where tanks, lorries and staff cars were being produced for the Nazis. A general view is given in p. 2121 (where in error it is stated that the attack was made in daylight). Above, wrecked workshops where lorries were made on the Ile Seguin.

Photo, Free French Photographic Section

further substance to this belief when he said: "Laval and I are now marching hand in hand. . . . There are no more clouds between us. . . ."

Nevertheless, while Pétain was on the surface openly reconciled with Laval, the policy of Doriot's National People's (Fascist) Party was bringing him into open conflict with Laval, who stated on June 12 that he had forbidden Doriot to organize political rallies in Unoccupied France and to arm the special police of his National Party. "Doriot," he said, "wants to take the power for himself, but the power is the Government, and I am the Government."

Further testimony of Laval's keen desire to obtain popular support for his anti-Bolshevist programme was forthcoming in a speech he made to repre-

Despite this failure, he asked whether a return of past methods could have saved them. "In this succession of hopes, setbacks, uncertainties, sacrifices and disappointments which have marked the first two years of the Armistice," he said, "was it not in fact France—wounded France, blinded France—which was seeking herself? She will find herself, I am sure."

Five days later Laval, in a broadcast from Vichy, again appealed to French workers to go to Germany in large numbers and so secure the liberation of a large number of agriculturists. He referred again to the bogey of Bolshevism, saying that two alternatives faced France, either to integrate themselves, with their honour and interests respected, in a new and peaceful Europe.

PERSONALITIES OF CONQUERED FRANCE

As an aid to the understanding of the conflicting and tortuous policy of the Vichy Government (see Chapter 219) and the factors which conduced to the collapse in June 1940, the following character sketches are presented.

Jean François DARLAN

BORN in 1881; just before the First Great War broke out he was the youngest senior officer in the French Navy. He took an active part in the war and served in various seagoing posts thereafter until 1930, when he was appointed to a position in the Admiralty and began to seek political advancement.



On September 3, 1939, he became Commander of the French Fleet. After the French surrender he displayed a strong anti-British bias—though this might be explained by anxiety to make the best of the catastrophe for his own country's sake. In appraising his character it is

necessary to bear in mind the peculiarities of French politics and the many changes in administration. He was known in 1936 as the "Admiral of the Popular Front," and it was Blum who made him Naval Chief of Staff.

He represented the Admiralty in Pétain's "surrender" Ministry of June 1940; the next February he was advanced to Vice-Premier when Laval fell out of favour, but when Laval returned to power in April 1942 was displaced from political affairs—in compensation he received the appointment of C-in-C. French Forces. In May he ordered Madagascar to resist the Allied invasion. It happened that Darlan was in North Africa when the forces of the United Nations landed (November 1942). Pétain ordered him to resist, but he soon came to terms with the Allied commander and later offered his collaboration. He was appointed High Commissioner, and the criticism which this arrangement provoked was dissipated only by the death of Darlan on Christmas Day, 1942, at the hands of an assassin. He was responsible for organizing the Vichy police system on Nazi lines, and supported Laval in the spurious exchange scheme by which French prisoners of war were to be repatriated in proportion to workers sent to the Reich.

Marcel DÉAT

RETURNED from the First Great War as a captain, with pronounced pacifist views. He entered the Ecole Normale Supérieure and espoused philosophy, with a bias towards German culture. Later he took up politics and, aided by Léon Blum, became a Socialist Deputy. In 1936, with



others, he founded the Neo-Socialist Party. This concern favoured the reorganization of France on corporative and Fascist lines; its motto was Order, Authority, Nation. He was Minister for Air in 1936 when Hitler reoccupied the Rhineland, and rejected any military steps which

might have led to war. His blatant pacifism became notorious during the Munich crisis and was expressed in 1939 in his articles written under the slogan "We don't want to die for Danzig!"

His own party, the Rassemblement National Populaire, supported Laval. In his newspaper "L'Œuvre" he advocated the Parti Unique, embracing all other parties, of which he hoped to become leader, this being the line of cleavage with the organization sponsored by Jacques Doriot, who stood out against absorption in a single national party.

Count Fernand de BRINON

APPPOINTED Pétain's representative in Paris on November 4, 1940. An old friend of Otto Abetz, he had been playing the German game since 1930. An interview with Hitler in 1933 brought him to the public eye, and soon after this

he was advocating a pact between Britain, France, Germany and Italy—to give the Nazis a free hand in the East. He founded the Comité France-Allemagne, and frequently travelled to Germany, where he became a crony of Ribbentrop and was often received by Hitler, Goering and Hess. In 1938 his friend Laval used De Brinon as an unofficial envoy to Berlin, when in turn he arranged the visit to Paris of Ribbentrop. Upon the outbreak of war he was arrested by the French authorities and remained imprisoned until the German entry into Paris released him.



Jacques DORIOT

HAS been described as a typical mercenary, with a lust for power at any price. The son of a workman, he was a mechanic himself and for a time was a Communist—one of the founders of the French party. He



became a Deputy, and was Mayor of St. Denis, in the Paris "Red belt," until involvement in the Stavisky affair brought about his resignation. With a quick change he switched to the Right in 1934, founding the Parti Populaire Française (originally recruited among workmen) and advocating anti-Communist

views (1936). After the Armistice Doriot's party amalgamated with the Fascist Cagou-lards and absorbed the "Groupes d'Action." Later it had a section, known as the "Service d'Ordre," on the lines of the Nazi Gestapo. In May 1941 Doriot founded the French Anti-Bolshevik Legion. He claimed to be a "man of the Marshal," often at odds with Laval and Déat and personally loyal to Pétain. As strong a collaborationist as the others, he was said to favour the establishment of a complete Nazi state in France.

General Marie Gustave GAMELIN

BORN in 1872; to Frenchmen he was architect of the victory of the Marne in September 1914, under the direction of Marshal Joffre. In 1935 he became Chief of the French Army, replacing Weygand, who, by the turn of the wheel, was to succeed him when in May 1940 the armies were staggering under the German invasion.



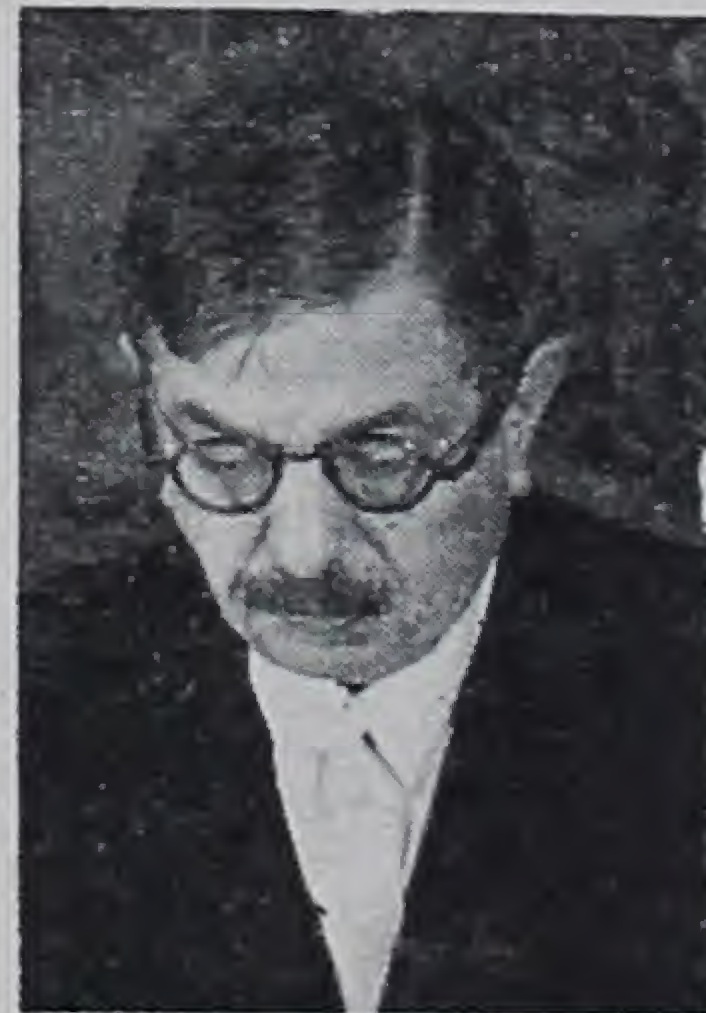
Gamelin was reputed to be a theorist rather than a leader. He favoured a defensive war. He was untinged by Fascism and never fought against democracy, and of his burning patriotism there was never any doubt. But it was during the period between 1936 and 1938,

when he was at the helm, that French aircraft production dropped vertically. He had no idea of blitzkrieg warfare and neglected tank production. He shared the responsibility for the uncompleted Maginot defences from the sea to Montmédy. Gamelin was among the soldiers and statesmen arraigned at Riom for the defeat of France; in September 1940 he was detained in a fortress by Pétain's orders.

Pierre LAVAL

BORN in 1883. After working his way through his legal studies to qualification he turned to politics and claimed to be a Socialiste-Révolutionnaire, under which label he became a Deputy. An open defeatist during the war of 1914-18. In 1926 he transferred to the Right, and it seems that his pro-German activities date from this period. As Foreign Minister he was concerned in the Saar plebiscite; he shut his eyes to Hitler's introduction of conscription. Later he was a party to the understanding which encouraged Mussolini to attack Abyssinia. In 1936, with Laval still in office, Hitler occupied the demilitarized Rhineland; a few weeks later the Popular Front Government was in power and Laval had left office for the nonce. He came back in June 1940 as Vice-Premier in time to assist with the surrender of France.

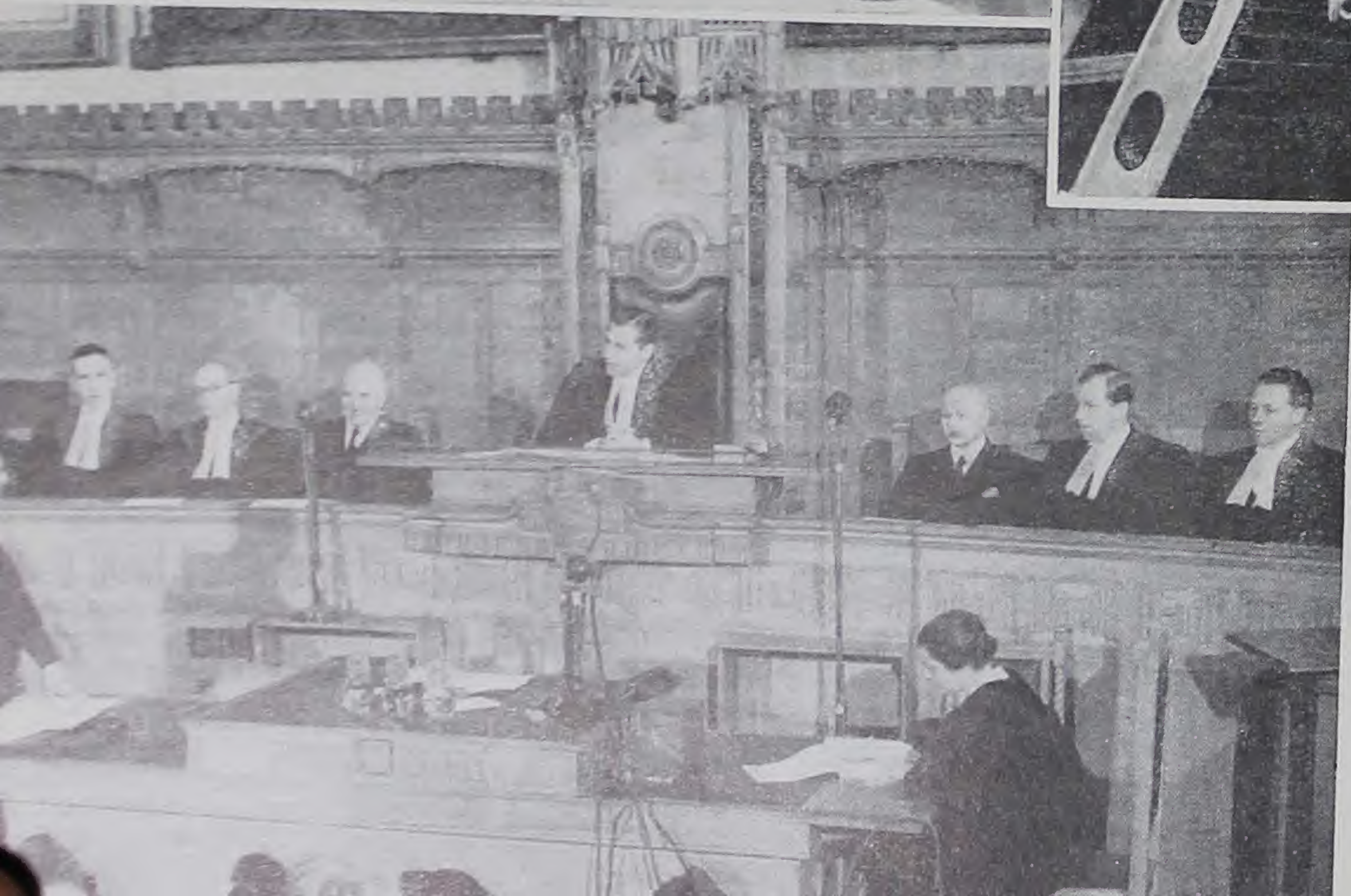
The real Gauleiter of France, he is thought to have manoeuvred the selection of Marshal Pétain as a figurehead who would command respect and obedience. In December 1940 Laval overreached himself and was dismissed by the Marshal, but he reappeared



in April 1942 as Chief of the Government, ousting Darlan from that position. After this he became the arch-collaborationist, working always to aid Germany. With his crony Marcel Déat he was shot at and wounded on April 27, 1941, during a Fascist Legion ceremony at Versailles.

CREATING A NEW *DUTCH ARMY AND AIR FORCE

In addition to training establishments in Britain the Royal Netherlands Government had other centres in Canada and the United States. Top right, an Army camp at Stratford, Ontario, where Dutch nationals from all parts of North America were trained. Below, Dutch student-pilots at a U.S. Army base are inspected by their commander, Major-General L. H. van Oyen (centre). They were here given basic and advanced instruction under a programme worked out by remnants of the Netherlands East Indies Air Force in coordination with the U.S. Army Air Force. Another photograph of General van Oyen is in page 2195.



ROYAL NETHERLANDS NAVY AND MERCHANT MARINE

The Netherlands destroyer 'Isaac Sweers' (above, where an anti-aircraft gun crew is seen at practice) with H.M. destroyers 'Sikh,' 'Maori' and 'Legion' engaged a strong Italian cruiser force in the Mediterranean in December 1941: one enemy cruiser was sunk, the other was left ablaze; an enemy M.T.B. was sunk and a torpedo-boat damaged. Six officers and men of the 'Isaac Sweers' were awarded British decorations for their part in this gallant operation. Bottom, left, in November 1941 a Dutch Maritime Court was set up in the Middlesex Guildhall, Westminster, to deal with offences committed in Netherlands ships at sea.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Pictorial Press; G.P.U., Sport & General.

FREE BELGIUM AND HOLLAND, FIGHTING FRANCE, AND NORWAY

A counterpart to Chapters 218 and 219, the following pages tell the story of the progress made by the Free Governments in London, the French National Committee and the Danish Council, in the task of organizing for the liberation of oppressed Europe. Except for Fighting France, where the narrative ends with the opening of the United Nations' campaign for the recapture of North Africa, events are taken up to the end of 1942

THE Free Belgian Government in Britain was fortunate in having funds for prosecuting the war at the side of the United Nations, since a great part of its gold reserve had been saved from the Nazis. Some of this Belgian gold was of the utmost assistance to Britain. At the beginning of March 1941 the Chancellor of the Exchequer explained to M. Gutt (Belgian Minister of Finance) that Great Britain had bled herself white to pay for deliveries of war material from America. Some days might elapse before the Lend-Lease Bill was passed, and deliveries might be stopped meanwhile if Britain could not find gold to pay for them. So Belgium was asked to help by the loan of 3,000,000 ounces of gold, and within three days the requisite agreement was signed. The gold, said M. Gutt in a broadcast on April 12, 1943, had now been returned to the Belgian Government in Britain.

At the beginning of 1942 the 350,000 tons of Belgian merchant tonnage which came into the service of the United Nations had been reduced by nearly half, though a portion of this wastage was made up by new construction.

War Effort of Free Belgium

Over 300 officers and men had lost their lives in war service. More than 100 fishing vessels were converted to patrol vessels, balloon-barrage boats and minesweepers, while most of the rest continued to ply their trade and bring supplies to British ports. In the Belgian section of the Royal Navy corvettes flying the national colours took their part in escorting convoys. The section at the end of 1941 numbered 14 officers and 250 other ranks. A training centre for Petty Officers and Engine Room Artificers was opened in August 1941. D. Geluyckens, a cadet of the section, came first in the final examination of his class at the Royal Naval College in May 1942.

In the air offensive against the Nazis Belgian airmen fought side by side with British pilots. There were special Belgian squadrons, in some cases commanded by British leaders

and in others under Belgian officers. In November 1941 the Belgian Croix de Guerre was conferred upon Squadron-Leader Mills Richey, R.A.F., for bravery and coolness while leading Belgian



STANDARD FOR BELGIAN AIR FORCE

As told in the text, when Belgium's Aviation Militaire was reconstituted on British soil (February 12, 1942) her Finance and Defence Minister, M. Camille Gutt, presented an historic standard saved from the enemy and brought to Britain in 1940. Left, M. Gutt; right, Lieut.-Col. Wouters, C.B.E., M.C., Commandant of the Aviation Militaire.

Photo, Fox

fighter pilots on operations over the Continent. A few weeks later M. Gutt presented the Croix to the relatives of ten Belgian airmen killed in action, and decorations for gallantry were given to nine Belgian airmen.

The Aviation Militaire of Belgium was reconstituted on British soil on February 12, 1942. Then, in the presence of Sir Archibald Sinclair, M.

Gutt presented an historic standard to the new Air Force. The flag had originally been given to one of the Belgian air regiments by King Albert. After the capitulation of May 28, 1940, it had been brought to Britain by an air officer. In January 1942 Squadron-Leader Leroy Duvivier had been the first Allied officer in the R.A.F.V.R. to receive the command of an entirely British squadron. He led his aircraft in one of the first assaults on Dieppe (when also a Belgian formation was taken into battle by its own officer), and in the following September was promoted Wing-Commander.

The war effort of the Belgian Congo was a notable contribution to the Allied cause. Under two agreements (January 21, 1941 and June 5, 1942) Britain agreed to take copper, cotton, copal, ground nuts and palm kernels. Over and above these commodities there were available tin, tin ore, tungsten ore, zinc, lead, manganese. At the same time as the second Purchase Agreement a military agreement also was signed with Britain.

The Dutch Merchant Marine contributed 2,500,000 tons to the United Nations' shipping pool, and some 20,000 seamen had come over to the Allies with the ships. Up to the end of June 1941 war losses

had amounted to about 370,000 tons; the Merchant Marine had borne a share of the evacuation of Allied forces from Greece and Crete. Dutch Naval vessels took turn with those of the Allies in convoy and patrol duty, and Netherlands submarines sank Italian tankers and supply ships in the Mediterranean. The Netherlands Premier, Dr. G. S. Gerbrandy, in his New Year broadcast to occupied Holland on January 1, 1942, said that Queen Wilhelmina had awarded 290 distinctions to personnel of the Netherlands Navy and Merchant Marine during the year.

In the previous November Prince Bernhard had presented the Queen with a cheque for 6,500,000 guilders (raised by contributions of the Dutch

**Free
Netherlands
Government**



ARMOURED COLUMN OF THE BELGIAN CONGO FORCE

The small Congo 'Force Publique' at the outbreak of war had been a constabulary rather than an army, but its units were strengthened and further equipped to take an important part in the reconquest of Abyssinia, after a journey of 1,000 miles up the Congo river and another 700 overland to Juba. In May 1942 an extensive reorganization was carried out in readiness for further operations with the Allies.

Photo, Keystone

throughout the world) to build a new destroyer to replace the "Van Galen" (see page 1523) sunk by the Germans in May 1940. A typical example of skill and bravery occurred in January 1942, when the Dutch tug "Zwarte Zee" rescued the 5,000-ton merchantman "Macbeth" in mid-ocean, towing the vessel 900 miles in terrible weather to a safe port. In December 1941 had come Japan's attack upon British and American territories in the Far East, and the threat to the Netherlands East Indies. The events which led up to this crisis are recounted in Chapter 207; in that Chapter and the one which follows it is the story of the attack upon the Dutch islands and the heroic resistance of the Dutch and Indonesian garrisons. During those difficult months Queen Wilhelmina was a continual inspiration to her peoples. War was declared upon Japan on December 8, and a Proclamation by the Queen was read by the Netherlands Premier, broadcasting from Radio Orange that night. At the first meeting of the Pacific War Council in London (February 10) Dr. Gerbrandy and Jonkheer van Verduynen (Netherlands Minister to Britain) represented the Netherlands Government.

In London the Dutch Government called up all Netherlands subjects aged 17-42. A contingent of Dutch soldiers arrived from Canada in April 1942, and a detachment came from South Africa to join the Netherlands Brigade. In May Great Britain and the Netherlands

Government concluded an agreement for the organization and employment of Dutch troops in the United Kingdom. Some 600 cadets of the Netherlands East Indies Army and Navy Air Forces, who had escaped from Java, reached San Francisco by way of Australia and went for training to Jackson, Missouri.

A new destroyer, the "Tjerk Hiddesz," built on the Clyde, went into service with the Royal Netherlands Navy in July. In August six officers and men of the destroyer "Isaac Sweers" (see page 1896) received British decorations for their part in a Mediterranean

night action: one received the D.S.O., two the D.S.C., and three the D.S.M. The senior officer was awarded the O.B.E. Four airmen of the N.E.I. Army Air Force were awarded British decorations in July. Dutch and Indonesian airmen continued to escape from Java and Sumatra to Australia, whence they were sent on their way to America for training and organization. A contingent of troops evacuated from the N.E.I. arrived in August at the Dutch West Indian island of Curaçao. (See p. 2128.)

In May 1942, two years after the German invasion of Holland, the status of the British and United States missions was raised to that of an Embassy. In the middle of June Queen Wilhelmina and the Foreign Minister, M. van Kleffens, reached Ottawa. After a short stay the Queen went to Lee, Massachusetts, to see Princess Juliana, and on the 29th President Roosevelt there paid her a visit. On August 6 the Queen addressed Congress at Washington. "No surrender," she said, was the motto of her people. "We are with you and the other United Nations to the last." On August 26 she arrived in London in time to attend at the Albert Hall a

Queen
Wilhelmina
in U.S.A.



BIRTHDAY GIFT TO A BRAVE QUEEN

By her brave and spirited leadership Queen Wilhelmina helped her subjects to face months of setback and adversity. To mark her 61st birthday Dutch people all over the world contributed 6,500,000 guilders for the purchase of a successor to the destroyer 'Van Galen,' which went down fighting during the German attack on Rotterdam (see pp. 1271 and 1523). Here Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands hands the cheque to Her Majesty.

Photo, "New York Times" Photos

LAUNCH OF U.S.S. 'IOWA'

On the morning of August 27, 1942, the great U.S. battleship 'Iowa' slid down the ways in Brooklyn Navy Yard into the East River. This photograph was taken shortly before, while the final touches were being given for the ceremony. First of a class of six, she had been laid down in June 1940; she was 880 feet long over all, with a beam of 108 feet, and displaced 45,000 tons (52,000 with full load). Unofficially she was credited with a potential speed of 35 knots, and, looking at her clean, graceful lines, one can well imagine that even this figure might be excelled. Her main armament was to be nine 16-inch guns of 50 calibre, with a secondary armament of twenty 5-inch of 38 calibre. Provision was made for four aircraft. Her sister ships were 'New Jersey,' 'Missouri,' 'Wisconsin,' 'Illinois,' and 'Kentucky,' some laid down in 1940 and the rest the following year. In magnitude even these giants were eclipsed by the five Montana class battleships under construction: displacement, 58,000 tons (65,000 full load); length 903 feet and beam 120 feet; all were laid down in 1941.

*Direct colour photograph by
Dmitri Kessel*



NAZI VANDALISM AS SEEN BY THOSE WHO STROVE TO STAY IT



DRESSING STATION

Reginald Mills



THE ASSEMBLY ROOMS, BATH

Norman Hepple



ST. CATHERINE'S CHAPEL, EALING



ST. ALBAN'S, WOOD STREET, LONDON

Exhibited at Burlington House, London, August 1942

FIREMEN ARTISTS' GRIM RECORD OF RAID DEVASTATION



Leonard Rosoman



J. Kingsley Sutton
Reproduced from direct colour photographs



QUEEN'S HALL : DISCORD

F. T. W. Cook



EARLY MORNING. HIGH STREET, CANTERBURY

Bernard Hailstone



TRIBUTE TO THE AMERICAN HEROES OF PEARL HARBOR, DECEMBER 7, 1941
Men from the United States Naval Air Station of Manoa, in Hawaii, are placing Hawaiian garlands on the flag-decorated graves of comrades killed in the Japanese attack of six months before. In the background is Diamond Head. The graves were dug along the shore of the Pacific, in an extremely beautiful setting.

Direct colour photograph by Associated Press

demonstration in which Dutch people were celebrating her birthday.

As 1942 opened Free French H.Q. in London were presented with the problem of the islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, 10 miles S. of Newfoundland. A force under Admiral Muselier had landed there on December 24, 1941, and seized the Governor, who had instituted what was described as a reign of terror, with reprisals against supporters of the Allies. Muselier's action raised diplomatic difficulties, and Vichy tried to bring pressure to bear through the United States Government. The seeds were sown of dissensions which later hindered agreement between pro-Ally Frenchmen in North Africa and De Gaulle's supporters.

Cordial relations with America were of paramount importance, and naturally the U.S. Government had to be persuaded that the Free French really

represented Frenchmen and had a policy consonant with democratic principles. The French National Committee in London had declared its sympathy with the Washington Declaration by 26 countries (January 1, 1942). On March 2 the U.S. Government stated that it had recognized the authority of the Free French over French islands in the Pacific, and that America would cooperate for the defence of these territories. On April 4 it announced the establishment of a U.S. Consulate-General at Brazzaville—"in view of the importance of French Equatorial Africa in the united war effort."

On May 5 there came the British landings in Madagascar (*see* Chapter 225) to forestall a possible Japanese use of that territory. In the West Indian island of Martinique the efforts of the United States Government to come to agreement with Admiral Robert, the Vichy commander, had proved inconclusive; Robert had been willing to immobilize three French warships there, but not to hand over the considerable tonnage of merchant shipping in the harbours. On May 27 General de Gaulle said that the Martinique negotiations had raised the issue of the status of the Free French. He characterized the United States' view of the Free French movement as an entirely military one as "playing with words," and said it was impossible for the Free French to restrict themselves to "providing cannon-fodder and firing parties for war against the Axis." He wished to broaden the basis of the movement, to exclude no Frenchman who would work for France against the Axis.

A notable change was made in the title of the movement on July 14—le

Quatorze Juillet, anniversary of the taking of the Bastille, 1789. Henceforth "Fighting France" was to be the name. Definitions of the movement and of the French National Committee were agreed with the British Government. On the 9th the U.S. Government had appointed Admiral Stark and Brig.-General Boite to consult with the Committee in London on all matters relating to the conduct of the war. A memorandum to General de Gaulle announced the U.S. Government's agreement with the view of the Committee that the destiny and political organization of France must be determined by the free expression of the French people. Another stage in the recognition of Fighting France was

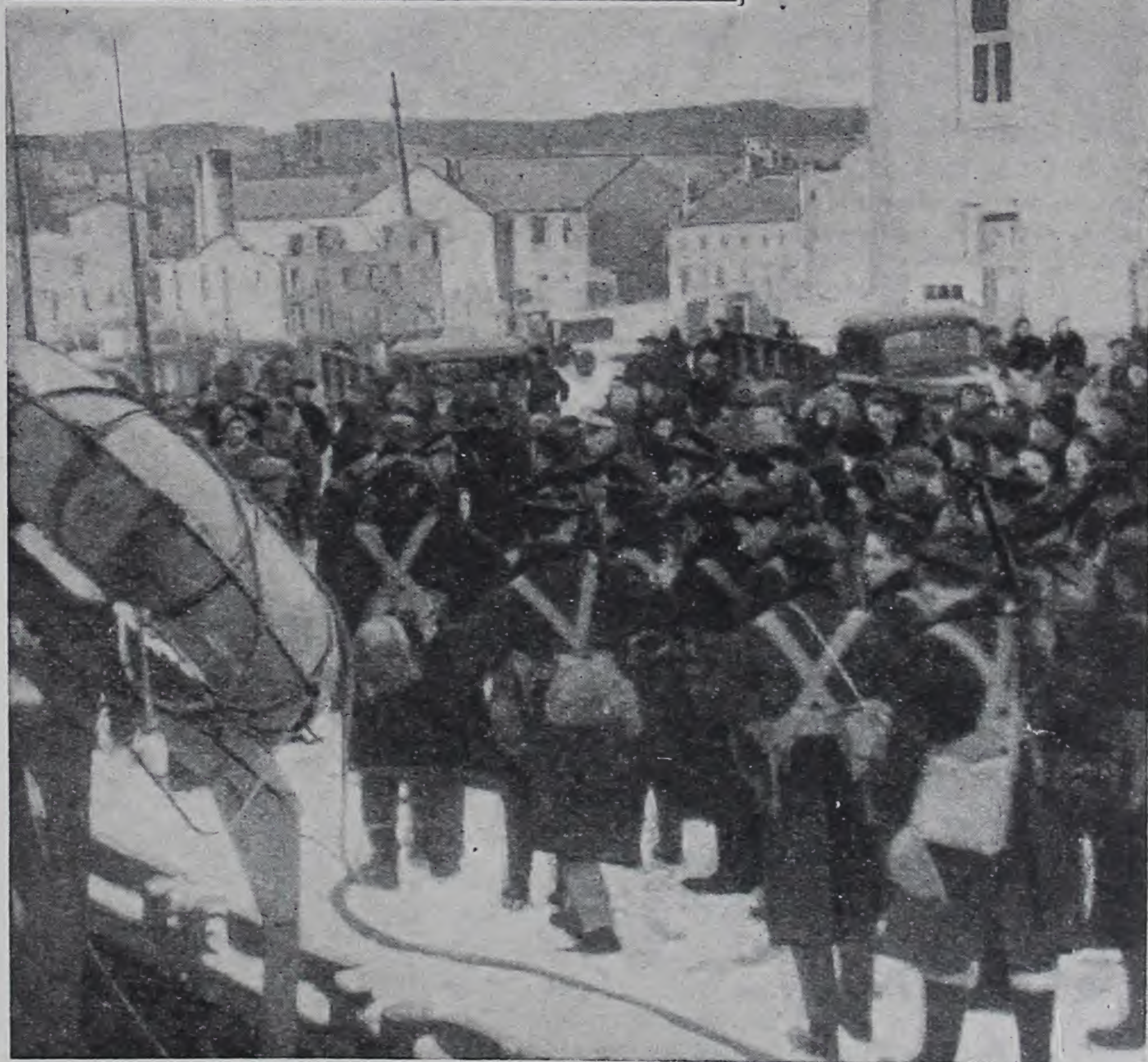
PLÉBISCITE

DU 25 DÉCEMBRE 1941

SECTION DE SAINT-PIERRE

Ralliement à la France Libre

Collaboration avec les Puissances de l'axe



MUSELIER OCCUPIES ST. PIERRE AND THE MIQUELONS

Acting under the orders of the Free French National Committee, Admiral Muselier (inset) on December 24, 1941, landed a force on the small French islands of St. Pierre, Grand and Petit Miquelon, 10 miles S. of Newfoundland. Lower photograph, some of the landing party; top, form for the plebiscite held on Christmas Day, which resulted in almost all the islanders rallying to Free France.

Photos, Associated Press; "New York Times" Photos



DE GAULLE'S VISIT TO FIGHTING FRENCH IN LIBYA

In September 1942, after a conference with the commanders in Syria, General de Gaulle went to Libya, where he decorated General Koenig. At top, with Generals Catroux and Rumbolt, he is seen at a parade of coloured troops. Lower photograph shows airmen of the Fighting French 'Lorraine' Bombing Squadron, in front of one of their Blenheim bombers.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Commissariat National à l'Information



reached in August when the validity of its passports was acknowledged by the Governments of the British Commonwealth, of the U.S.A., the U.S.S.R., Belgium and the Netherlands, and of many Latin American countries. It was announced from Moscow on September 27 that the Soviet had agreed that the French National Committee was the only body entitled to organize the participation in the war of French citizens and to represent their interests.

The movement itself was reinforced by French leaders who from time to time made their way to Britain: André Philip, former Deputy for Lyons, who was appointed National Commissioner for the Interior and for Labour; Charles Vallin, a former vice-president of the French Social Party (earlier the Croix de Feu). In October 1942 he was sent on a mission to the French troops on the Chad-Libyan border.

General de Gaulle was indefatigable in welding together the Fighting French and building up military forces to aid the Allies. On January 20, 1942, he declared in a broadcast that Free France and Russia were allies: "Every German soldier

**De Gaulle's
Inspiring
Leadership**

killed or frozen in Russia, and every German gun, plane or tank destroyed on the Russian front gives France another chance to rise and conquer." The return of Pierre Laval to power in April called forth a striking broadcast from the Free French leader. The new Vichy Government, said De Gaulle, was just another stage in the game Hitler had started playing against France and the world in June 1940. At the end of April he called upon Frenchmen to make a nation-wide silent demonstration on May 1 "against slavery, misery and starvation."

The General visited Syria in August and conferred with General Catroux. At Beirut he met Mr. Wendell Willkie. On the way to the Chad Territory he took the opportunity to see the Fighting French troops under General Larminat in the Western Desert and to decorate General Koenig, hero of Bir Hakeim (see Chapter 224), with the Cross of Liberation. At Brazzaville he saw Lord Swinton, British Minister of State for the West African Colonies. On September 25 General de Gaulle was back in London. Six weeks later (November 8) as the Americans were landing in Algeria, he sounded a clarion call to Frenchmen in North Africa to join the Allies. Next day (9th) General Henri Giraud arrived in Algiers to lead the French movement for liberation and to organize the Army to fight alongside the Allies. The political and



GENERAL ALEXANDER WITH HEROES OF BIR HACHEIM

Accompanied by General Larminat (left), General Sir H. R. L. G. Alexander inspects a unit of Fighting French Bren carriers and crews. He had just decorated officers and men for gallantry at Bir Hacheim under the leadership of General Koenig, whom General de Gaulle personally presented with the Cross of Liberation in September 1942.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

military events in North Africa are dealt with in another Chapter, but a short account of General Giraud's adventures belongs here.

The Germans announced on April 25, 1942, that Giraud had escaped from the prisoner-of-war camp at Koenigstein, and they offered a reward of 100,000 Reichsmarks for his capture (see illus., p. 2168). By way of Switzerland he reached Vichy, whence came reports that he had signed a pledge of fidelity to Pétain but had refused to pledge himself not to take up arms against the Germans. When the time for the Allied operations against North Africa approached he had been brought across the Mediterranean in a British submarine.



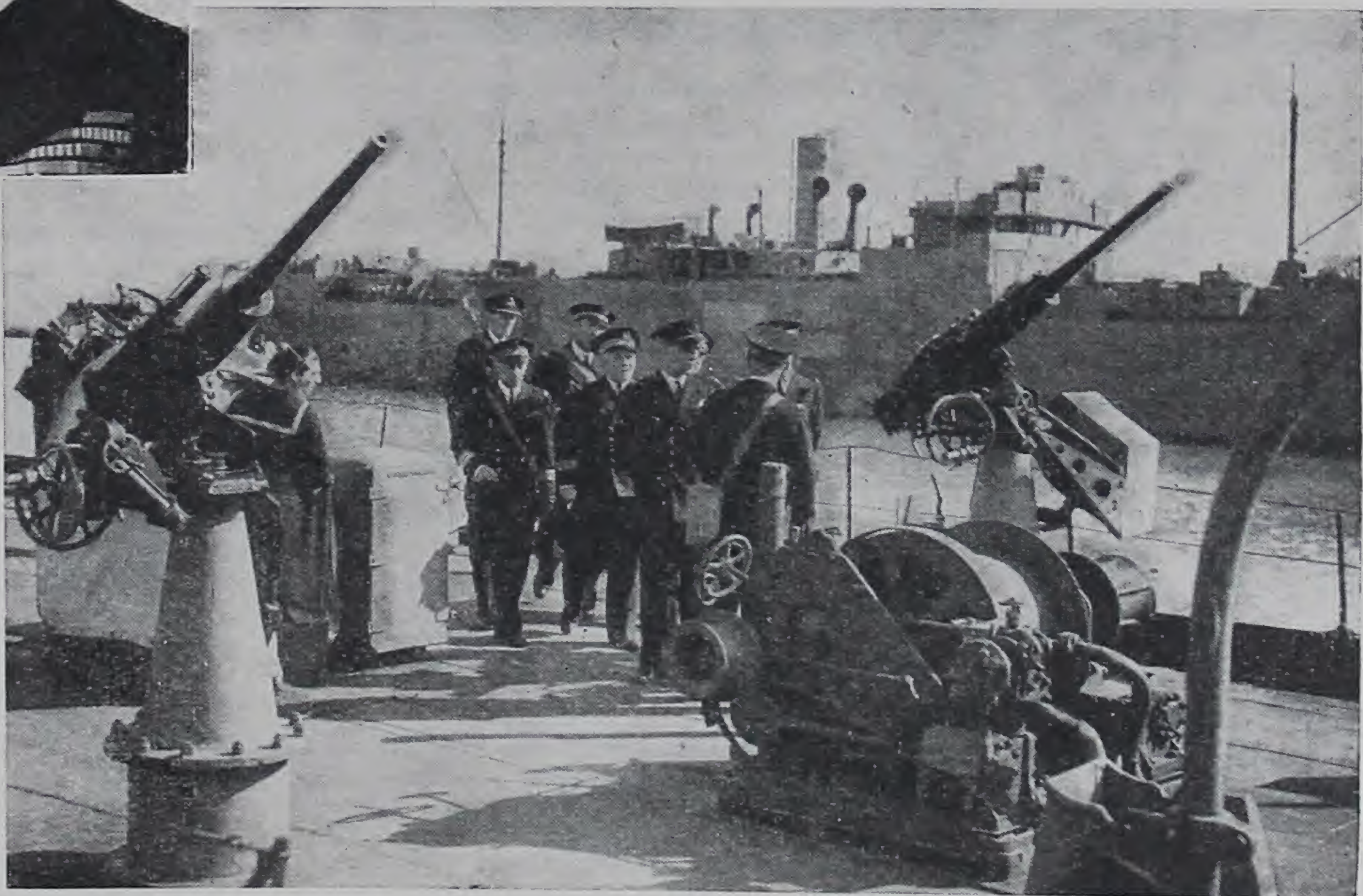
1941 the "Kong Haakon VII," a cargo ship of 10,000 tons, was launched by the King himself at a Scottish shipyard, first of the replacements. (See illus., page 2174.)

The Commander-in-Chief of the Royal Norwegian Navy was Rear-Admiral Elias

Corneliussen (appointed in November 1941). By the end of 1942 that Navy comprised 25 warships—destroyers, submarines, corvettes, motor torpedo-boats and motor launches—and about 30 auxiliary vessels. The personnel numbered 490 officers, with about 4,500 petty officers and ratings (about 1,200 posted as gunners in Norwegian merchant ships). Norwegian warships operated with other Allied Naval units on escort and other duties. In the remarkable raids on Norwegian islands they transported troops to the scene, and one such combined operation was entirely a Norwegian affair. Destroyers of the Royal Norwegian Navy escorted troopships in the landings on North Africa (November 8, 1942).

Around the nucleus of some hundred Norwegians in Britain in the summer of 1940 a number of Norwegian Field Units were built up, including infantry, artillery and specialized branches such as parachute troops. They were trained with British units and also at a Norwegian Military College set up for the purpose. From this force went units to assist in the Commando raids mentioned above. Behind the scheme was the future plan of providing officers and N.C.O.s for the people's army to be levied when the work of liberation should be begun. At the head of the Norwegian Army was Major-General Johan Beichmann. A High Command was established in February 1942 with

Norway's
New
Army



NEW WARSHIP FOR FIGHTING FRENCH NAVY

In June 1942 Admiral Auboyneau (inset), who succeeded Adm. Muselier as C.-in-C. Fighting French Navy, visited some of the ships of that growing fleet, and is here inspecting one recently handed over by the builders. The inset photograph was taken in September, at the opening of a Naval training centre named 'Bir Hacheim' in honour of the memorable stand by General Koenig's force.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Central Press



FREE DANES CELEBRATE CONSTITUTION DAY

The ceremony was held on June 6, 1941, in the wrecked church of St. Clement Danes, in the Strand (destroyed by German bombs on the night of October 8, 1940). A new national flag was presented and dedicated, to replace the one destroyed by enemy action. Another photograph of the church is in page 1248.

Photo, Topical Press

Major-General Wilhelm Hansteen as C.-in-C. All three arms—Navy, Army and Air Force—thus came under General Hansteen's supreme command.

In April 1941 the Royal Norwegian Army Air Force and the Naval Air Force were united under the command of Rear-Admiral Hjalmar Riiser-Larsen, who was a seasoned airman as well as a naval officer. He had been an explorer in both the Arctic and the Antarctic, and his knowledge of these regions was a valuable asset. About 120 Norwegian airmen had escaped to Britain after the disastrous campaign of April 1940. A training centre was established near Toronto in Canada and here a Norwegian Air Force was rebuilt. It happened that 100 modern aircraft had been ordered by the Norwegian

served in the Ferry Command, bringing bombers to Britain across the Atlantic.

Though Denmark remained neutral and was in friendly relations with Germany there were many Danes throughout the world who were only too willing to fight and work against the Nazis to free their country from German hegemony. In Britain there were the Free Danish Association and the Danish Council. On March 11, 1942, the British Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs stated that the British Government had recognized the Council. On this same occasion it was announced that that Government had decided to recognize Count Reventlow (Danish Minister in London) and Dr. Henrik Kauffman (Danish Minister in Washington) as continuing to be responsible for the pro-

Government from America in March 1940; these were delivered to the training centre and taken over by the eager airmen. As time went on there was a steady stream of other Norwegians. More aircraft were obtained, and the Air Force grew rapidly.

At the end of 1942 a squadron was operating from bases in Iceland, equipped with Northrop seaplanes. They escorted merchantmen, chased U-boats and did patrol work, besides ambulance flying. Fighter squadrons operated from British bases and carried out raids on enemy-occupied territory in France. A Coastal Command unit, equipped with modern long-range flying boats, took part in distant ocean patrols against enemy planes and submarines. For the sake of the training and experience a number of Norwegian pilots

tection of such Danish interests as were not under enemy control. Dr. Kauffman had been dismissed by the Copenhagen Government after he had agreed to place Greenland under the protection of the United States (April 11, 1941).

On January 2, 1942, Kauffman proclaimed his adherence to the principles of the United Nations' Declaration of January 1, an action in which he was supported by the Danish Council in London and by other Free Danish organizations. Count Reventlow had broken with the Copenhagen Government in December 1941. In the following March he was dismissed from his post because he had assumed the office of honorary president of the Free Danish Association of Britain. All officials in the diplomatic and consular services who had sided with the Count were dismissed at the same time.

The Chairman of the Danish Council was Mr. John Christmas Moller, a former Conservative leader and member of the Coalition Government. He had been forced out of office on October 3, 1940, and ejected from Parliament in the following January. He escaped with his wife and son to Sweden, and later visited the organizations of Free Danes in the United States and Canada.



STANDARD OF FREE NORWAY

At a Scottish base, where Norwegian Army units train for the task of liberation, General Fleischner chats to the standard-bearer after inspecting the men. General Fleischner commanded the Norwegian forces at Narvik.

Photo, Photopress

CANADA, SOUTH AFRICA AND NEW ZEALAND PREPARE FOR THE OFFENSIVE

This Chapter continues the war story of the Dominions during the first half of 1942. Australian events are dealt with in Chapter 211, covering the same period. Despite setbacks and disappointments it was a fruitful six months in which war production and organization were immensely improved ready for the coming switch to the offensive

THE British High Commissioner for Canada, Mr. Malcolm MacDonald, said on May 1, 1942, that already in Canada's Navy, Army and Air Force there were many more men than at any period during the war of 1914-18. Even so, Canada was intensifying its war effort and, over and above all this, plans were being prepared for a scheme of social security to meet conditions in the post-war world. The Dominion (population 11,500,000) was awaiting with high expectation the moment when the Canadian Army in Britain, which was to be greatly reinforced toward the end of 1942, could form one of the sharpest and most powerful spearheads of an invasion of the Continent. Visiting Canada during the first six months of 1942, Lieutenant-General McNaughton, Commander-in-Chief of the Canadian Army in Britain, disclosed that such a form of military strategy was in prospect.

As had been the case from the outset of the war, the feature most emphasized among Canada's contributions to the united effort was her incalculably valuable part in the British Commonwealth Air Training Plan. By May 1942, two years and

Air Training Plan

four months after its inception, the plan was in full operation. Striking recognition of this achievement was reflected in the decision of those members of the United Nations with air training projects in operation on the North American Continent to hold a conference in Ottawa that month. The object was to discuss methods for coordinating the plan with the air training programmes of the United States of America and of others among the United Nations. During the January-June period men flowed into the Canadian armed forces at a steady rate, but an interesting feature of the figures was the planned drop in

recruitment for the Air Force. Enlistment figures published under the authority of the Hon. J. T. Thorson, Minister of National War Services, and issued in May, showed that intakes to the end of 1941, besides the programme for the current year, were those given in the table (foot of first column).

The chief task of the Royal Canadian Air Force was the administration of the Air Training Plan. The United Kingdom, Australia, New Zealand, and Canada cooperated in this enterprise, but essentially it was Canadian: Canada supplied more than 80 per cent of the man-power, and paid 600 millions of Canadian dollars out of a total of 900 million dollars which the plan was costing. Apart from this the operational strength of the Air Force was rapidly increased. It was estimated that expenditures for home war establishment in 1942-43 would be about 315 million Canadian dollars—compared with 1939-

40, over 28 million dollars; 1940-41, over 50 million dollars; 1941-42, about 115 million dollars. In addition to estimates for the current fiscal year, long-range commitments of 120 million dollars were made for home defence.

So far as the Navy was concerned its personnel, in July 1942, totalled more than 36,000; more than 6,000 young Canadians were on the waiting lists of 18 training establishments across Canada. During the period January-June, 1942, the Army underwent expansion and reorganization. Its current programme called for expenditures of 1,000,000,000 Canadian dollars. In July 1942 the active army numbered more than 320,000, a large percentage being overseas. The Royal Canadian Air Force had a personnel exceeding 115,000—exclusive of airmen of other nations attached to the Air Training Plan; and at the same time there were 22 R.C.A.F. squadrons overseas. The majority were in Britain,



OTTAWA CONFERENCE ON AIR TRAINING

A conference of the United Nations opened on May 18, 1942, and was attended by representatives of the Allied Powers having a direct interest in the Commonwealth Air Training Scheme. Here are representatives of the ABCD Powers: left to right, Major-General Barton K. Yount, U.S. Commanding General of the Flying Training School; Captain Harold H. Balfour, British Under-Secretary for Air; Major-General T. H. Shen, Commander Chinese Air Forces in the U.S.A.; Major-General L. H. van Oyen, Netherlands East Indies Army.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

1941 Intake	1942 Programme	Prospective Total to March 31, 1943
Navy .. 27,000	13,000- 13,000	40,000- 40,000
Army .. 295,000	90,000-100,000	385,000-395,000
Air Force 100,000	70,000- 80,000	170,000-180,000
Totals 422,000	173,000-193,000	595,000-615,000

Figures are for enlistments only and do not indicate the number of men actually on strength.



CANADA BUILT AND MANNED SCORES OF CORVETTES

A direct answer to the U-boat menace, the corvette was a small, sturdy and speedy vessel with formidable armament—able to be built in considerable quantity in a short time. (See illus., p. 1763 and also that facing p. 2039.) Above, at a Canadian west coast shipyard, a corvette is being launched sideways into the Navy basin.

Photo, Pictorial Press

although one was in the Far East and another in the near East. Up to March 12 a total of 1,857 Canadians had been killed, 466 were missing, and 1,817 had been taken prisoner.

As in Australia, an industrial revolution had resulted from the creation of war industries in Canada since 1939. Under the supervision of the Department of Munitions and Supply, war industries were built up in all parts of the country. More than 600,000 Canadians were employed directly or indirectly because of this industrial expansion, and it was expected that by the end of 1942 another 100,000 workers would have been brought in.

Between the end of 1939 and March 1942 orders valued at more than 3,447,000,000 Canadian dollars had been placed for war equip-

Canada's War Bill
ment and supplies on behalf of the United Kingdom and Canadian

Governments and those of other countries. Of this sum, 2,047,000,000 dollars represented an order placed on Canada's account. The aircraft industry alone, in July 1942, employed about 50,000 persons where, in pre-war days, it had given work to a mere 1,000. The ship-building industry, working on a 550,000,000 dollar programme, employed directly and indirectly about 60,000; chemicals and explosives, over 45,000; tanks and mechanical transport, about 67,000 directly and indirectly.

All this costly expenditure on war involved a lowering of the standard of

living. In order to meet the war bill (and to secure the highest revenue in Canada's history) taxation was increased sharply on incomes and on many forms of goods and services; also entirely new taxes were imposed. It was evident in June 1942 that income tax and national defence taxes, till then raised separately, would be combined with a compulsory savings deduction and taken from salaries and wages, or would be collected by means of compulsory instalments.



WOMEN INSPECTORS IN A QUEBEC SHELL FACTORY

Taken in May 1942, this photograph shows a batch of shiny 7.2-in. shells ready for the final gauging before delivery. Women trained under Canada's War Emergency Programme proved skilled and steady workers. A year later nearly a quarter of a million women were directly or indirectly employed in war industries.

Photo, Canadian Official

It was also clear then that the rate of excess profits would be raised from 75 per cent to 100 per cent (one-fifth of the amount raised at that rate to be returned after the war for the rehabilitation of business and industry in the post-war period).

On January 18 Field-Marshal Sir John Dill arrived in Ottawa to confer with Mr. MacKenzie King, the Ministers of National Defence, Navy and Air, and their Chiefs of Staff.

A few days later, on the 26th, Mr. MacKenzie King announced the formation of an Overseas Canadian Army consisting of two Army Corps. Making the first comprehensive statement of his 1942 plans, the Prime Minister said the new programme would create a modern Canadian Overseas Army, self-contained and capable of operating in any theatre of war. One Corps would consist of three infantry divisions and two tank brigades; the other of two armoured divisions. Speaking of the threat on the Pacific coast, he said a reorganization would take place of the reserve Army in Canada, numbering 140,000 men.

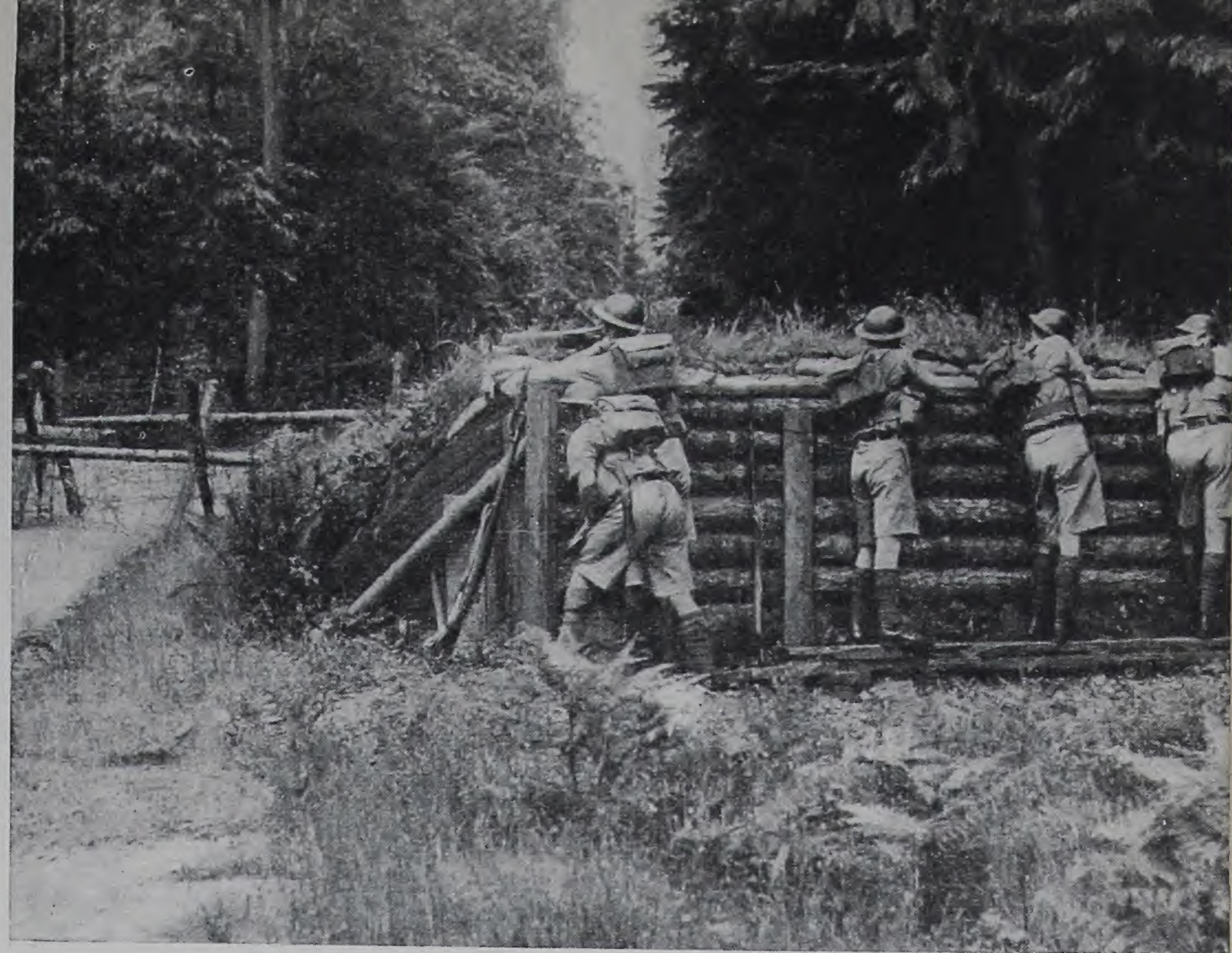
Concerning Canadian agriculture, he said it would be committed to the utmost effort to produce foodstuffs under large contracts for Britain. The total foreseen for 1942 would be \$180,000,000 in bacon, milk, eggs, cheese, apples and other products, exclusive of wheat. As to financial dealings between Britain and Canada, Mr. MacKenzie King announced that a new footing had been

Canada's
Overseas
Army

established. As a result, he offered a \$1,000,000,000 (£250,000,000) gift to the British Government to cover all munitions and food supplies forwarded in the coming year. He estimated this sum would provide for all British purchases in Canada, until early 1943. Of the existing debt of Britain to Canada for past shipments, the Prime Minister said it stood at \$700,000,000, adding that the new arrangement would convert this amount into an interest-free loan from Canada to Britain, to be reduced during the war by the proceeds of any sales made outside the United Kingdom of Canadian securities then held there, and also by the proceeds of redemptions of Canadian securities held in the United Kingdom falling due during the war. The appropriate interest rate on the new loan would be decided after the war. Meantime, the Canadian Government would buy outright all remaining Dominion and Canadian National Railway Securities held in Britain, amounting to \$295,000,000. The idea behind the new financial deal was to relieve Britain of anxiety regarding Canadian sources of supply and to prevent a huge war debt piling up which might cause misunderstanding after the war.

An exchange of consular representatives with Russia was announced on February 5. On the 27th Mr. T. V. Soong, accompanied by Mme. Soong and the Chinese Military Mission, headed by four Major-Generals, arrived in Canada for consultation with Mr. MacKenzie King. Dr. Liu Shih-shun, the first Chinese Minister to Canada, presenting his letter of credence to the Governor-General, said the decision to exchange diplomatic missions was timely, and sprang from a desire to promote the cooperation between Canada and China which was already clear enough. General Sikorski, the Polish Prime Minister, accompanied by four Army and Air officers, arrived at Montreal on March 22 en route to Washington for conferences with President Roosevelt, after which he was to go to Ottawa to meet Mr. MacKenzie King. It was announced on May 20 that the Government had requested that Vichy consulates and agencies in Canada be closed.

In March Nazi submarines were operating in Canadian waters, and on the 11th a freighter was torpedoed in the Gulf of St. Lawrence. An indication of Canada's attitude to the struggle in the south-west Pacific was given by the Prime Minister on March 25. Announcing that the Pacific Council was to be shifted to Washington, he said no Canadian troops were to be sent to Australia. The Government had re-



DEFENCE POST ON A WEST COAST HIGHWAY

The entry of Japan into the war brought a threat to Canada's west coast ports from across the Pacific, 4,500 miles away. Here is a roadside post on the Vancouver Island highways, typical of the land defences in that region (April 1942).

Photo, Pictorial Press

jected proposals to dispatch an expeditionary force to Australia because of commitments to send troops to Britain. A spotlight was thrown on Canada's part in the naval war by the arrival in Ottawa on April 24 of Admiral of the Fleet Sir Dudley Pound, the First Sea Lord, and Admiral Sir Charles Little, who went from Washington by air to confer with officials of the Royal Canadian Navy.

On May 11 Mr. MacKenzie King introduced to Parliament his Bill to remove from Canadian law the bar to conscription for overseas service, and announced that one of his Cabinet members, Mr. P. J. A. Cardin, of Quebec, had resigned in protest. The Cabinet split was the first faced by Mr. King in his long career. The Legislative Assembly in Quebec, on May 21, adopted by 61 votes to seven a resolution expressing the desire that the Federal Government should retain its voluntary enlistment policy and not impose conscription for overseas service, but also reiterating support for the best war effort possible. The Norwegian Prime Minister, Dr. Nygaardsvold, arrived in Ottawa on June 27 to confer with the Premier; 40 years earlier Dr. Nygaardsvold had helped to build newsprint mills in Canada. Another notable visitor was the King of the Hellenes, who arrived in Montreal on June 29 on his way to Ottawa.

A rationing system for tea and coffee and the reduction of the existing sugar

rations were announced by the War-time Prices Trade Board, on May 27.

One of the most vital links in establishing the security of the North American Continent since the completion of the Panama Canal was created by the opening of the Alaskan-Canadian military motor highway, 1,671 miles long.

**Alaskan
Motor
Highway**

War supplies had been rolling over the highway in October 1941, but it was not until early in 1942 that the highway began to take some of the strain off shipping needed for other battle-fronts. The highway bridged a big gap in the United States defence system. Little of it was concrete or macadam; mostly it was built of earth or crushed stone. For the most part it ran well behind the coast-line, and was the first interior line of communication from the farms, factories and oil refineries of the mid-Continent to the United States' most exposed front—the North Pacific and Alaskan sector. In its peacetime potentialities the highway opened up a new era for Canada.

New dangers and responsibilities were thrust upon South Africa in 1942 by the war in the Far East. Even so, members of Parliament, like the South African people themselves, were fortified when grappling with new burdens by the knowledge that in Libya, as earlier in Abyssinia, South Africans had again shown their mettle. In their

splendid stand at Sidi Rezegh they had fought against massed tanks till their ammunition gave out. Their success at Bardia was in the nature of an avenging victory. Whether of Afrikaans or English speech the volunteers from South Africa, by their exploits in the air, on the land and at sea, showed themselves the equals of the men of Delville Wood and of the Boer War. A great many of the armoured cars with which South Africans harassed the Germans' retreat were made in South African workshops, just as were the ammunition and the explosives and other war materials which their sappers handled with such skill at Bardia.

Most of the Second South African Division was lost in Tobruk (June 21), but in a message to the British Government (made public on the 23rd)

Spirit
of
South Africa

General Smuts said: "The spirit of South Africa matches that of its men at the front,

and no setbacks or losses will affect our unalterable resolve to fight till final victory is won." Broadcasting from Pretoria on June 13—eve of United Nations' Day—General Smuts had indicated the sort of new world that South Africa envisaged: "What the infant League of Nations failed to achieve," he declared, "the United Nations will attempt, and will rebuild on deeper and surer foundations. We hope to build a union which no Hitler of the future, and not even hell itself, shall venture to challenge again." On June 27 he made a stirring recruiting appeal to the young manhood of South Africa, saying that the Libya losses would be more than made up. (The total European population of the Union of South Africa at May 6, 1941, was 2,192,185, according to the final census figures. Of this number, 1,109,289 were males and 1,082,896 females.)

All that the treachery of Japan achieved by confronting South Africa with a new and direct menace was a stiffening of the determination of South Africa's people. One of the greatest shocks which the Opposition received, in fact, was the threat to the life of the Union presented by Japan's assault on British and American territory. Nationalist leaders—those who believed it was a matter of indifference to South Africa who won the war in Europe, and those who openly or secretly desired a German victory—had for a long time looked upon the possibility of Japan controlling the Indian Ocean as one of the gravest challenges to White supremacy in the Union. As observers were quick to point out, the reticence in which the Nationalists

took refuge from their dilemma did not raise their prestige. Not surprisingly, neither did it cure the quarrels of a domestic nature, which seemed to be as incurable as they were chronic.

Speaking at Durban on June 4, General Smuts said Japan was not only a danger to America, Britain, the Netherlands East Indies and Australia, but as much a danger to South Africa. Military authorities were directing attention away from the front up north to another possible front—the sea-front of the Union. They stressed the obvious fact that warfare in the Western Desert was entirely between armed forces, no civilian



SOUTH AFRICAN WAR STAMPS

Lieut. R. H. Kershaw, No. 3 Squadron, S. African Air Force, whose portrait (by Capt. Neville Lewis) appears on the 1½d. stamp, won his D.S.O. by alighting on the enemy airfield at Diredawa, Abyssinia, under fire and rescuing his Flight Commander, Captain Frost, in March 1941. The new 4d. war stamp is also illustrated.

element being involved. On the other hand, down at the Cape civilians must of necessity play a very great part in the event of an enemy assault, since every man, woman and child would be affected if Cape Town were attacked. Some of the Cape's defensive garrison was composed of part-time troops, and their training was of the utmost importance. One of the difficulties was to find sufficient time, since many worked long hours in the day-time, and devoted up to four nights a week, with Saturday afternoons, and even Sundays, to military training.

As Colonel A. H. Keith Jopp, Director of Coastal and Anti-Aircraft Artillery, said in February 1942 no South African who had visited one of the coastal towns since the war began (and particularly since Japan entered the war) could fail

to realize that the Cape route was now second in importance only to the North Atlantic route. It served North Africa, carrying munitions and supplies to our fighting troops in the Western Desert. It took American and British aid to Russia through Iran, and was the very lifeline of supply to Allied possessions in the Far East. Along the same route came oil from Iran and the Dutch East Indies, raw materials from India, and foodstuffs from Australia and New Zealand. Moreover, no ship could travel from Britain or America to the Middle or Far East without stopping at some South African port for re-victualling and re-fuelling.

It was natural that the Japanese should look jealously at this Cape route, because their dreams of domination in the Far East could become realities only if that route was cut. To cut this lifeline Japan would have either to seize South Africa or to shatter the ports beyond hope of repair. To take and to hold South Africa Japan would have to seize Madagascar, to concentrate vast forces there, and to stage a full-scale invasion which would require a large fleet of transports and powerful naval squadrons—which, at the end of June 1942, she could not afford to detach from her Pacific gamble. (Durban became the Allies' most important naval base in the Indian Ocean after the loss of Singapore. Besides standing at the cross-roads of British and American supply routes Durban had a dry dock capable of taking large warships, thus providing an essential service without which a fleet could not operate efficiently.)

Local defence in South Africa was organized on lines similar to those in Australia and New Zealand. The Coast Defence System, apart from Air Defence, Local Defence consisted mainly of shore-based artillery assisted by a sea-examination service. The spotting of approaching ships was done from the shore by signal stations manned by the Seaward Defence Force, and guns were immediately trained on all approaching ships (including fishing boats) until they were properly identified. In addition, interception patrols, anti-submarine patrols, and long-distance reconnaissance flights were continuously undertaken by coastal aircraft of the South African Air Force.

South Africa's peacetime economy was in many important respects ill-adapted for rapid conversion to war production, but she set to work with a will. At the end of June 1942 she was turning out in considerable quantities guns, shells, bombs, armoured cars, and other munitions and equipments of war.



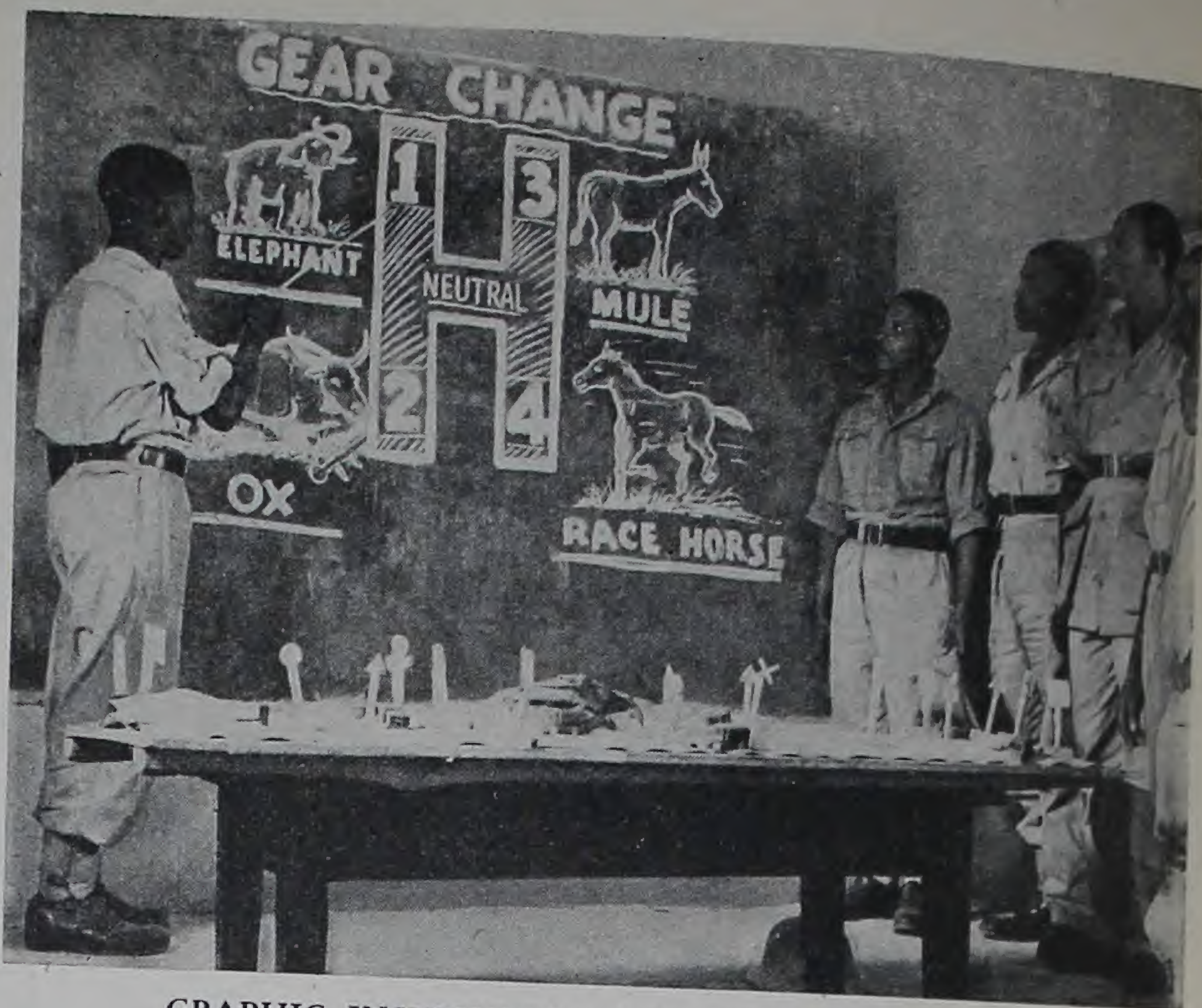
WITH THE TRANSVAAL SCOTTISH IN LIBYA

Top, Field-Marshal Smuts addressing officers and men of the Transvaal Scottish Battalion during a visit to the Middle East in May 1942. The other two photographs show men of the same regiment in the final stages of the battle for Sollum earlier in the year: below, a party clearing houses where enemy troops were still holding out; right, a Colonel and his Adjutant watch operations from the barracks in Sollum, taken on January 12.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; South African Official



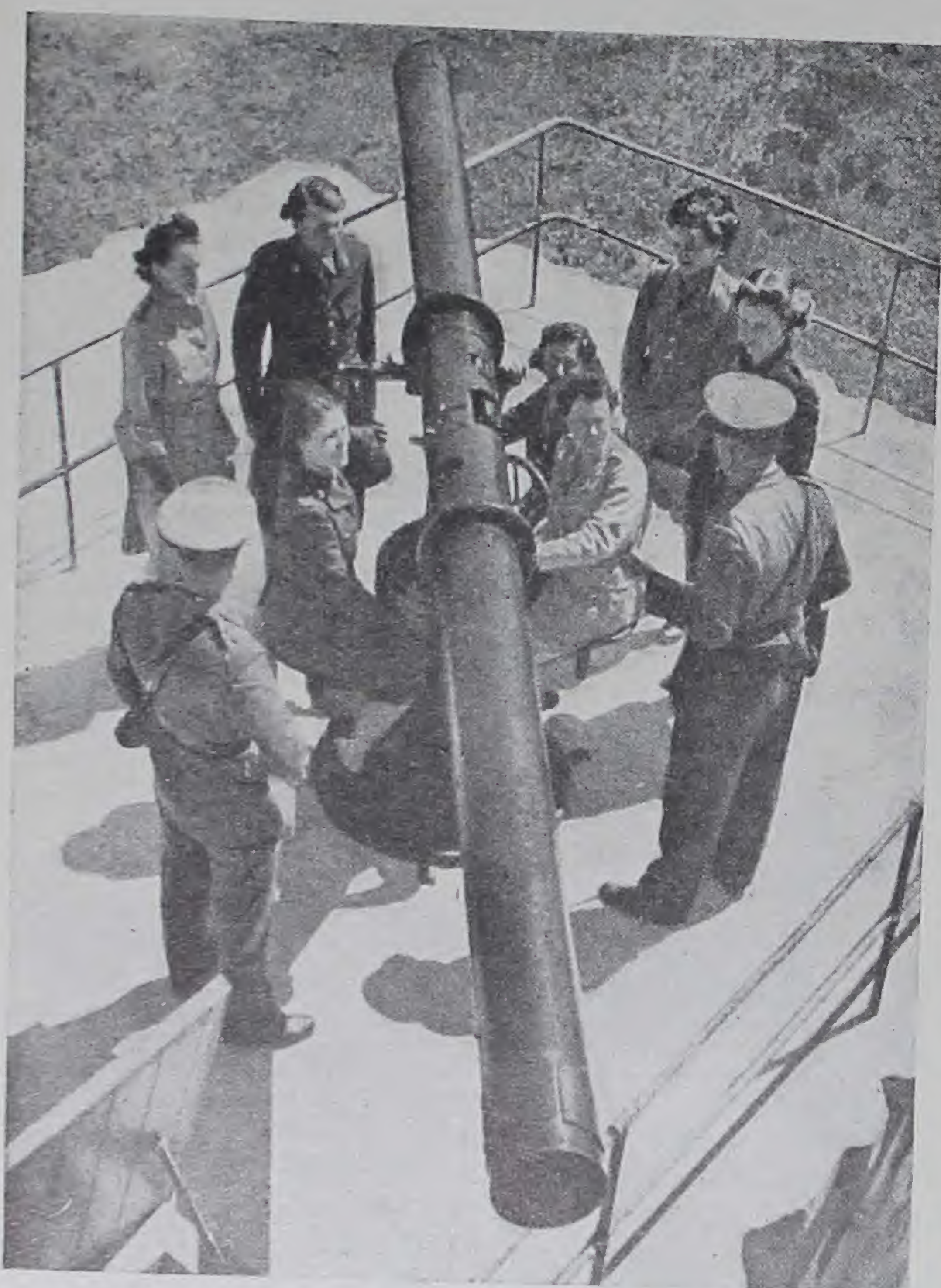
Moreover, her value as an arsenal was to be measured not only by the volume of output but by her geographical proximity to the Middle Eastern theatres of war. South Africa's productive achievements were attained in spite of a very large section of the community which was bitterly opposed to the war effort. Political considerations underlay many South African moves. Nevertheless, food and clothing restrictions were bringing home the urgent necessity of conserving all possible transport space for war materials for the fighting forces in North and East Africa. Wartime measures which gave a homely reminder to civilians in city and country areas from which the sound and fury of battle were far removed included the issue of smaller postage stamps. Another was the fact that because of lack of paper newspapers gave up reviewing books and publishing original articles. Shops very rarely wrapped up purchases. Menus at hotels were compulsorily cut down. Cornflakes and similar American products became unobtainable because they were no longer imported. The Union Budget, presented



GRAPHIC INSTRUCTION FOR COLOURED DRIVERS

It was found that the use of simple diagrams with picture-signs made it easy to instil into coloured South Africans the principles of driving and gear changing. Note the miniature lorries and road signs used with the relief map on the table.

Photo, Sport & General



SOUTH AFRICAN WOMEN IN COASTAL DEFENCE

Units of the Women's Army Auxiliary Services in the Union were selected for training in the instrumental side of artillery work for coastal defence. This group is being instructed in range-finding at a battery observation post on the coast

Photo, South African Official

on February 25, involved new taxation amounting to £9,285,000.

General Smuts epitomized South Africa's main contribution to the war effort when he said that although South Africa had sent only two divisions to Egypt, the South African war effort was very much greater than that military effort implied. South Africa was the workshop of the Middle East and contributed largely towards its air power.

Diplomatic relations with Vichy were broken off on April 23. This meant that Canada and Eire were the only countries in the British Commonwealth maintaining relations with the Vichy Government. General Smuts' Note included the sentence: "We do not cease to cherish

a firm faith in the resurrection of France, and we shall continue to labour and fight for the day when France will once more resume her proud place in the world and her proper role among the champions of the rights of man." Anti-British broadcasts from radio Madagascar were still being given: but it was a surprise when General Smuts announced in Pretoria on May 29 that South African forces were operating with the British troops in Madagascar.

Some account will now be given of the opposition to General Smuts. The National movement was very strong, and perhaps the greatest influence was exerted by the Herenigde Party, which wanted a republic. Other strong influences were the Afrikaaner Party, the Pirow Group, and the Ossewabrandwag. Dr. D. F. Malan led the H.P.; Dr. Havenga the Afrikaaner Party; Mr. Pirow was head of his own group, while the Ossewabrandwag was led by Dr. J. F. J. van Rensburg. The struggle between the groups was intense, and members of the Ossewabrandwag, for instance, could not stand as candidates of the Herenigde Party at elections. The weakness of the Nationalists was that they were divided among themselves.

On January 12, 1942, Dr. Malan gave notice that he would move that:

"In view of the serious crisis in which our country is involved through participation in

the war, the House declare that the highest national interest can only be served through the conversion of South Africa into a republic, separate from the British Crown and Empire and free and independent from any foreign Power: that such republic be not based on any foreign model, but be built up in accordance with our own national character and the traditions of people's government as embodied in the two late South African Republics, with the elimination, however, of all that is harmful in the present British liberal democracy and the necessary adaptation to modern conditions; that it be Christian-National in deed and character and that it be based on faithful maintenance of equal language and cultural rights for both sections of the European population; that it be designed to preserve white civilization in South Africa and to give protection against capitalist and parasitic exploitation of the population and against hostile and un-National elements."

On March 3 the Prime Minister ridiculed Dr. Malan's demand that South Africa should withdraw from the war and adopt the policy of neutrality.

A sensation was caused on January 20 when about 300 policemen suspected of subversive activities were detained. They had been rounded up without

incident in the Johannesburg and Reef area.

Although the South African Police Force was thousands strong, and

the number of men affected formed only a very small percentage of a large and loyal body, the fact that the round-up was thought necessary was deplored as something blemishing the Force's fine record. Emergency regulations providing for the trial of serious cases of sabotage were promulgated on February 3, the death penalty being imposable in certain contingencies. It was also announced that it had been proved that Nazi agents operating from headquarters in Portuguese East Africa were responsible for blowing up the main high-tension pylons at Vereeniging connecting the Victoria Falls Power Station with the Rand gold mines.

On May 21 the post offices at Benoni and Alberton, near Germiston, and the old telephone exchange at Boksburg were heavily damaged by bomb explosions. Two days later telephonic communications were severed, water-works were damaged, and an electric standard was dynamited in three explosions in Johannesburg and on the Reef. An attempt was made on June 1 to burn the residence of the Minister of Finance, Mr. J. H. Hofmeyr, in Pretoria. Bomb outrages and fires believed to be the work of incendiaries occurred in Bloemfontein on June 17.

Of all the Dominions New Zealand, up to the end of June 1942, had the most spectacular war record on the fields of battle. In other respects New Zealanders had also done exceptionally well.

A fascinating feature of this small two-island Dominion, lying more than 12,000 miles from the Mother Country, concerns its key statistics. For example, her population is 1,636,000; the number of men of military age, 340,000. Yet, after almost two years of war (by June 1942) the mobilization of men and women for national service was:—

Active service overseas and in training	80,000
Home Defence not permanently mobilized (Home Guard, Territorials, and National Military Reserve) ..	138,000
Civil Defence units (Emergency Precautions Scheme and Women's War Service Auxiliary)	95,000
Total	313,000

The New Zealand Expeditionary Force, in January-June, 1942, consisted of the Division in the Middle East and garrisons in Fiji and elsewhere. There were also special units, such as the Forestry Company, the Railway Survey, Construction and Operating Companies, while the N.Z.E.F. was to be strengthened by an Army Tank Brigade, which was to commence training in New Zealand. In General Wavell's offensive in Libya the transport arrangements had been largely entrusted to New Zealand units, and the efficiency of supply columns contributed materially

to the success of the campaign. The Long Range Desert Group comprised specially picked New Zealanders who penetrated far and wide through the deserts of Southern Libya and cooperated with the Free French from Chad Territory. A New Zealand Railway Survey Company operated in Eritrea, and a detachment of New Zealand railwaymen worthily represented the Dominion in besieged Tobruk. But up to June 1942 the most important contribution of the men of the N.Z.E.F. had been made in Greece and Crete.

The Maori Battalion had played a most gallant and distinguished part in both these campaigns. The Government decided on March 4 to form a Maori Battalion for home defence. Recruiting among Maoris was entirely voluntary, and by June 1942, 4,717 had enlisted—some 38 per cent of Maoris of military age.

On September 11, 1941, His Majesty had accorded the distinction of the name "Royal New Zealand Navy" to the naval forces of the Dominion. New Zealanders in naval service, in New Zealand and elsewhere, numbered over 4,000, more than five times as many as at the outbreak of war. Nearly 3,000 recruits awaited entry into the Navy. H.M.N.Z.S. "Tamaki"—the modern training establishment set up in 1941—turned out 600 naval recruits a year.



NEW ZEALAND REHEARSES HER DEFENCES

Shore guns are manned, and in the foreground infantry deploy in manoeuvres designed to test the defences against invasion from the sea. By the middle of 1942 the Dominion of New Zealand had mobilized 138,000 men for Home Defence, while her Civil Defence services were staffed by 95,000 men and women.

Photo, Associated Press



NEW ZEALAND BUILDS HER OWN MINESWEEPERS

Composite steel-and-timber craft were built for the dangerous task of clearing navigation channels of magnetic mines. Two are seen under construction at Auckland, New Zealand. Being mainly of wood, the hull was less susceptible to the mines than that of a steel ship. (See also illus., page 2208.)

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

The workshops of the New Zealand Naval Base were the most up-to-date in the Southern Hemisphere. Nearly 1,000 New Zealanders served in the Royal Navy in the many spheres where it operated. Even in 1942 some were in command of minesweepers in the English Channel. Over 400 were in the Fleet Air Arm. In the Merchant Navy hundreds of New Zealanders were rendering another valuable service, and they shared fully dangers and hazards of the Battle of the Atlantic and the enemy raiders lurking in every ocean.

Mr. Walter Nash (first Minister to the United States), when he arrived in Washington on January 31, 1942,

American Forces for New Zealand suggested to the Press that unified war command for the entire Pacific area should be established under an American Naval officer; that a Pacific War Council, sitting in Washington, should deal with the political problems of the United Nations whose possessions border the Pacific—the United States, Great Britain, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, China and the Netherlands. On February 10 the arrival in Wellington of a vanguard of a United States naval force, and the landing of American reinforcements at stations along the route from Pearl Harbour, was announced. Vice-Admiral H. F. Leary, of the United States Navy, the new C.-in-C. of the combined naval forces in the Australian and New Zealand area, it was announced on February 12, was losing no time in completing his plans for coordinating the resources under his command. He discussed defence prob-

lems with the Prime Minister. On April 23 it was stated that Rear-Admiral Robert Ghormley, chief of the new United States-New Zealand Command, then about to be organized, would be under the orders of Rear-Admiral Chester V. Nimitz, C.-in-C. United States Pacific Fleet.

New Zealanders, at the end of June 1942, were found in every sphere where the Royal Air Force operated, and had taken part in every notable engagement.

A New Zealander commanded the wing of the R.A.F. in Russia. In Britain, there was a separate New Zealand Bomber Squadron which operated from the earliest days of the war. A Fighter Squadron and a Torpedo Bomber Squadron were also entirely composed of New Zealanders. The Fighter Squadron manned Spitfires purchased by public subscriptions in New Zealand. The Royal New Zealand Air Force then also maintained flights of aircraft in the Pacific Islands. More than 136 awards and honours had been bestowed upon New Zealand airmen (including the Victoria Cross on Sergeant-pilot Ward, of Wanganui). Over 4,500 New Zealand airmen had gone overseas, including 500 who were in the Royal Air Force when the war broke out. New Zealand's output under the Empire Training Scheme was at full flood and was to provide annually 5,000 airmen. Air Commodore Goddard, Chief of Air Staff, surveying New Zealand's air strength in June, said that since December the number of New Zealand's air squadrons had increased seven times, enabling 10 times the weight of bombs to be carried and 16 times as many guns.

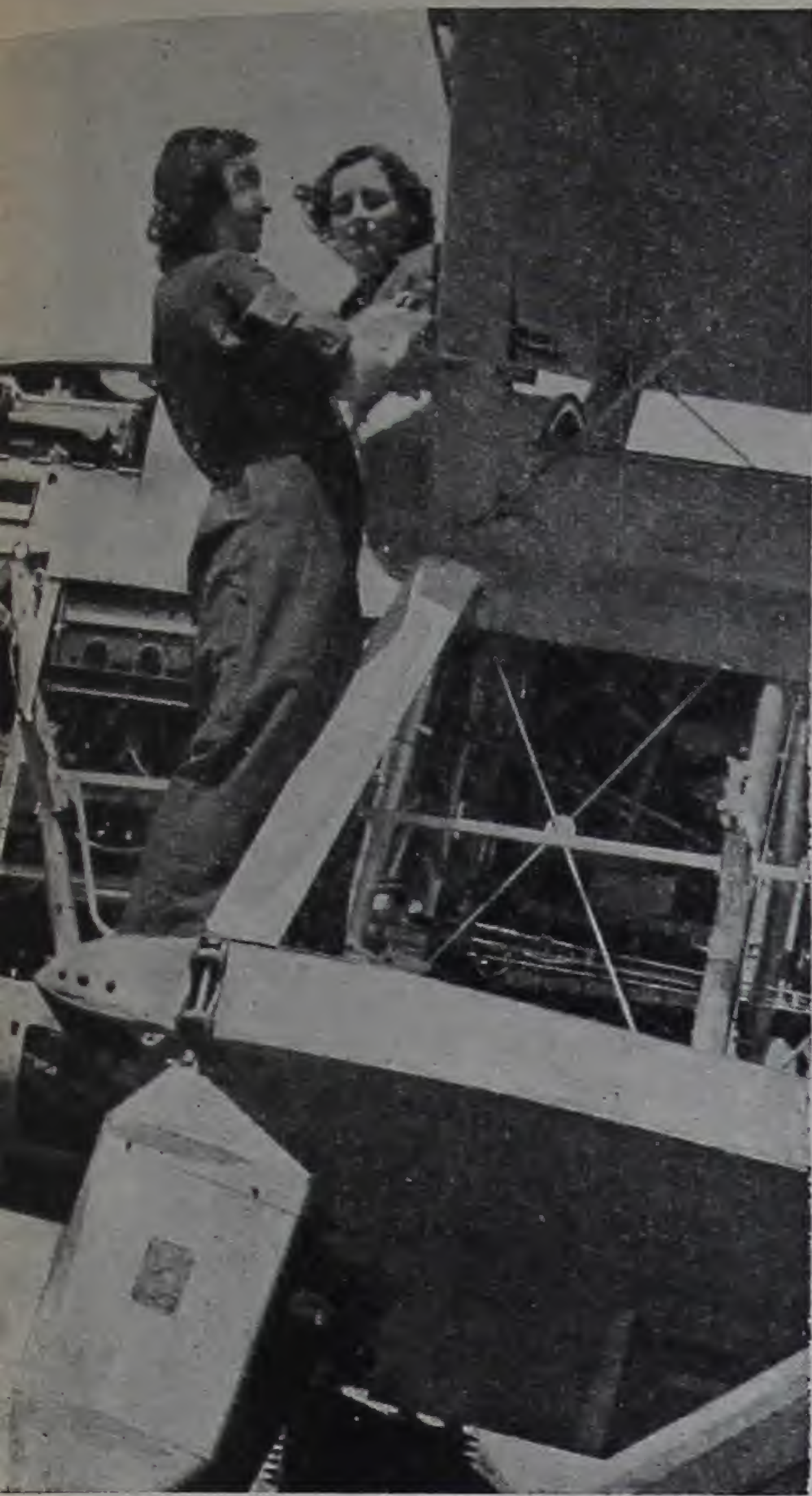
Pre-war preparations had enabled New Zealand to take the Empire Air Scheme in its stride. New Zealand was the first Empire country to establish a pre-entry educational scheme to fit civilians for entry into the Air Force. There was also the Air Training Corps to give preliminary air education to youths of



GOVERNOR-GENERAL AT AERODROME WORKSHOPS

New Zealand's Governor-General was Marshal of the R.A.F. Sir Cyril Newall, who had been Chief of the Air Staff from September 1937 to October 1940. Here he is inspecting the workshops at a Service aerodrome in New Zealand.

Photo, Sport & General



R.N.Z.A.F. INSTRUMENT FITTERS

As in Britain, the W.A.A.F. of New Zealand filled many non-flying posts in the Air Force and released men for other duties. Two women of the instrument section are seen at work on a bomber at a New Zealand airfield.

Photo, Sport & General

16½ to 18 years of age. From the outbreak of war up to June 1942, 33,000 men applied to join the Air Force. The total number of New Zealanders in the Air Force was over 13,500.

Supported by American land forces, New Zealand could rely for Home Defence on the Navy in New Zealand waters, the Royal New Zealand Air Force, members of the New Zealand Expeditionary Force in camp, the Territorials, the National Military Reserve, and the Home Guard—a total of over 160,000 men. There were 80,000 people in Emergency Precautions Organizations distributed throughout the country. Organization followed closely on the lines of the A.R.P. in the United Kingdom.

Conscription in New Zealand applied to wealth as well as to man-power. Conscription of wealth took the form of heavy taxation for the rich—up to 17s. 6d. in the pound for the highest incomes. Wartime excess profits were taxed by 60 per cent after the other taxes had been levied. Those who did not contribute to the War Loan in 1940 according to their means were compelled to do so. This loan carried no interest for three years, and bore 2½ per cent thereafter. The Govern-

ment had power to take over overseas assets held by private persons; it controlled the purposes for which capital might be used, and it might take complete control of productive resources. Conscription of men had been adopted in July 1940, even though volunteering was in full flood. New Zealand's total mobilization for defence against the Japanese was announced by the Prime Minister on March 15, when he said the War Cabinet had decided to extend the use of the country's man-power into the ranks of older men; also to enlist women for war work: the new decree extended registration to include the 46-50 age classes.

Control of industrial man-power was provided for in Regulations announced by the Prime Minister, Mr. Fraser, on January 13, 1942. All the clothing and footwear of the New Zealand soldiers, sailors, and airmen was made in New Zealand factories. Besides meeting the needs of the New Zealand Expeditionary and Home Defence Forces, 100,000 uniforms were being sent to Great Britain, large quantities to India, and thousands of blankets to Greece. Workers were bridging the gap caused by the withdrawal to the Armed Forces of 85,000 men from civil production. Over 11,000 people were directly employed making munitions and military supplies. When war broke out New Zealand industry had not been prepared for munitions production, but at the end of two years a remarkable development had taken place, and further comprehensive plans were under way to make New Zealand as self-reliant as possible in munitions. Railway workshops had been adapted for munitions production and were working

in closest cooperation with private workshops as one unit under the direction of the Controller of Munitions.

The total cost in 2½ years of war was £104,000,000, compared with £23,000,000 in the first 2½ years of the war of 1914-18. This sum of £104,000,000 meant £63 for every man, woman, and child in New Zealand, or £161 for every breadwinner.

New Zealand's War Budget

The policy of the Government was to pay for the war as it went on, first by taxation and secondly by borrowing the savings of the people in New Zealand. Overseas borrowing was kept at the lowest possible level. Farmers' produce was bought by the Government, whether it could be shipped or not. Wage-earners of below £5 a week were helped by extended family allowances—4s. a week for every child. By June 1942 a range of 38 items of food, clothing, footwear, fuel, light, and public utilities had been selected for price stabilization.

New Zealand's £15,000,000 Liberty Loan opened on May 5 with interest of 2½-3 per cent. Full subscription was sought within 28 days and the loan marked the country's war indebtedness up to £33,000,000 within New Zealand, plus any additional borrowings from Britain for the needs of her forces abroad. On June 3 the Prime Minister declared the loan closed, over-subscribed by £2,131,610—the largest single sum raised as a loan in New Zealand.

A War Administration, it was stated on June 24, was being formed, consisting of seven Labour Ministers and six members of the Opposition. The life of Parliament was extended until 12 months after the duration of the war.

NEW ZEALAND'S HOME GUARD IN TRAINING

Out of the Dominion's Home Defence Force not permanently mobilized (see table in page 2201), amounting to about 138,000 men, approximately 100,000 were Home Guards. This fine show by a population of only 1,636,000 was paralleled by the muster for Civil Defence services, which amounted to 95,000.

Photo, British Official : Crown Copyright



POLITICAL TRENDS IN THE NEAR AND MIDDLE EAST

Covering the period January to June 1942, this Chapter reviews political and domestic events in the regions mentioned. The author, Mr. Kenneth Williams, has travelled extensively in the Middle East and, until November 1942, was Press Officer for the Colonial and Dominions Offices. He is a Member of the Council of the Royal Central Asian Society

THE year 1942 opened with the Middle East in uncertain mood. In two of its regions, Iraq and Syria, there had the previous year been warfare, with the stresses and unrest that fighting induces; in another, Persia, the people, as in the war of 1914-18, had had the British and Russian troops occupying their soil. Such developments were not taken fatalistically, in the Oriental way of "They watched the legions thunder past, then plunged in thought again." Persia was inclined to attribute to the presence of Allied armies all the evils—shortage of food, disease, and so on—which more obviously derived from inefficient administration. Iraq, too, was apt to blame the British troops for scarcity of food. Politically Syria and the Lebanon were most unsettled; they were waiting to see whether, from their point of view, the Free French under General Catroux would be better

than the ejected Vichyites. Palestine Arabs, though calmer, listened to some extent to the declamations against Zionism and the British uttered from Axis territory by the Mufti of Jerusalem and such Iraqi leaders (including Rashid Ali) as had escaped from their own country. Turks watched Russian developments with a very keen and traditionally suspicious eye. And Egypt, though cooperating well enough under the Anglo-Egyptian Treaty, had a Government which was not representative of the mass of the population.

Although, therefore, the Middle Eastern year began with a general position infinitely better, from the Allied standpoint, than it had been in 1941, there was abundant room for improvement. The whole military position was still in the melting pot; the morale of the native peoples had to be kept steady; the various populations had to be fed. The world-war

position was such that the Allies could not afford to permit any more fighting between the Nile Valley and Burma. That an even keel was in fact preserved was due not only to the pro-Allied elements among the Middle Eastern peoples, but also to untiring skill in Allied diplomacy, to the bearing of the Allied armies in the Middle East, and to the operation of such organizations as the United Kingdom Commercial Corporation and its subsidiary, the Middle East Supply Centre.

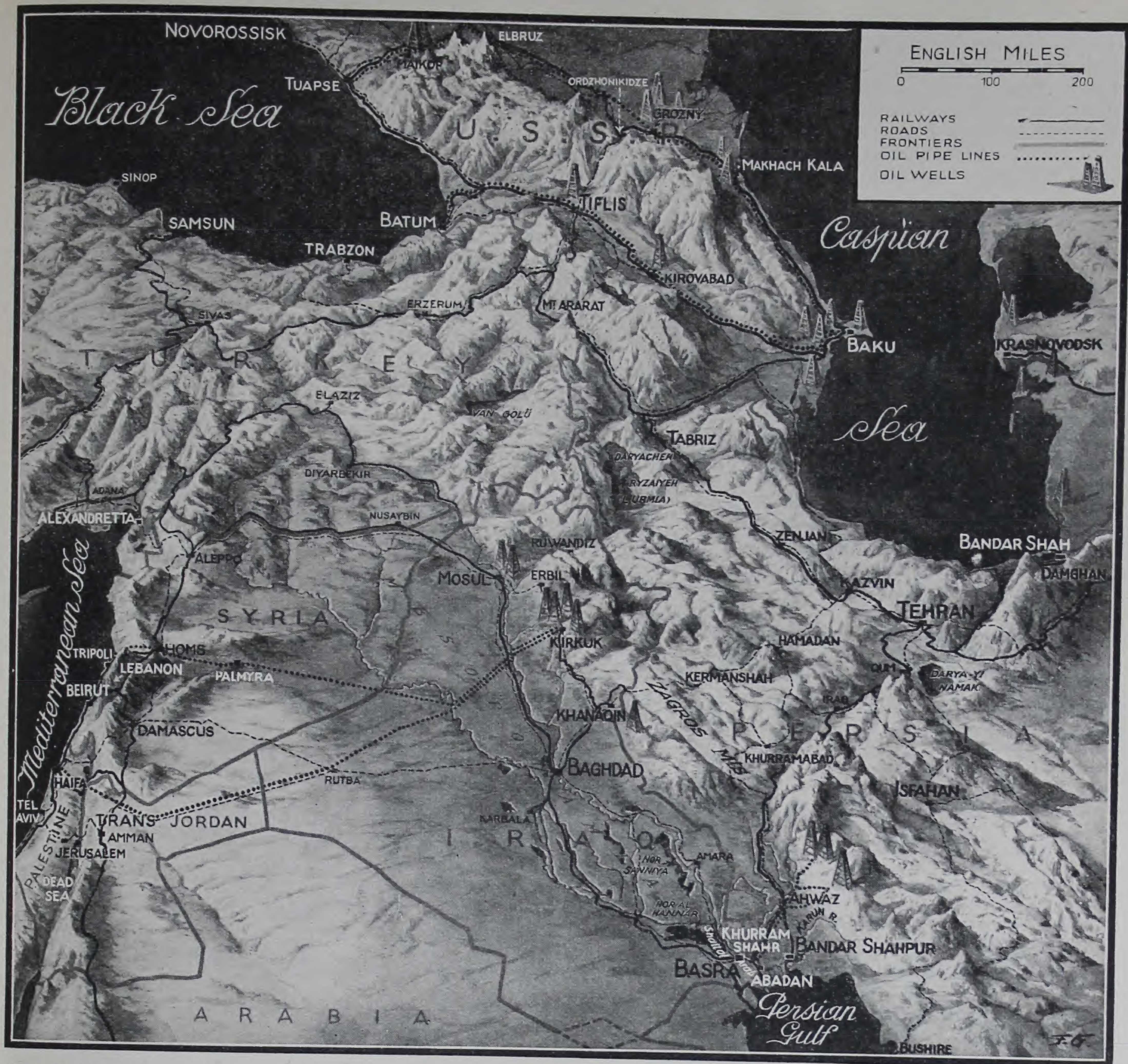
It is convenient to record the development of the Middle East during this period territorially, from east to west. In Persia, after three and a half months' negotiation, the Anglo-Soviet-Persian Treaty was signed in Teheran on January 29. (Its text is printed in page 2107.) This document made unmistakably clear the intention of the Allies to respect Persia's sovereignty and independence, but, though it was at first welcomed by the educated classes in Persia, the lower classes, short of food and attributing that shortage to the Allied "invasion," were suspicious and resentful. Then, too,

VITAL SUPPLY LINES TO RUSSIA

From the Persian Gulf to the shores of the Caspian, or to places on the Persian-Russian frontier, supplies of all kinds were transported to Russia by rail and road. Left, ingots of lead, weighing 65 lb. each, being unloaded on to the wharf at Bandar Shahpur at the head of the Gulf. Right-hand photograph shows the unpacking of lorries and engine parts near the other end of the long journey, where the vehicles are assembled and handed over to Russian drivers.

Photo. British Official: Crown Copyright





though the Persian Government itself was ready to act up to its obligations, the Majliss or Parliament (an indolent body dating from the time of the ex-Shah, Riza Pahlevi) took no trouble, to say the least, to expound the benefits which would accrue to the Persian people from the Treaty. However, step by step the Teheran Government went in the right direction. After a reorganization of the Government in March, by which M. Soheily displaced Feroughi as Prime Minister, relations with Japan were broken off; the Japanese Legation disappeared, via Russia, from Teheran, and other pro-Axis elements in the country were rounded up.

The Persian Government, moreover, taken by surprise—as was the British

RUSSIAN LINKS WITH TURKEY, PERSIA, SYRIA AND IRAQ

In a region destined perhaps to see some of the crucial military operations of the war against the Axis, the rail and road communications were greatly improved after Allied control had been established in Syria, Iraq and Persia (summer of 1941). Most important of these supply lines were those which enabled materials landed in the Persian Gulf to be speedily transported overland to the shores of the Caspian by way of the Trans-Iranian railway and new or improved roads.

Specially drawn for THE SECOND GREAT WAR by Félix Gardon

Government—by the sudden arrival in April of thousands of Polish refugees accompanying Polish troops from Russia, acted most helpfully, giving these refugees accommodation and medical aid. It may be that Persians listened to tales of Russia which confirmed their own historic attitude towards their northern neighbour: in any case there were perceptible at this time two bodies of thought on the Anglo-Soviet-Persian Treaty—one stipulating that Persia depended for her sovereignty

on Anglo-Russian rivalry; the other basing its hope for the future on the Atlantic Charter and professing that Russia would not have a free hand in Europe after the war. The fact that American support for this Treaty was promptly forthcoming had a reassuring effect. Another tonic in the right direction was provided by the visit to Teheran of the Duke of Gloucester, who went thither from Iraq. This royal visit was a tremendous success; officials and populace were delighted, and the young Shah

showed his pleasure by driving H.R.H. back to Teheran, after a tour into the countryside, in his own racing car.

The most visible development in Persia concerned the opening up or the improvement of supply routes through it to Russia. Of these routes the most important was the north to south railway, a fine feat of engineering upon the completion of which the ex-Shah had successfully set his heart. But what was adequate for Persian needs in pre-war days—a single-line track and a passenger speed of twenty miles an hour

—was far from meeting the needs of the war situation. British, American and Russian engineers, employing Persian labour, at once got to work. Rolling-stock which, seeing that the gauge of the railway was standard, could therefore be provided neither from Russia nor India, was greatly increased from countries such as Great Britain and Australia; new sidings were built; better facilities at ports at either end of the railway were arranged.

For instance, the southern port of Bandar Shahpur was improved, but there were limitations to such improvement. So goods were shipped up the Karun river, which runs into the Shatt-al-Arab at Khorramshahr (whence a new railway was built to Ahwaz) to Ahwaz, a town on the main railway. But this did not suffice. The port of Bushire, the water

of which is so shallow that goods have to be unloaded by lighters five miles off-shore, was used. Cargo was taken from Bushire by lorries across the Zagros mountains and thence to Teheran. This trek took five days, and the U.K.C.C. soon put on a fleet of 250 lorries for the route. Another port, Bandar Abbas, whence the road to Teheran goes via Kerman, was extensively utilized.

Nor was the existing situation at Bandar Shah, the other terminal of the railway on the Caspian, at all adequate. There the sea had receded since the railway was originally built, with the result that Russian engineers had to make a mile-long jetty. There was also a lack of steamer services to Baku, across the Caspian. A partial way out of this difficulty was found by joining the Trans-Persian railway to Tabriz, which itself had rail connexion with Baku. This link had before the war been partly completed, as far as Kazvin; it was extended now through Zenjan to Tabriz.

One of the most interesting transport developments did not concern goods brought to Persia by sea. During the war of 1914-18 a railway had been built from Indian Baluchistan to the border of Persia, at Duzdab (now called Zahidan). The Persians did not

like this intrusion into their territory, and after that war the line was left derelict and was even torn up in places. Early in 1942 it was reconditioned, and a route through wild country, opened up by 5,000 Indian labourers, was made for lorries to Meshed and then to Firuze on the Russian frontier.

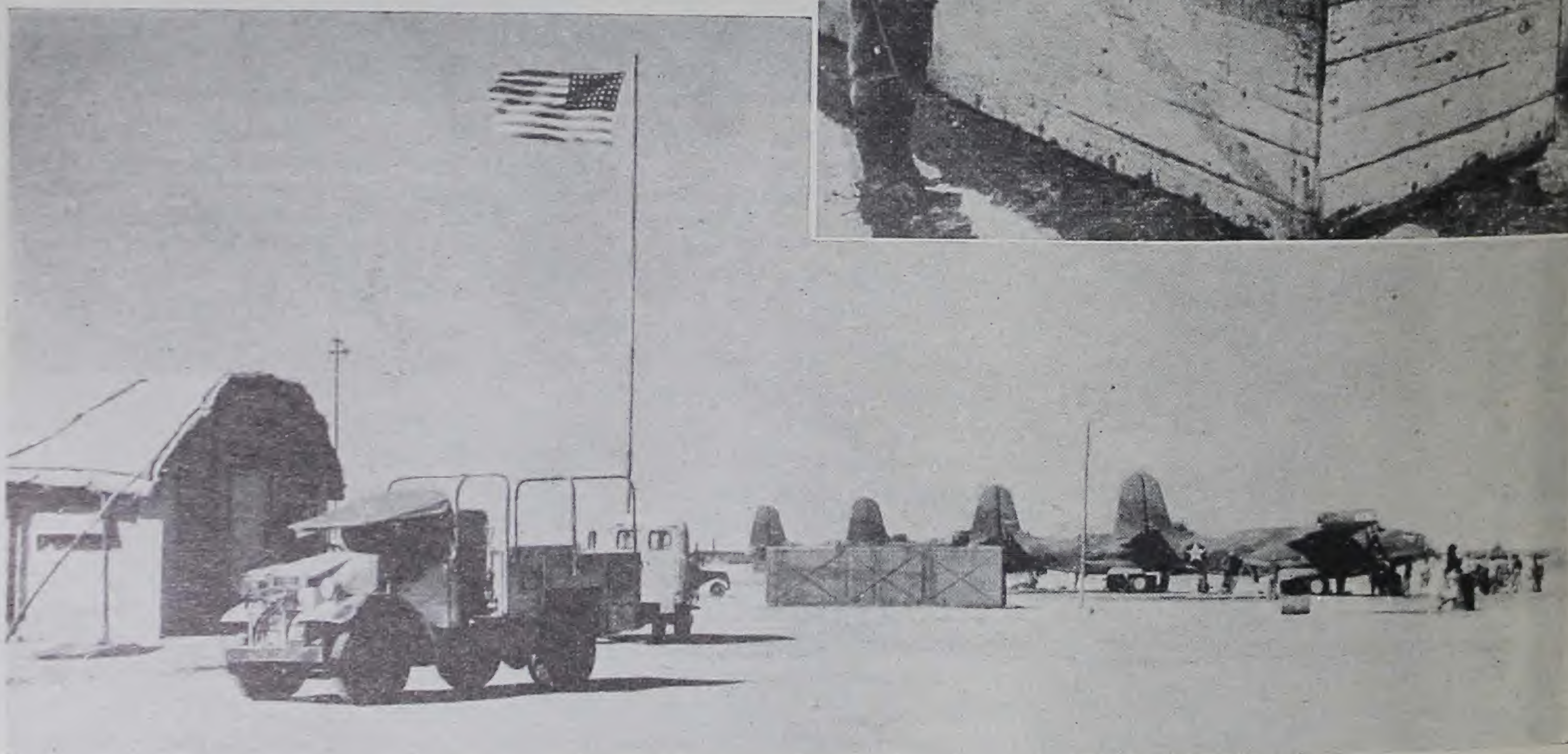
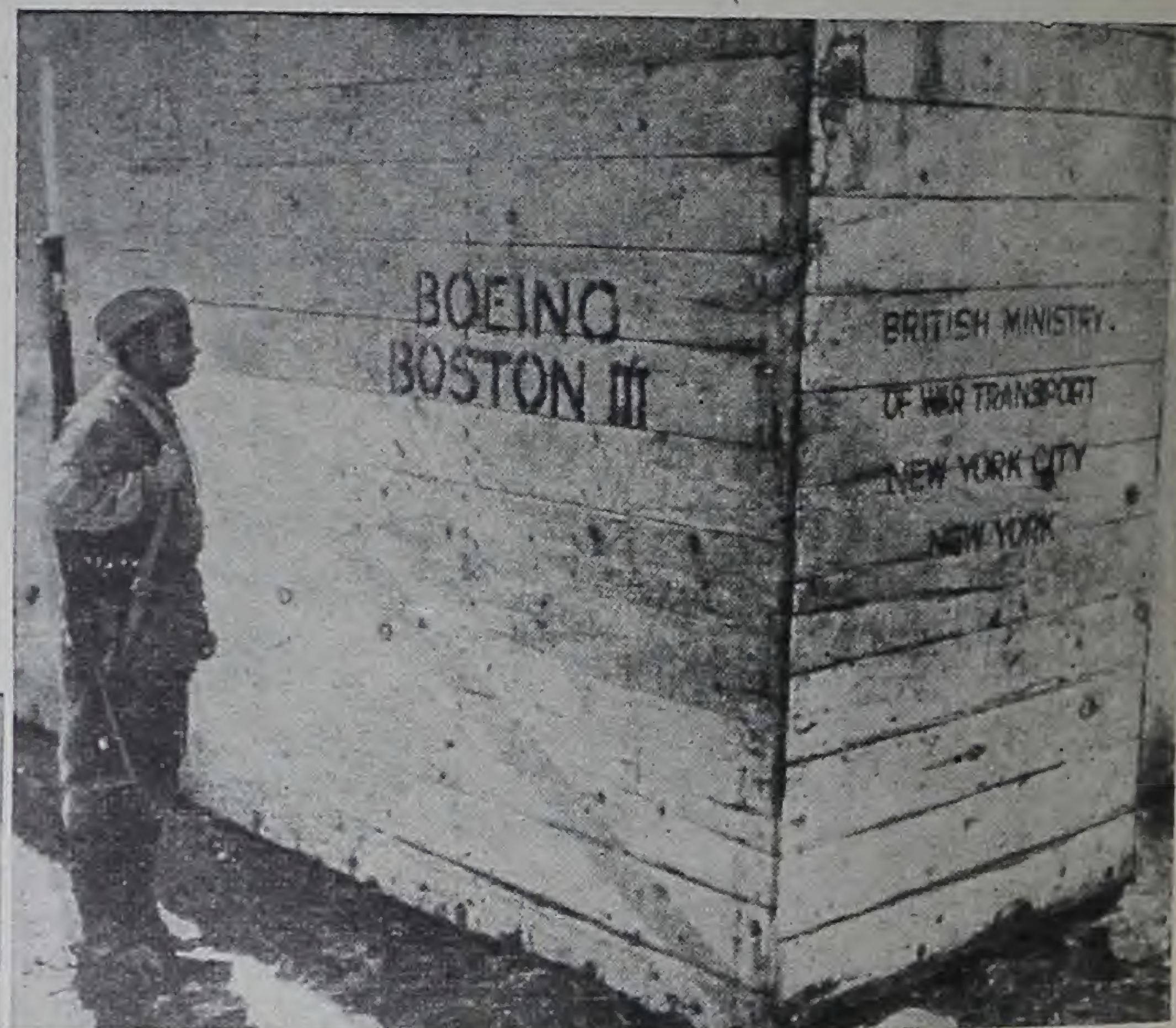
For yet another route to Russia, the services of the Iraq railways were called upon. Supplies landed at the head of the Persian Gulf went by rail to Baghdad, and thence to Kirkuk and to Khaniqin by the Persian frontier. From Khaniqin they were taken 600 miles to Tabriz in lorries, again provided by the U.K.C.C., collaborating with a Russian organization of a similar nature. One last alternative route went from Arbil, in northern Iraq, via the famous Rowanduz gorge to Tabriz.

In general the situation in Persia, while no longer positively dangerous, as it might have been in 1941, could not be said to be satisfactory in the first half of 1942. Despite the excellent behaviour of both British and Russian troops the people did not like the garrisoning which the Allies obtained through the Treaty. The right to use Persian communications

RELAY AIRFIELD IN THE MIDDLE EAST

At the assembly plant in the Middle East seen below British and American aircraft were uncrated, assembled, and flown to Russian and other battle-fronts; a line of American-built bombers in background. Right, spare parts for Boeing bombers in service in Russia are guarded by a Soviet sentry. The crates bear the stencil, 'British Ministry of War Transport, New York.'

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright: Associated Press





SERGEANT QUENTIN SMYTHE, SOUTH AFRICA'S FIRST V.C.

He is seen raised aloft by his comrades of the Royal Natal Carabineers just after Maj.-Gen. Dan Pienaar (G.O.C. 1st S.A. Division) had pinned the V.C. ribbon on his tunic. In an attack at Alem Hamza on June 5, 1942, his officer was severely wounded and Smythe, though suffering himself from a wound in the forehead, took command. He stalked and destroyed an enemy machine-gun nest; then he dealt with an anti-tank position singlehanded; finally he executed a successful withdrawal.

Photo, Sport & General



MINESWEEPERS OF THE ROYAL NEW ZEALAND NAVY AT WORK

The distinction of the name Royal New Zealand Navy was accorded to the Dominion's sea forces in September 1941. Besides the 4,000 New Zealanders in its service and nearly as many recruits awaiting entry, about 1,000 were serving in the Royal Navy in other spheres of war. In 1942 some were commanding minesweepers at work in the English Channel, while 400 served in the Fleet Air Arm. (See also illus., p. 2202.)

Photo, Sport & General



SCOTS GUARDS GO INTO ACTION AT EL ALAMEIN

Under cover of a smoke screen and protected by tanks, men of the Scots Guards move forward. All around is the dense cloud of dust set up by the armoured fighting vehicles. By the end of the first week in July 1942 Rommel's advance had been halted, and a few days later he was forced back on to the defensive. On July 10 General Auchinleck began to recover ground, advancing five miles to Tel el Eisa.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



INFANTRY AND ANTI-TANK GUNNERS IN THE KNIGHTSBRIDGE FIGHTING

Much of the Eighth Army's success in the Libyan battle was attributable to the accurate fire of the artillery. Gunners were in action night and day. Below, the crew of a 6-pounder anti-tank gun (mounted on a Chevrolet truck) move up after knocking out a German tank, seen at the left. Top, while a Bren gunner gives covering fire his comrade gets busy with the entrenching tool. Dropped from the infantryman's equipment in the early days of the war, this useful implement was later reinstated.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright



for the all-important task of supplying Russia tended in the nature of things to make Persians consider that their own interests were being subordinated to the war situation. There were, too, difficulties in the matter of currency, which the Persians were apt to withhold. But the position, while still needing the utmost tact and circumspection, was not unmanageable, and though first things had to come first, the essential needs of the Persians were always borne in mind by the Allies.

In Iraq, the decisiveness of the defeat in 1941 of Rashid Ali and his followers had given the chance, quickly taken, for

Rashid Ali Sentenced pro-Allied elements of the Iraqi population to come forward. On January 7, 1942, the formal

step was taken of sentencing to death Rashid Ali—in *absentia*—and of passing other sentences on his associates. Early in the year General Nuri al Said, the Arab soldier-statesman with whom T. E. Lawrence had fought in the last war, and a firm friend of the ruling Hashimite dynasty in Baghdad, showed signs of wanting to declare war on the Axis—a desire which was fulfilled in due course.

Both Arabs and the Allies lost a good friend when Mr. Paul Knabenshue died in February in Baghdad. He was American minister to Iraq, and before that had been American Consul-General in Syria and Palestine. At the critical time of Rashid Ali's revolt his help had been invaluable to the forces of legal authority, and it may justly be said

that the U.S.A. had never sent a better representative to the Middle East.

General Nuri energetically set about his task of purging his country of pro-Axis elements, men who had become so minded owing to the lavish propaganda and bribery practised by the Axis. Fearlessly and continuously he carried out the purge, and showed particular courage in tackling the Iraqi Army. His success was complete; indeed, it was never in doubt. Slowly but surely he and his friends, including notably the British authorities, made of his country the ally foreseen in the Anglo-Iraqi Treaty of 1930.

Three factors chiefly worried the Iraqi leaders in the first half of 1942. They concerned, first, the susceptibilities of all Arabs about the danger of Zionism in Palestine; secondly, the fact that there were only "caretaker" governments in Syria and the Lebanon; and thirdly, the provisioning of Iraq itself. Under the first two heads satisfaction was not forthcoming, and on the third it was explained that all consignments to Iraq were controlled by the Middle East Supply Centre. But a better feeling was created when it was made known, in early May, that Lend-Lease facilities had been approved for both Iraq and Iran. In May, too, the Duke of Gloucester visited Baghdad and was warmly received. By this time the Iraqi Government were carrying out their Treaty obligations to the letter, and even the hitherto disgruntled Iraqi Army manifested no resentment when, in



ROYAL DUKE VISITS THE SHAH

In May 1942 H.R.H. the Duke of Gloucester made an extensive tour of the Middle East. He is seen here (right) with the Shah in the grounds of the Summer Palace at Tehran. He went on later to Palestine, and from there to Syria and the Lebanon, and also paid a memorable visit to Cyprus.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

May, the rebel leaders were tried and executed. The situation had, indeed, been radically transformed.

Turkish statesmen kept their country on a level keel in the period under review, despite the difficulties of maintaining neutrality when all around them were engaged in war; despite also the problem presented by certain Kurdish movements in Persian Azerbaijan, and by a bomb outrage in Ankara (an attempt on the life of the German Ambassador, Von Papen) on February 24. In the north-west corner of Persia at the beginning of the year there was much lawlessness among the Kurds, who, egged on by Russia according to the Turkish belief, were making a dead set at Turki-speaking persons, leaving Christians alone. On the question of privileges for the Kurds, one that had greatly troubled the Turks, Ankara had always been extremely sensitive. Gradually, however, the Persian Government got the situation under control, and Turkish fears abated.

Turkey Remained Calm

But the Kurdish trouble had no such electric effect as had the Von Papen bomb plot. The Court inquiry that followed (March 6-10) and the sentencing of two Russians on June 17 roused the Soviet press to indignation. The Russian-Turkish barometer, which previous to the plot had been rising, sank abruptly. The Turks recalled their Ambassador from Russia "for



EMIR ABDUL ILAH OPENS IRAQI PARLIAMENT

In his speech from the Throne on November 1, 1942, the Regent (centre) said that the cause of the United Nations was the cause of the Arab nations. He expressed confidence in the fulfilment of Britain's promise of eventual independence for the Arab countries.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



RAILWAY TO LINK PALESTINE WITH TURKEY

Running from Haifa in Palestine to Tripoli in Syria, this railway was built by British, South African and Australian engineers. It was constructed in record time, and opened at the end of 1942 (see map, p. 2205). This photograph shows South Africans excavating the cutting at the mouth of the mile-long Chekka tunnel, one of the most difficult sections of the line.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

reasons of health." But the Soviets, seeing with what delight the Germans hailed this development, moderated their attacks, and after a time the situation, which neither side allowed to deteriorate, was eased. The Turkish Government sent one of their best men to represent them in Russia.

It was after this that Turkey could describe herself as still the ally of Great Britain and the good neighbour of Russia. Axis blandishments continued unceasingly. The chief aim of the Nazis was to embitter relations between Ankara and

deliveries during those two years were compensated by equivalent German deliveries of war material, and all this only after the expiry of the Anglo-Turkish agreement. So staunch an attitude towards her ally was fully reciprocated by Britain, who uninterruptedly delivered to Turkey war materials of every kind: tanks, aircraft, submarines and destroyers, rolling stock, foodstuffs and manufactured goods. This deeply impressed the Turks, who argued that, hard pressed as Britain was, only a true friend could have done such a thing. Ordinary trade with Turkey, moreover, despite the difficulties in transport, showed constant progress in 1942.

A word should be said, in recording the satisfactory nature of Anglo-Turkish relations during this period, of the admirable work of the British Council in Turkey, which pursued with unflagging zeal its cultural and educational ends. Its efforts were greatly appreciated in Turkey.

As the only neutral at the eastern end of the Mediterranean Turkey played an international role with distinction. In nothing was this better seen than in the help she gave to the repatriation of British and Italian prisoners, the first exchange of whom was effected at Smyrna (Izmir) on April 8. On this occasion the Turks set a precedent of kindness and thoughtfulness to which they adhered faithfully.

In Syria and the Lebanon it became patent early in the year that Free French control was by no means to the

liking of the mass of the people. General Catroux had installed as President of the Syrian State Sheikh Taj-ad-din—a politician who commanded little popular support and who was, in particular, disliked by the strong Nationalist *bloc*—and as President of the Lebanon Mr. Naqqash. In February Brig.-Gen. E. L. Spears arrived as British Minister to the Lebanon and Syrian Republics, and also as Head of the Mission to the Free French. He conveyed Mr. Eden's message that, though the Mandate was still in force, it was the wish of H.M. Government that this regime should be ended at the earliest possible moment.

Hopes that arose from this statement diminished quickly, particularly as it coincided with a deterioration in the food situation. The Syrians could not forget that in the last war the years 1916-18 were famine years when more than 300,000 of their people died of starvation. When General Spears presented his credentials in April at Beirut and Damascus he was greeted warmly enough, but disappointment was manifested owing to the fact that the British had left the Free French (in some ways more disliked by the Syrians than had been the Vichy regime) in supreme control. Yet the belief persisted that somehow Britain would solve the

FOODSTUFFS FOR SYRIANS

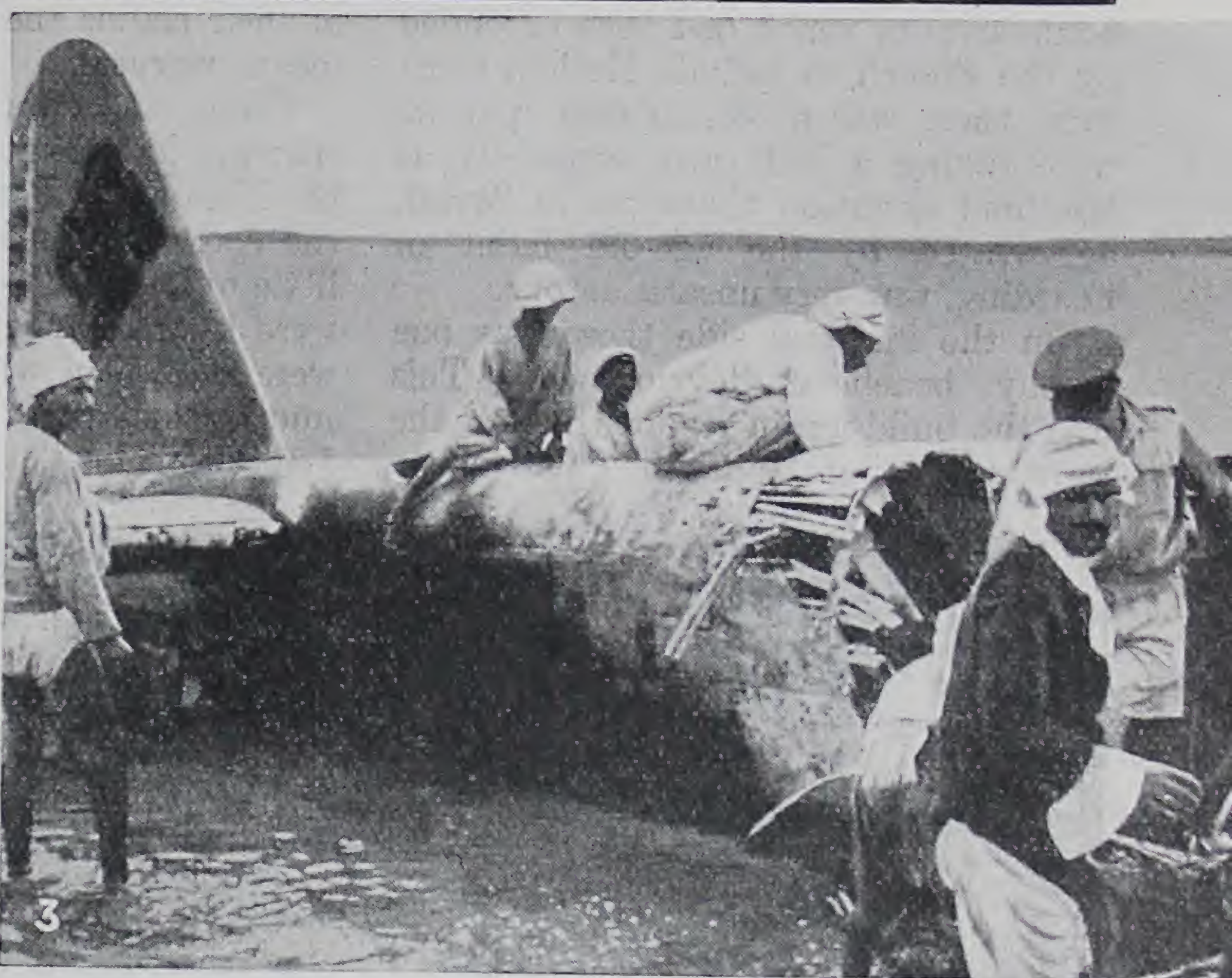
New Zealanders measure out rations of flour—sent by the Red Cross organization of the United States. The food situation had been made more difficult by the practice of hoarding, which in turn sprang from fears of a famine such as that which had killed more than 300,000 Syrians in the later years of the war of 1914-18.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



Nazi's 'War of Nerves' Moscow. Every event was twisted to reinforce the thesis that Russia wanted control of the Black Sea Straits, and Britain was alleged to have recognized Soviet hegemony in Europe. The Nazis further spread rumours that a new Turkish Government, more friendly to the Axis, was about to take office. They said that Russia would be defeated in 1942 and that Britain, which only wanted to see Russia bleed to death, would make a compromise peace with Germany. With Bulgaria as the centre, the Nazis opened a "war of nerves" on Turkey.

But the Turks remained absolutely faithful to their agreement with Great Britain. What Berlin mainly wanted from Turkey was chrome, and it was agreed to supply 90,000 tons of this precious mineral in 1943 and 1944—on condition that by the end of 1942 Germany had delivered to Turkey war material to the value of £18,000,000, that Turkish chrome



AIR DEFENCE OF CAIRO AND ALEXANDRIA

Britain contributed large sums for the protection of Egypt from Axis bombers—including £1,000,000 for the defence of Cairo. A.R.P. services were well organized, while active defence by night fighters and anti-aircraft batteries was highly efficient. (1) A Ju 88 caught by gunfire over the Nile delta plunges to its doom (its flaming trail at right); in centre are streaks made by A.A. shells, while the sky is dotted with shell bursts. In (3) an Egyptian policeman and field workers examine another German bomber, shot down by the R.A.F. near Kantara on the night of September 9-10, 1942, (2) A.R.P. practice in Cairo: an incident officer at work. (4) After an air raid at Alexandria.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Associated Press

problems of the Levant States, despite the fact that Taj-ad-din and Naqqash were regarded merely as French puppets.

The general attitude of the French was that they must postpone decisions in the Levant States for fear of unfavourable repercussions in metropolitan

Distrust of French Officials

France which might diminish the prestige of their movement in France itself. Yet the native belief in Britain was justified to the extent that the British were able to persuade Catroux that the danger of holding elections in wartime was negligible. But the Syrians saw everywhere ex-Vichy officials exercising power. No wonder, therefore, that they thought that "presbyter is but old priest writ large."

British prestige fluctuated. It increased notably with the visit to Beirut and Damascus of the Duke of Gloucester in June, but it slumped towards the end of the period under review with the fall of Tobruk. Even in the largely Maronite Republic of the Lebanon, the boundaries of which had been extended by the French to include Moslem territory, there was a feeling that matters were taking a bad turn, especially as the food situation there (as in Syria), aggravated by the age-old habit of hoarding, was very unsatisfactory.

On the material side there was one wholly beneficial development. This was the building, in record time, of the railway joining Haifa in Palestine to

Tripoli in Syria, the northern terminal of the Iraq oil pipe line. No fewer than 8,000 civilian labourers were employed on the construction, which, since it was attended by great technical difficulties (for instance, tunnelling in the northern section), was entrusted to South African engineers, who brought over 1,000 miners from the Union's diamond mines for the purpose. (As soon as the line was completed, it was opened by General Sir H. R. L. G. Alexander, C-in-C. Middle East, towards the end of the year.)

Palestine, whatever the conditions of the war, was dominated by the underlying differences between native Arab and immigrant Zionist. The presence of many troops in Palestine, together with the fact that fundamentally Arabs and Jews were on the Allied side, to some extent obscured the sharpness of this controversy, but no observer could fail to note that it had rather gone underground than disappeared. If the Arabs, partly through force of circumstances, said little publicly in support of their claims the Zionists were by no means unvoiced.

There was during the period no spectacular recruiting for the Army of the Mandatory Power in Palestine. At the end of 1941 the figures stood at a little over 14,000, of whom some 10,000 were Jews. On July 1, 1942, the figures were 20,374, of whom the Jewish community had provided 12,686 men and 1,169 women. The Zionists wanted con-

ditions of enlistment which the British authorities could not accept; and the Arabs seemingly were content to provide help with civilian labour for the manifold works required by military authorities.

On January 3 there occurred the death of a Jew who will long be remembered in Palestine. This was Pinhas Rutenberg, who had supplied the whole of Palestine (with the exception of Jerusalem and its neighbourhood) with electricity. He had earned the reputation of being fair to both Arab and Jew: "The Times" said of him that he was "more a Jew than a Zionist."

During the first half of 1942 tragic incidents took place which moved both Zionists and non-Zionists. On January 20 there was an outrage against the police at Tel Aviv. Those held responsible were a body known as the "Stern Group," a terrorist gang of Jews said to be in touch with Fascist bodies in Europe. The crime was denounced by responsible Zionist leaders, among whom it created consternation. The Zionists, too, were much distressed by the disaster to the refugee steamer "Struma." This boat, carrying Jewish refugees from Europe, foundered in the Black Sea in March, and the Zionists, anxious to get into Palestine the maximum number of Jewish refugees, accused the Palestine Government of "murder," alleging that the authorities had treated the demand for extra immigrants with undue deliberation.

On the whole Palestine showed a fair picture during the first half of 1942, despite a steep rise in the cost of living. It was claimed that by the spring of that year the Holy Land was growing all the wheat, potatoes, and vegetables it needed. The Government took control and gave a stimulating lead. The country's electrical works were supplying industrial power, the potash industry of the Dead Sea was providing important war materials, and the cement industry was supplying airfields, roads, and fortifications throughout the Middle East. Owing, moreover, to the presence in Palestine of numbers of highly skilled workmen, delicate work could be done there. It was boasted, indeed, that Palestine was the only country between London and Calcutta (except Cape Town) where the British forces could get a precision instrument made or repaired. The projection north of Haifa of the railway to Tripoli was bound to affect beneficially Palestine, Syria, and Turkey.

Over Egypt, surprising as the statement may seem, it cannot be said that



STRENGTHENING FRIENDSHIP WITH SAUDI ARABIA

Early in 1942 the Emir Mansour, son of King Ibn Saud, visited Egypt as the guest of General Sir Claude Auchinleck. Some of the party in the grounds of the British Embassy at Cairo: left to right, front—Sir Miles Lampson, British Ambassador; the Emir Mansour; Admiral Sir Andrew Cunningham; General Auchinleck. At rear, Sir Walter Monckton, Acting Minister of State, Middle East; Air Marshal Sir William Tedder (behind the Emir).

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

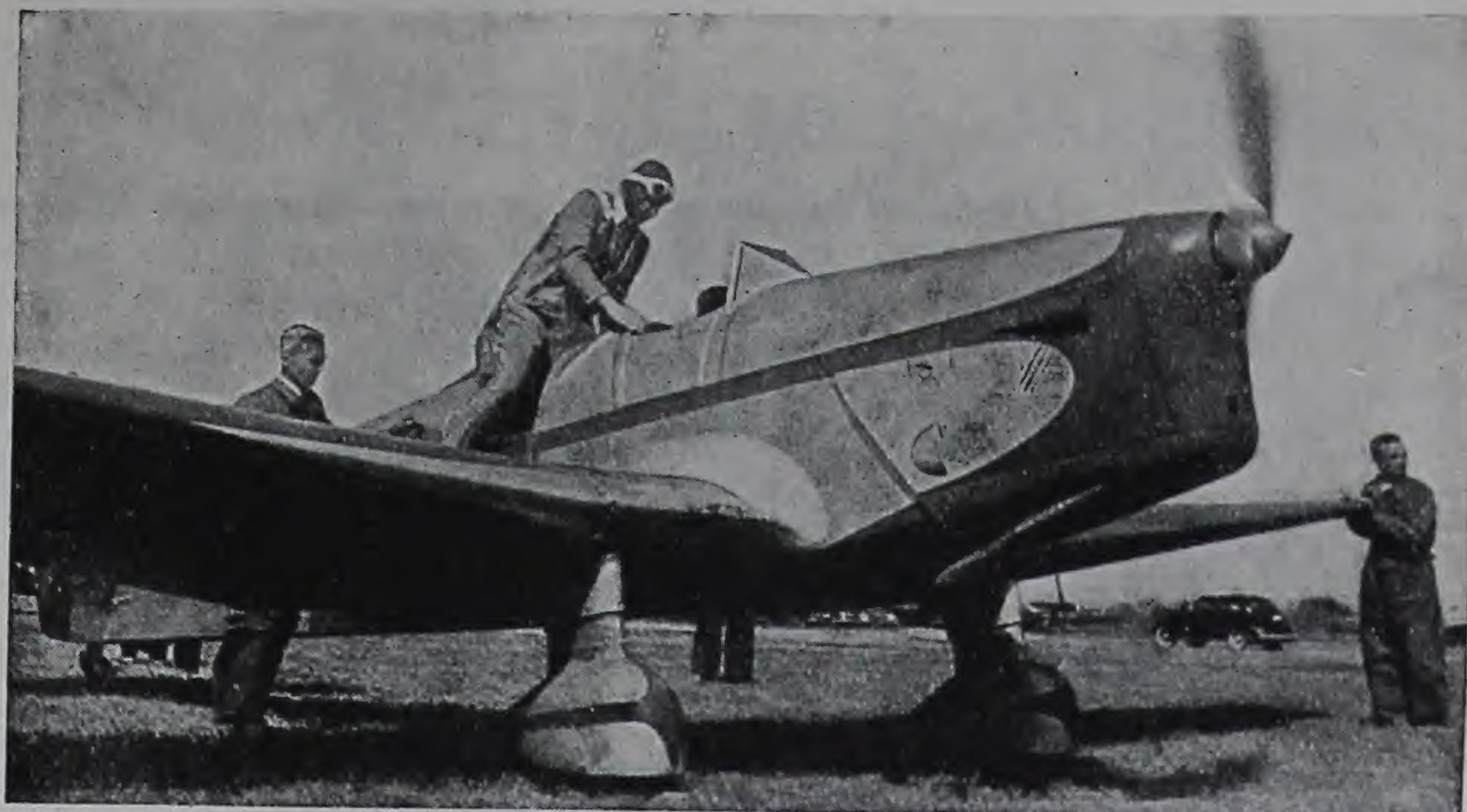
the shadow of war hung ominously as from the beginning of 1942. Certain steps, indeed, were taken to regularize her position as an ally. On January 6, for example, she formally severed her relations with Vichy, Finland, and Bulgaria; but Italian influence at the Court was allowed to remain. In the following month the Cabinet of Sirry Pasha fell. It was succeeded by that of Nahas Pasha, leader of the great Wafd party, who gained, on March 26, an overwhelming majority in the elections. He had a series of difficult passages with the Palace, and finally took the step of arresting a former Prime Minister, Ali Maher Pasha (April 8), and of keeping him confined.

The real preoccupations of Egyptians were with domestic politics and domestic economics. Certainly the problem of food supplies—what with the aggravat-

ing tendency of native merchants to hoard and impose fantastic prices, together with “black market” operations—was grave. But to the average Egyptian the war seemed remote and, until the fall of Tobruk and the Axis approach to the Nile Valley, never came uppermost in his thoughts. Meanwhile, the Government tried to do what it could to alleviate the stringency set up by war conditions—a task to which Mr. R. G. Casey set himself at once after he had succeeded Mr. Oliver Lyttelton as Minister of State in May.

Egypt, more particularly since the accession of Nahas Pasha to power, was loyal to her obligations under the Anglo-Egyptian Treaty of 1936. Under that agreement the Egyptian Army was not required to fight in the event of an emergency, but the Egyptian Government was to give Britain the facilities she required for military purposes. The outbreak of war had found in power one of the numerous Cabinets which did not reflect the wishes of the mass of the people. The manoeuvres of such parties as the Liberal Constitutionals, the Watanists, the Shaab, and the Saadists—none of them comparable in strength with the Wafd and nearly all of them centring round persons rather than principles—were of little interest to the outside world except as they affected Egypt's attitude towards the war.

There was indeed no fundamental point of difference between Egypt and Britain. The extreme Nationalists (Watanists) were not content with the clauses about the Sudan in the Treaty. Nor, for that matter, were other parties, but all agreed not to make the Sudan a war issue. Theoretically, the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan is a Condominium,



TURKEY SPEEDS UP AIR FORCE TRAINING

During the Eighth Congress of the Turkish Air League at Ankara, in June 1942, the first training aircraft entirely of Turkish manufacture was flown on test (above). It was a Miles Magister, of British design. Below, cadets of the Turkish Air Force receive training at an R.A.F. station in Britain: instruction on the Browning gun.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Planet News



though in practice it is, if not British, at least Sudanese in colour. But Egyptians, naturally interested in the whole Nile question, have been prone to treat the matter as if it were one between the British and themselves exclusively.

A word ought to be said on the consistently pro-British attitude of Trans-Jordan, whose ruler, the Amir Abdullah, set his subjects an unswerving lead in loyalty. The only event of note in the first half of 1942 was the successful visit to Amman, in February, of the Amir Fawwaz as Shalaan, Sheikh of the Ruwalla, the large Syrian tribe. He was a grandson of the great comrade-in-arms of T. E. Lawrence in 1918.

To sum up the picture of the Middle East in the first half of 1942, it may be said that its comparative brightness was due largely to none other than Hitler himself! What did the Middle East offer to Hitler? It possessed three advantages: It was one way to India,

a most valuable way if the alleged Japanese pincer threat developed. Secondly, it opened up a route to a vulnerable Russian flank. Thirdly, if the Nazis had obtained Middle East oil, their war effort could have been kept afloat almost indefinitely.

By keeping his concentrated strength for Russia Hitler virtually abandoned all the potential quisling elements in the Middle East. The Allies reaped where Hitler had promised (but failed) to harvest. He set up a propaganda centre in Athens, composed of certain disgruntled Arabs exiled from their homes, and fulminated against the Russian giant and against British Imperialism. But he had missed an opportunity which can hardly return. Yet it has to be admitted that early in 1942 the future of the military situation could not be foretold, and the conduct of the native peoples and of the Allies who were trying then to help them has to be read in the light of that uncertainty.

DOMESTIC POLITICS IN INDIA DURING 1942

Prefaced by an outline of constitutional changes and an analysis of party politics up to the entry of Japan into the war in December 1941, this Chapter then describes Sir Stafford Cripps' unsuccessful attempt to arrive at a settlement with the Indian leaders. It goes on to discuss India's fine war effort and the effect on the general war situation

FOR India the interval between the termination of the war of 1914-18 and the beginning of the Second Great War in September 1939 had been marked by important political changes and by the advance in British India to full responsible self-government, as foreshadowed in the Declaration of August 20, 1917.

Arising from that Declaration, framed by Austen Chamberlain and Lord Curzon but—owing to Chamberlain's resignation from the India Office in 1917 after a Royal Commission in its report had censured the Indian Government over the Mesopotamian blunders—actually made in the House of Commons by Edwin Montagu as Secretary for India, a semi-parliamentary system was introduced into India by the Act of 1919. In the Provinces Legislatures comprising elected Indian majorities were created in the place of Legislative Councils which, from 1861 onwards, had had a slowly increasing Indian element but were in effect purely advisory bodies. The stages of development in 1892 and 1909 had brought them to the point at which the only possible step forward was by setting up representative institutions on parliamentary lines. This recalled Macaulay's famous assertion in

1833 that such a change would connote the "proudest day in English history," and, also, ironically enough, John Morley's blunt repudiation of the idea that the reforms which he sponsored in 1909 had parliamentarianism as their objective.

The system which came into force in 1921 under the Act of 1919 divided the provincial administration into two categories. Departments constituting the framework of government—law and order, finance, judiciary—were retained under executive control. Departments which came to be known as "nation-building," such as education, public works, public health, were transferred to the control of Ministers elected from and responsible to the new Legislatures. By this dyarchical method [dyarchy means government by two rulers] it was hoped at the end of ten years, when a Royal Commission would report to Parliament, to judge the possibility of a fuller advance.

At the centre, two houses of a Central Legislature were created also, with elected Indian majorities over the official blocs. No principle of responsibility could there be imported, since the Government of India (Viceroy's Executive Council) remained still respon-

sible to the Parliament at Westminster, and in fact was concerned not only with British India (886,000 square miles and [1941] 295,827,000 people), but also with the 562 Indian States (690,000 square miles and [1941] 92,973,000 people).

On November 1, 1929, just before Sir John Simon's Commission was ready to report on the working of the semi-parliamentary system, the Viceroy (Lord Irwin) was authorized to declare that the goal of British policy, as set out in the Declaration of 1917, was "Dominion status." By that time India had already acquired certain attributes of that status. Since 1919 she had been a Member of the Imperial Conference as well as a founder member of the League of Nations. By a convention established in 1921 she had tariff autonomy.

As the result of the Simon Commission's Report (the first volume of which stands today as the best brief factual appreciation of the Indian problem) three Round Table Conferences of representative Englishmen and Indians were held in London, and then a Joint Select Committee of the two Houses of Parliament considered the material thus available for framing the next measure of Indian constitutional reform.

This was born in the Act of 1935, which separated Burma from India and, by forming two new provinces of Orissa and Sind, established 11 provinces in British India to which full responsible self-government on the basis of an electorate of 30 millions (43 per cent of the male and 10 per cent of the female adult population) was accorded. For the first time provision was made for formally linking up British with "Indian" India. Recognizing that this federation would require time for arrangement, the Act prescribed that full self-government in the British Indian provinces should come into force on April 1, 1937. Meanwhile, inquiry was at once to be started to ascertain the terms on which the Indian States—most of which had treaties or other contractual engagements with the Crown—would agree to enter into federation. Their chief spokesmen had already expressed concurrence with the

CALCUTTA WELCOMES CHINESE TROOPS FROM BURMA

When the Chinese troops reached Calcutta at the end of their long journey from Shwebo, N.W. of Mandalay, they received a great welcome from the Chinese community of Calcutta, who turned out with their band and lined the approach to the railway station. Other Chinese forces had fought their way back to China from Burma. (See Chapter 206.)

Photo, Pictorial Press



general principle. The scheme for federation being thus delayed, it was decided that, until it had been established, the government at the centre should remain as under the Constitution which in other respects the Act replaced. The separation of Burma and the creation of the two new provinces already mentioned also came into force on April 1, 1937.

The political leaders of British India showed clearly that they were not enamoured of the proposals for associating the two Indias in a central government. They maintained that democratic principles were affronted by a scheme which gave the Rulers the right to nominate the representatives of the States to the proposed federal legislature, where the representatives of British India would be chosen by the democratically elected members of the Provincial Legislatures. The negotiations for ascertaining the Rulers' views on the terms of their accession to federation were taken in hand, and just before the outbreak of the Second Great War they were reported to have been completed. As by that time the Rulers themselves were a little alarmed at the hostility to their order shown by political leaders in British India, there seemed to be no immediate prospect of coming to a satisfactory solution.

The political sky in British India was by no means unclouded. In the elections of April 1937 the Congress Party had secured sufficient support at

**Congress
Secures
Majority**

the polls to give it the right to form Ministries in eight out of the 11 Provinces. Despite its predominantly Hindu complexion the party had, in fact, secured more Muslim adherents than would normally have been expected. Even then, of the 546 Muslim seats only 25 went to Congress Party Muslim candidates, but the comparative weakness of the Muslim League was shown by its inability to secure more than 108 Muslim seats—albeit that figure was four times the Congress Party Muslim captures. The important Shia community of Muslims (numbering about 20 million) had given the Congress Party support. When the Ministries took office they speedily weakened this Muslim sympathy. In particular the Shias took offence at measures emanating from the Ministries, and many of that community actually went to prison as the result of its defiance of Congress Ministries' administration. This brought a great accession of strength to the Muslim League, which, under the leadership of Mr. M. A. Jinnah (himself a Shia, and 20 years earlier a close associate of Mr. Gandhi), proceeded to assert itself as the chief exponent of the



SIR STAFFORD CRIPPS WITH INDIAN LEADERS

During the fateful days of his mission to India in March and April, 1942, Sir Stafford Cripps met representatives of all parties. Above he is seen (second from left) with Sikh leaders: left to right, Sardar Baldev Singh, Member Legislative Assembly; Master Tara Singh; Sir Jogendra Singh; S. B. Sardar Ujjal Singh, M.L.A. and Parliamentary Secretary. Below, with Gandhi on the steps of Birla House, Delhi.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Topical Press



aspirations of Muslims. In by-elections for Muslim constituencies after 1937 the Muslim League showed this new-found strength by capturing 46 out of 56 seats, as against three Congress and seven "Independent" successes. Moreover, in the three non-Congress Provinces where coalition Ministries under Muslim premiers were able to take office in April 1937 the Muslim League

increased its influence. Those provinces were Bengal, Punjab and Sind.

In the summer of 1939, when the war clouds were gathering, the Government of India decided to send Indian troops to reinforce the garrisons in Egypt and Malaya. This action required no sanction from the Central Legislature, though as a matter of courtesy the Viceroy privately advised the members of this intention. The Congress Party, although it had consistently criticized British policy in China (over Manchuria), Spain, Abyssinia, and Czechoslovakia from the anti-Axis standpoint, refused to concur in this decision to send troops—on the ground that the Government was not responsible to the Indian Legislature. The Party maintained this attitude (which had been expressed in withdrawal from the two Houses of the Legislature) when, on September 3, 1939, Great Britain's Declaration of War automatically put India at war with Germany. The Muslim League took the line of siding with the Congress Party's objection to the constitutional disability arising from India's lack of Dominion status. In other respects the League was against the Congress, and, indeed, demanded that no fundamental constitutional changes should be made during the war, to the conduct of which it offered no obstruction.

The Viceroy endeavoured by personal conversations with all leaders—he saw 53 of them in the month of September—



PHASES OF INDIA'S GREAT WAR EFFORT

Owing to her geographical situation India was especially important as a source of munition supply to Allied armies in Persia, Iraq and Syria ; she also rendered vital assistance to Russia and to China. Top, a shift leaving an Indian steelworks. Below, a new minelayer for the Royal Indian Navy is launched by Prince Rama Varma, ruler of Cochin.

Photos, British Official : Crown Copyright ; March of Time



to overcome this deadlock, but without avail. In November 1939 the central executive of the Congress Party, which had all along developed a caucus-like control of the provincial Ministries of its own complexion, ordered the Ministers in the eight "Congress" provinces to resign en masse. This those Ministries reluctantly did, without any pretence of consultation with the Legislatures to which they were nominally responsible.

The Provinces had no concern with defence or foreign affairs, so the resignations were in a sense irrelevant. In Assam, one of the eight provinces, an alternative Ministry was formed. In the remaining seven, emergency government under the Act was established by the respective Governors. Assam's alternative Ministry later went

out, to be replaced by an emergency administration, but in 1942 Ministerial government was resumed in that province and also in Orissa. This gave five provinces (Assam, Bengal, Orissa, Punjab and Sind), totalling 110,000,000 people, in which full responsible self-government under the Constitution was maintained; and six (Bihar, Bombay, Central Provinces, Madras, North-West Frontier Province, United Provinces) where the Governors were governing not by and with the advice of Ministers, but under the emergency provisions of the Constitution.

The Government of India made constant efforts to end the deadlock. To the Viceroy's assurances that Dominion status remained the goal of British policy for India, reiterated in October 1939 and January 1940, there was

added in August 1940 a formal announcement that a War Advisory Council would be set up and would include representative Indians; that the views of minorities would be given full weight in any constitutional scheme framed; and that such a scheme should be devised by Indians themselves. To this end the Government would assent to the creation, after the war, of a body representative of the principal elements in Indian life.

In July 1941, since the recalcitrant political leaders had not been moved, the Government decided to proceed with a further constitutional change by expanding the Viceroy's Executive Council so that, instead of three British and three Indian Members (in addition to the Viceroy and Commander-in-Chief), it included three British and eight Indian Members: the additional five Indians were men of eminence without any political affiliations. Thus, for the first time, the Viceroy's Executive Council comprised an Indian majority. The offer to include nominees of the Congress Party and Muslim League remained, but was not accepted. In addition the Government set up a War Advisory Council on which representatives of British India and the Indian States took their seats.

In the course of discussions Mr. Gandhi had acted as the spokesman of the Congress Party, although technically he was no longer a member of that Party. In the autumn of 1940 he had been told **Gandhi's Position** by the Viceroy that the Indian Government

would give the Congress Party the same latitude as was given in England to professed pacifists—totalitarian pacifism being defined as the Party's attitude towards the war. If, in advocacy of this pacifism, the Government found members of the Party taking action which, in England, would bring them within the scope of the Defence of the Realm Act—a similar enactment being in force in India—then appropriate measures for protection of India's war effort would be taken. Mr. Gandhi, on October 15, 1941, retorted by launching a campaign of "limited" civil disobedience. The authorities had no option but to prosecute and imprison a large number of Congress Party adherents who deliberately broke the law at Mr. Gandhi's bidding.

In the autumn of 1941 a storm arose over a misinterpretation of Mr. Winston Churchill's statement to the House of Commons that the Atlantic Charter did not "qualify" British policy in India. This was read with the further statement, that the Charter was primarily concerned with European countries

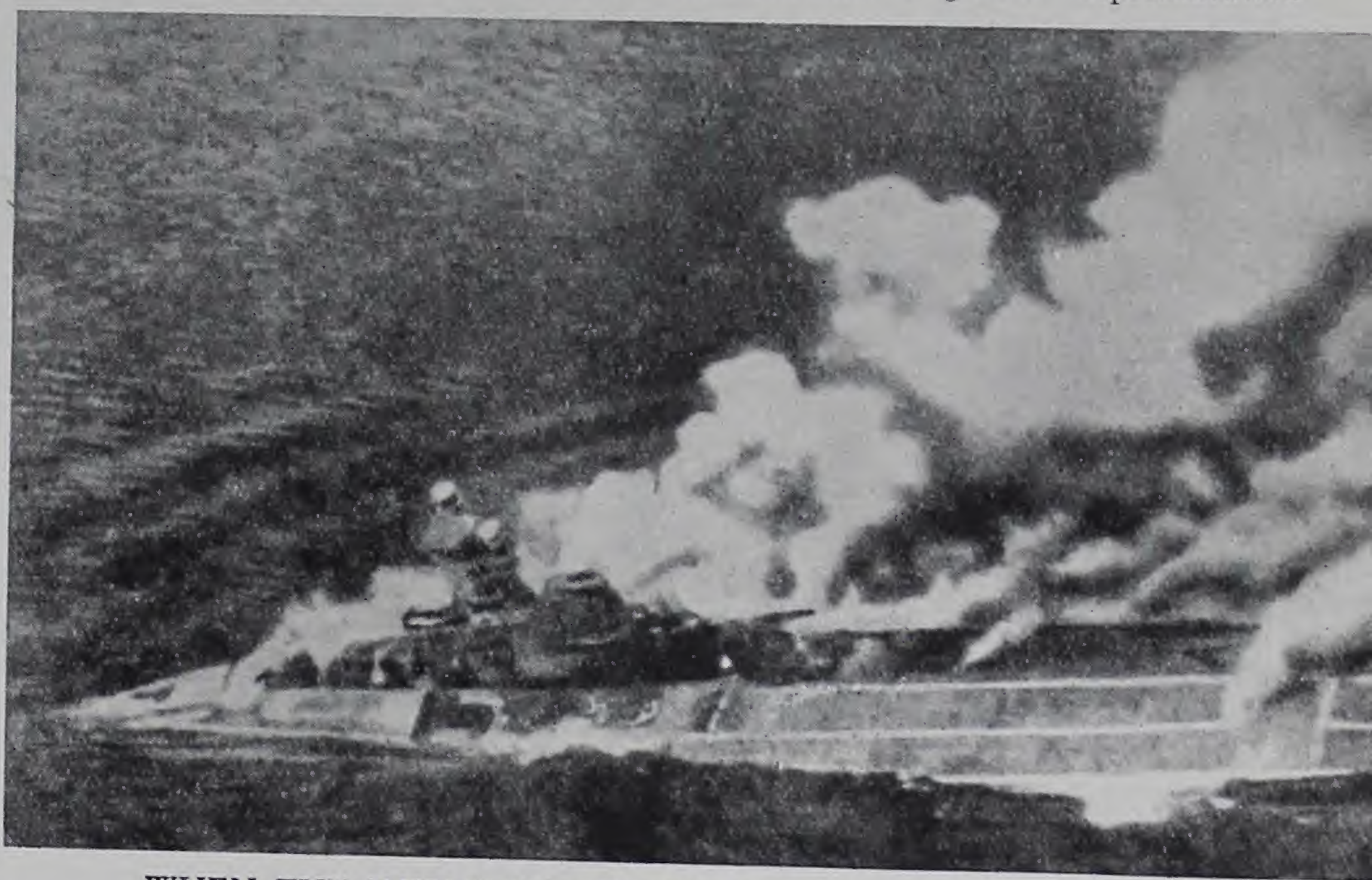
overrun by the Nazis, to mean that India was somehow excluded from the Charter. In November 1941 Mr. Amery publicly explained that the Charter could not be said to imply any modification of British policy in India, for the simple reason that that policy was far in advance of the general principles of the Charter. The misinterpretation had secured such a start that, even when Sir Stafford Cripps in 1942 categorically told a press conference in Delhi that there was no difficulty in the way of India participating in the Atlantic Charter, the falsehood that India was denied the benefits of that Charter continued to remain in currency.

The entry of Japan into the War on the side of the Axis on December 7, 1941, and the startling disasters which followed brought to India for the first time the peril of invasion. Singapore was an Indian outpost, and Burma had up to April 1937 been part of India; as the Andaman Islands (part of an Indian province) were occupied by the Japanese on March 25, 1942, invasion of Indian soil soon became a reality. The blow to the Government's prestige was acutely felt in India, as in other parts of the world. From the point of view of the war effort in India the disasters had as great an effect as earlier catastrophes in Europe had had in Great Britain. Recruitment to the Army was stimulated, and the expansion of India's war industries proceeded at an increased pace.

In political quarters the reaction was not so satisfactory. Defeatism, which had all along been a factor in the attitude of the Congress Party, gained ground. When the British Government announced in March 1942 that Sir Stafford Cripps, a Member of the War Cabinet, was to visit India as an envoy plenipotentiary carrying the "final" proposals of His Majesty's Government for the solution of the deadlock, the defeatists felt that, if anything, their forebodings were confirmed. Nevertheless, the Mission was hailed with apparently general satisfaction, and it was judged that if anyone could succeed in his formidable task that man was Sir Stafford. He was handicapped by the circumstance—not at all well recognized—that the Government had already gone to great lengths in its attempts to conciliate the recusant parties. It could not propose fundamental constitutional changes—not merely because of its preoccupation with the War, but also because such proposals would inevitably bring to the forefront that intractable issue of Hindu-Muslim relationships.

By that time the Muslims had made it clear that any change which exposed them to the risk of permanent political dominance by the numerical might of the Hindu electorate would be resisted to the utmost. The Congress Party—mainly Hindu in composition and outlook, despite its pretensions—would stand firm on the overriding significance of the ballot-box, regardless of the fact that its success would depend in the last resort on the sanctions provided by armed force, which could not take cognizance of political issues. So, although the proposals which Sir Stafford brought were important in the precision of their re-statement of the Government's proposals of August 1940, their only novel feature was a provision for any province of British India to remain out of the new Constitution and to negotiate separately with the Government.

This was designed to placate the Muslims, with whom the idea of a separate "state" of Pakistan had made rapid headway. It was not at all acceptable to Hindus, who looked upon it as encouraging the "break-up" of India. Pakistan was the name given to an imaginary territorial area which had been variously defined by Muslim sponsors so as to cut off the Punjab, "Afghanistan" (Baluchistan and North-West Frontier Province), Kashmir and Sind as a solid enclave in which Muslims predominated, and to add to it Eastern Bengal and part of the United Provinces, so that it could have a separate identity as a sovereign state within the new India. Actually it seemed at first to be nothing more than a bargaining counter which Mr. Jinnah could use in order to induce Hindu leaders to concede to the Muslims a greater representation



WHEN THE INVASION OF CEYLON WAS FRUSTRATED

In daylight on April 5, 1942, 75 Japanese bombers from carriers raided Colombo, and were beaten off with the loss of 25 shot down, five more probably destroyed, and 25 damaged. On the 9th, in attacking Trincomalee, the enemy lost 21 aircraft; a further dozen were probably destroyed. But after leaving Ceylon the destroyer 'Vampire,' the cruisers 'Dorsetshire' and 'Cornwall,' and the aircraft carrier 'Hermes' were lost by air attack (see pp. 2082-83). Top, a Japanese photograph said to show the sinking of the 'Hermes.' Below, Canadians of a Hurricane squadron in Ceylon beside wrecked enemy aircraft shot down by their unit.

Photos, Associated Press; Fox



than their actual numbers warranted in the central government of the India to be.

As time went on and the strength of the Muslim League grew, bitter criticisms of the Pakistan scheme from the Congress Party and Hindu spokesmen impelled the Muslim leaders to nail it to their mast. In this atmosphere Sir Stafford Cripps found that all depended on the attitude of the Congress Party, which, as it proved, meant the views of Mr. Gandhi, who led the Party from without. Mr. Gandhi saw that acceptance of the scheme by his Party would in effect draw that Party into the Government's war effort and imperil the existence of the machine

have appealed to other than the Congress Party, their acceptance would be interpreted by opponents in an unfavourable light to the electors. The small group of representatives of the Europeans (British residents) intimated readiness to accept the proposals even though Sir Stafford's exposition could not have left them under any illusion regarding the sweeping character of the constitutional changes which were likely to accrue. This unselfish gesture of progressive sympathy with Indian aspirations was more appreciated by Indian leaders than the turmoil of disputation allowed to appear. It received more definite recognition later on, when European leaders in the

"The reputation of the Indian troops has long been firmly established and today it stands very high indeed in the world. Their record so far is entitled to the highest praise, and I am confident that in the even greater role they may soon have to play they will acquit themselves splendidly."

The peacetime Indian Army of 150,000 had been swollen to well over the 1,000,000 mark. Recruits—on a voluntary basis, for no conscription applied except to the British in India—poured in, and the only limitation on their numbers was imposed by the availability of equipment and officers to train them.

On February 3, 1942, the Under Secretary for India (the Duke of Devonshire) told the Lords:

"The technical equipment of the Indian Army is much in excess of anything that was dreamt of before the outbreak of war, and the Indian Army is supplying vastly larger proportions of technical personnel required to keep a modern army in the field than has been the case in the past."

The triumphs and accomplishments of Indian contingents are narrated in many Chapters of this work which deal with the Far Eastern and Middle Eastern campaigns: Punjabis and Rajputs in Hong-kong (p. 1987); many units in Malaya (see table in p. 2045); others in Burma (see table in p. 2049). Earlier Chapters give credit for the gallant operations in East Africa and Libya. On May 10 the withdrawal of the Burma Army from Burma was effected under General Sir H. R. L. G. Alexander. By the end of the year, under General Wavell, the task of recovering Burma had begun.

Meanwhile, the Congress Party, disturbed by the controversy which had developed over its rejection of the Cripps proposals, gathered itself together in the hope of restoring its political prestige. The defection of Mr. Rajagopalachariar, son-in-law of Mr. Gandhi and the former Prime Minister of Madras, gave occasion for demonstration of Mr. Gandhi's dominance, for the Party's ranks closed, leaving Mr. Rajagopalachariar with no following to speak of. Under Mr. Gandhi the Party Executive decided to press for the withdrawal of all British power from India. This led to the formulation of plans which—with whatever dialectical respectability they were clothed—were tantamount to encouragement of the enemy. The Government, none too soon, took action on August 8 by arresting Mr. Gandhi, Pandit Jawaharlal Nehru and other leaders. Disturbances, showing all the signs of intensified and calculated preparation for obstructing the war



GANDHI AND NEHRU AT CONGRESS COMMITTEE

Gandhi is on the right, listening to the whispers of his secretary, Mahadev Desai. At the left of Desai, on the dais, is Pandit Jawaharlal Nehru. The session of the All-India Congress Committee opened on August 7, 1942, at Bombay. After it had passed a resolution calling for a mass movement of non-violence Gandhi, Nehru and other Congress Party leaders were arrested.

Photo, Planet News

which had, in his hands, become powerful and had given him, in his dominance over it, unshakable influence. Despite negotiations which at one time raised hopes, the Party had no intention of accepting unless its own control over the Government of India were immediately enforced. Such a course was impracticable. It would have stirred up intense resistance from other parties—Muslims, the Depressed Classes (Scheduled Castes) and the Indian States, representing roughly about two-fifths of the total population of India—and it would unthinkably have strangled India's war effort, at a time of critical gravity.

The breakdown of the negotiations on April 10 was announced. No Indian party had accepted the proposals because, however much these might

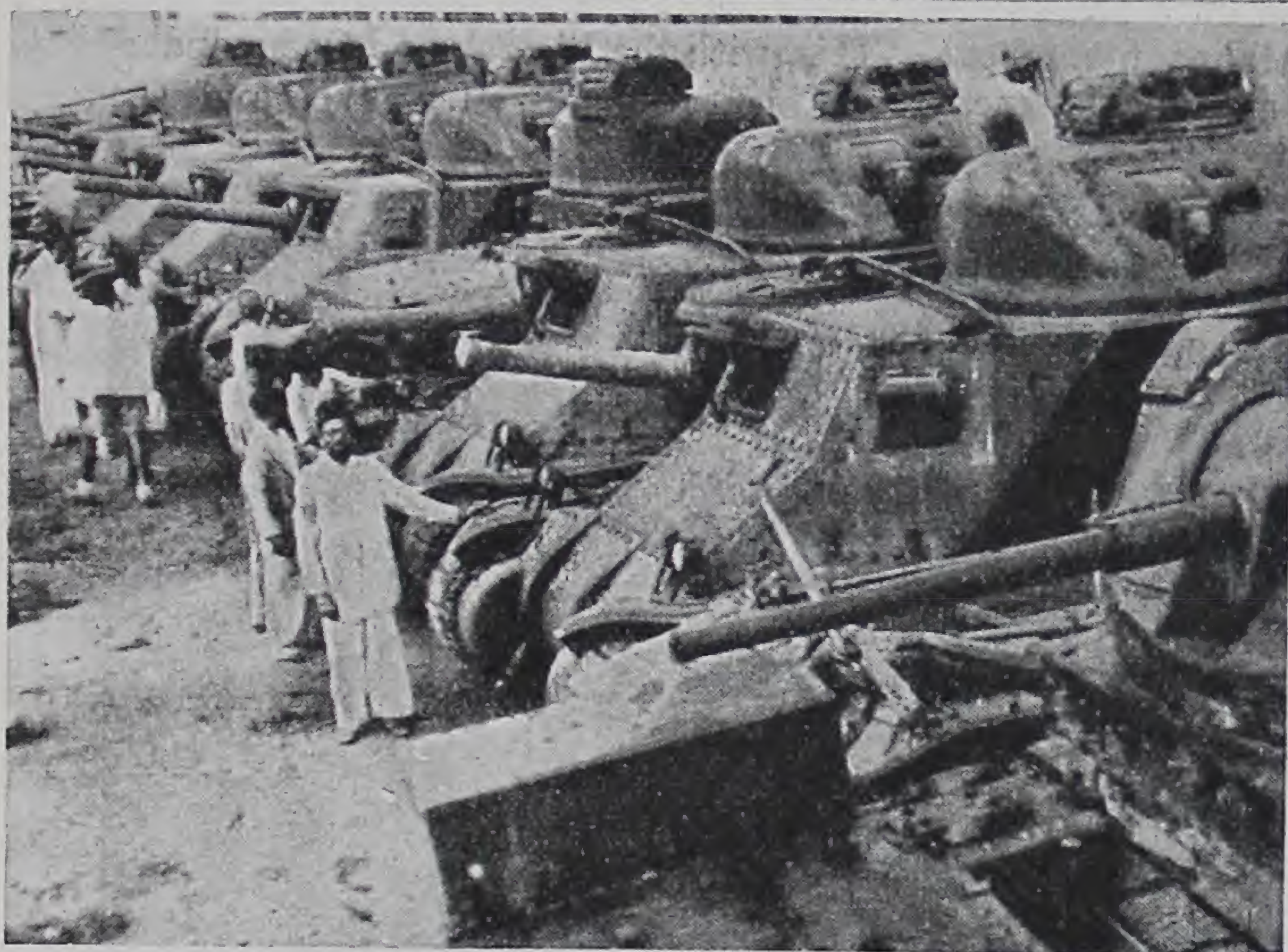
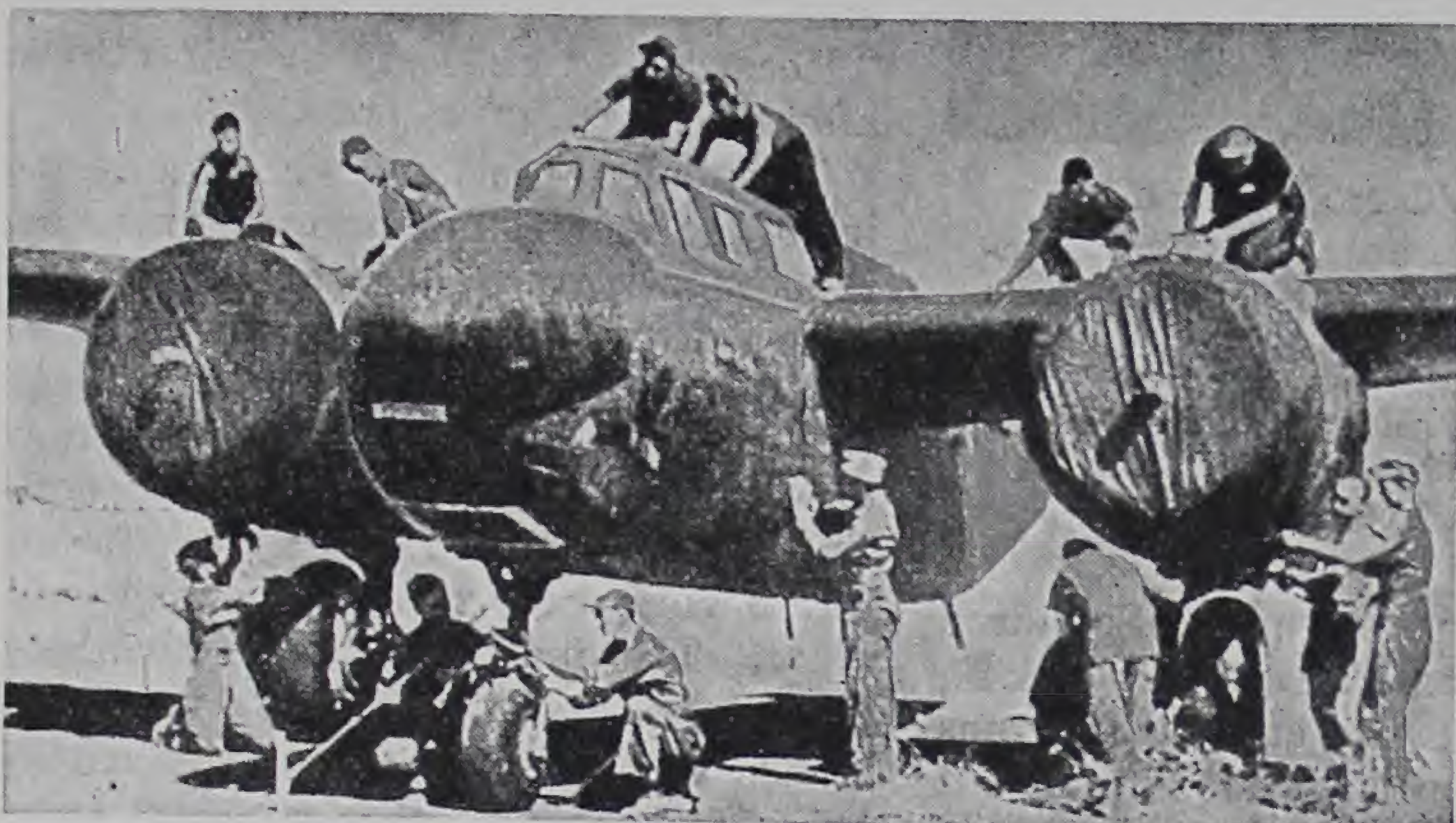
Central Legislature ranged themselves formally behind the Prime Minister's endorsement of the policy which the proposals—although rejected and technically withdrawn—had outlined.

This political controversy tended to overshadow the reality of India's great contribution to the war effort of the United Nations. In 1940 her troops in Africa had played a great part in the elimination of Mussolini's Empire. They continued to assert their strength and to gather fresh laurels for gallantry and efficiency in the extension of operations in Libya, Syria, Iraq and Persia. In the retreats in the Far East they suffered and fought gamely. When 1942 dawned with the battle spread to the frontiers of their own country they were braced to the test. In November 1941 General Sir Archibald Wavell had declared:



AMERICAN AID FOR DEFENCE OF INDIA

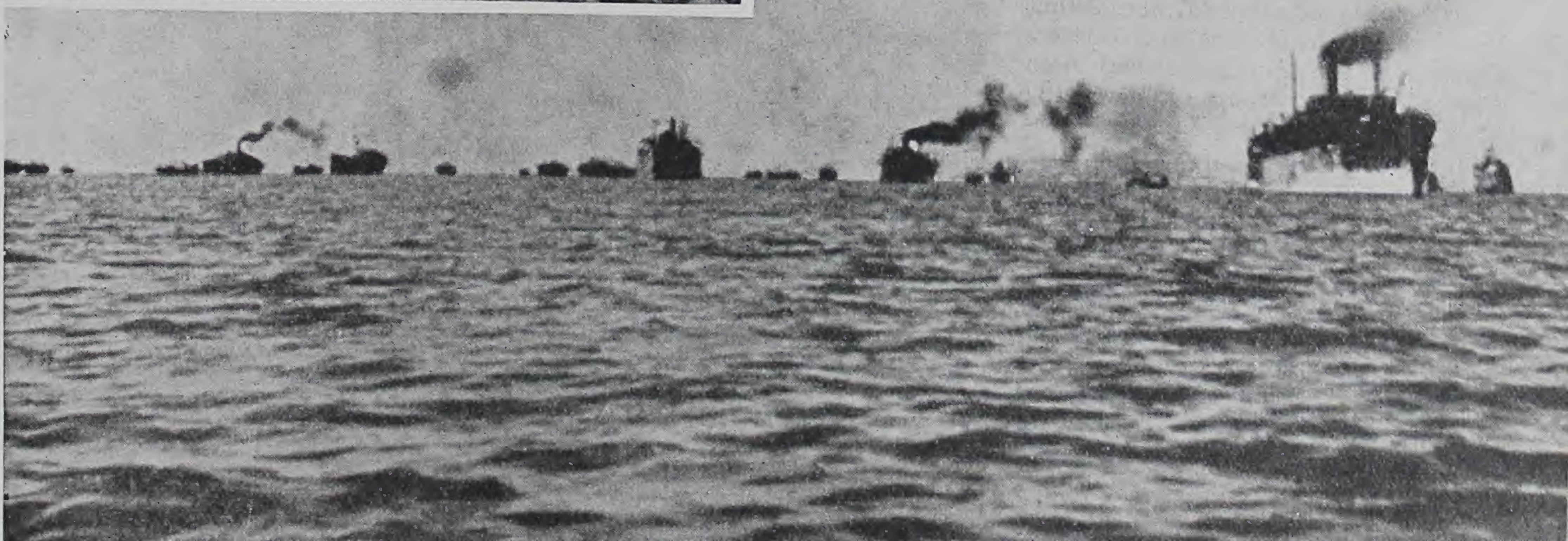
The extreme importance of India as a base for the reconquest of Burma and the expulsion of the Japanese from China demanded immediate and large-scale reinforcement, in which the United States of America played a big part. Top, left, unpacking American army lorries at an Indian railway siding. Below, the crew of an American twin-engined bomber strip the plane of its protective wrappings ready for action after its arrival. Top, right, the United States flag flies over an advanced base in India.



BRITISH SUPPLY CONVOY NEARS INDIAN PORT

One of the largest to leave Britain for India, this convoy (below), numbering dozens of vessels, safely made the long voyage laden with aircraft, tanks, guns and other weapons and supplies to equip a large army. Left, some of the tanks after being landed. Besides the supplies for its own defence, India needed immense quantities for dispatch to the Allied armies in Persia, Iraq and Syria.

Photos, Pictorial Press; Central Press; Associated Press; Keystone



effort, and in particular the operations on the Burma frontier, broke out in many parts of India, and were accompanied by strikes. In the east of the United Provinces and in Bihar the disturbances were specially fierce. By the end of August the situation had been restored to normal; on September 3 General Wavell paid a tribute to India's armies and air force, and also to the astonishing progress in the manufacture of munitions. The disciplined might of India's fighting men was saving, and would save, India, he averred. In the course of the year reinforcements arrived from the United States, chiefly Air Squadrons, which at once played a leading part in the air attacks on Japanese-occupied Burma.

Apart from the armed forces (including the Royal Indian Navy, which distinguished itself in patrolling Indian waters, and the young Indian Air Force which shared in the air cover provided for Burma), India's war effort found notable

expression in the establishment of the Eastern Supply Group Supply Council on which representa-

tives of Great Britain, the United States of America, Australia, South Africa, and Canada sat for directing the work of the Supply Department. This cooperation of India in the Far Eastern campaign was of great importance, and included the munitioning of operations in Persia, Iraq and Syria. Moreover, the Persian Gulf road of access to Russia gave India the opportunity of making a special contribution to the assistance of that ally, as also by means of air transport to China after the Burma Road had been closed by Japanese action.

The disquietude prevailing in the public mind after the breakdown of the Cripps negotiations was replaced later by satisfaction at the advance made by the Eight Army under General Montgomery in Libya. Then, too, there had been considerable apprehension about the presence of a Japanese naval squadron in the Indian Ocean, and the enemy occupation of the Andaman Islands, about 900 miles distant from Trincomalee (Ceylon) and 800 from Calcutta. The Andamans had been evacuated by our troops on March 12; 13 days later the Japanese announced they had occupied them. On Easter Sunday, April 5, at 8 in the morning, 75 Japanese aircraft bombed Colombo, mainly the harbour area. But the defences were in alert readiness: two of the raiders were destroyed by the anti-aircraft guns and 23 by our fighters. Nor was this all, for five more were stated to be probably destroyed, and 25 to have been damaged.



U.S. ENVOY TO INDIA

On December 11, 1942, Washington announced the appointment of Mr. William Phillips as American envoy to India. He arrived at New Delhi on January 8, 1943. Mr. Phillips had held the post of United States Ambassador to Italy.

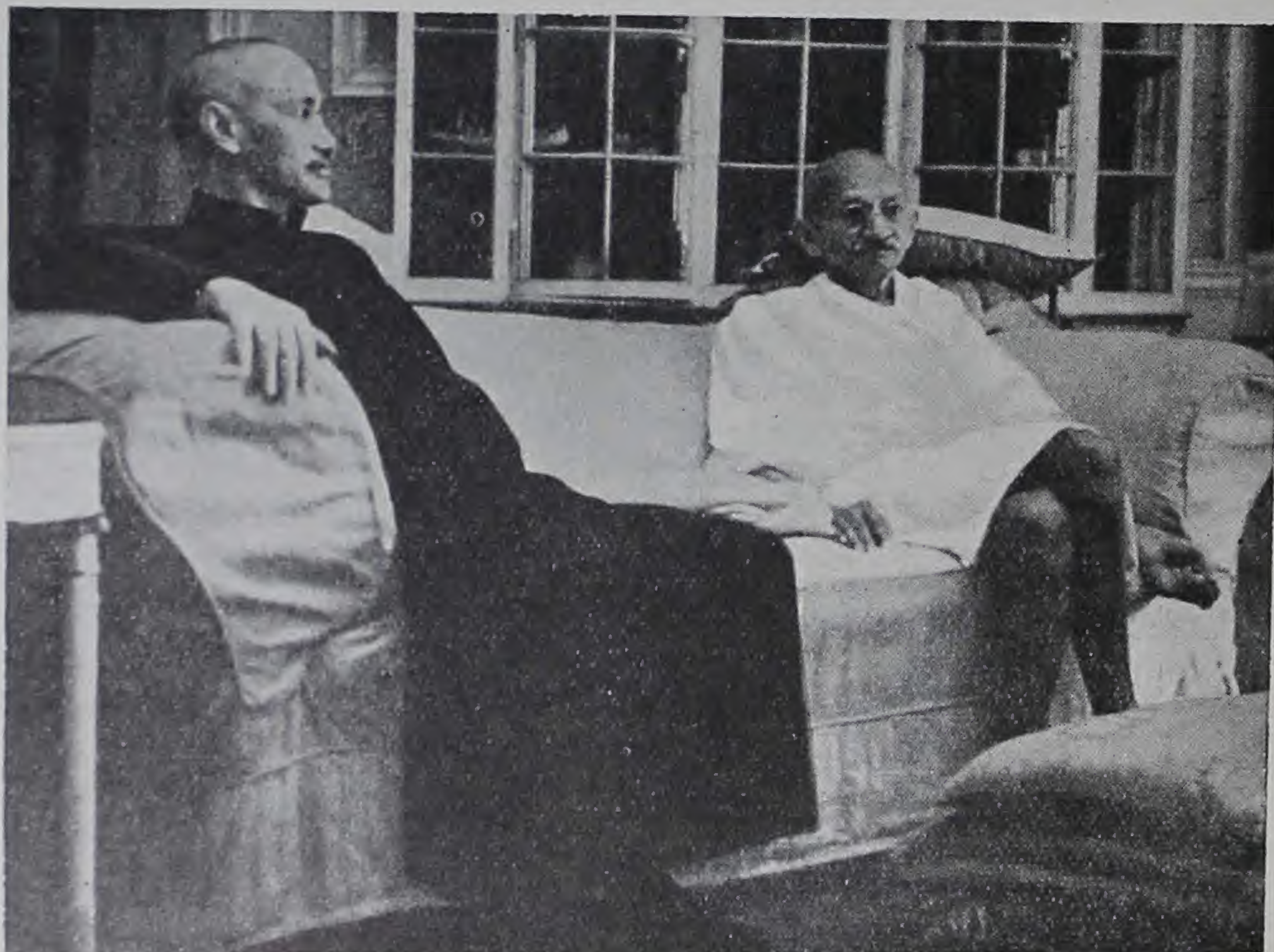
Photo, Topical Press

It was a Canadian pilot, Squadron Leader L. J. Birchall, D.F.C., R.C.A.F., whose timely warning enabled the guns and aircraft of the defence to be prepared for the enemy. While on a reconnaissance flight in his Catalina flying-boat on April 4 he had observed the Japanese

fleet off the S.E. coast of Ceylon, and had sent back the information by radio. He failed to return from this flight, and nothing more was heard till, almost a year later, he was reported a prisoner of war at Yokohama. Undoubtedly the Japanese object was an invasion of Ceylon, but the failure of their bombing onslaught deterred them. The enemy fleet had comprised three battleships, five aircraft carriers and a strong escort of cruisers and destroyers. Trincomalee was bombed on the 9th, the enemy losing 21 aircraft for certain and a further 12 probably destroyed. British casualties were light, but four fine ships—destroyer "Vampire," cruisers "Dorsetshire" and "Cornwall," and aircraft carrier "Hermes"—were lost by air attack after leaving Ceylon ports.

Japanese Attack on Ceylon

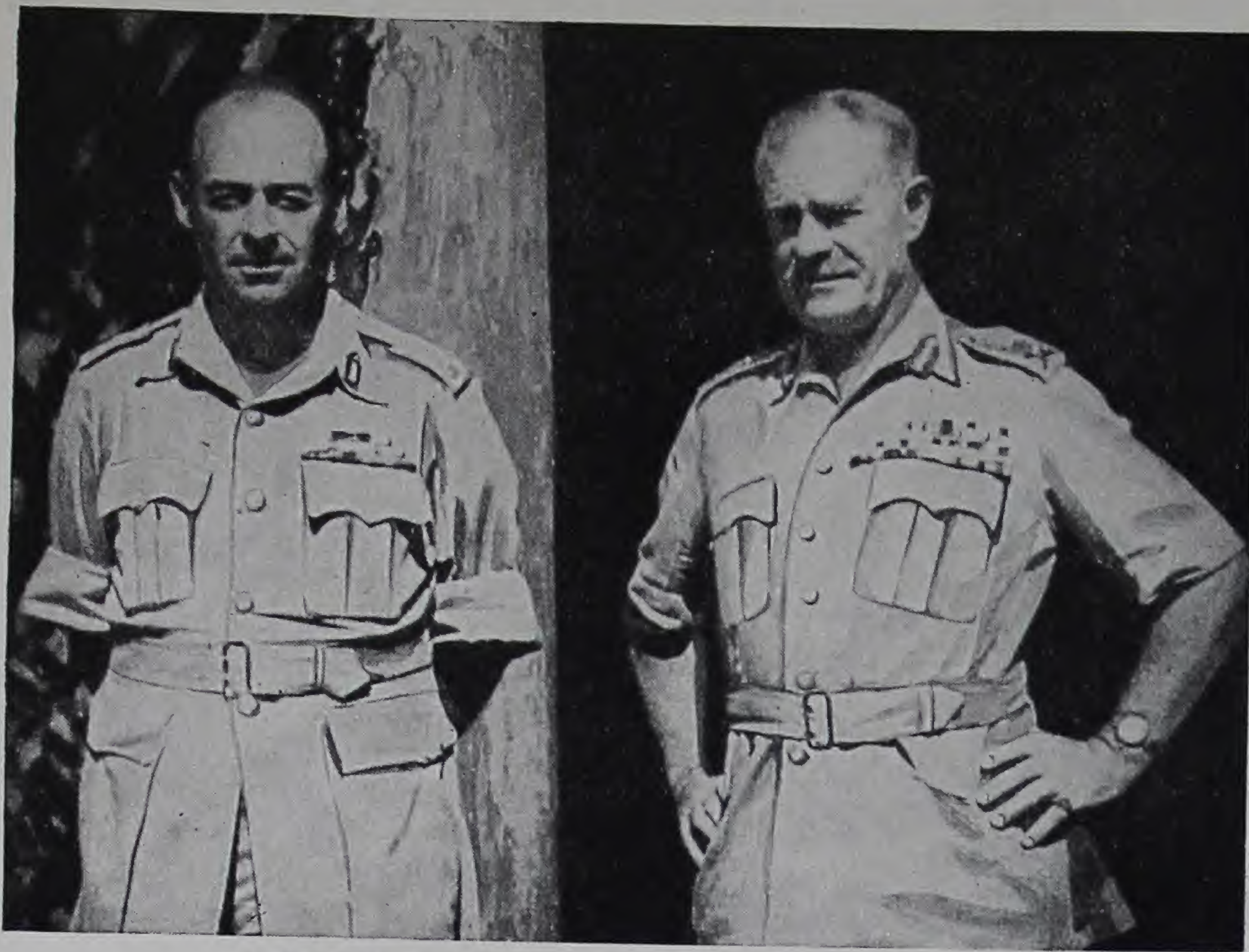
The repulse of this attack and the averting of the danger of invasion, followed by the occupation of Madagascar in May, had done much to reassure Indian opinion. The policy of developing the association of Indians with the administration despite the political deadlock was continued. In July 1942 a further expansion of the Viceroy's Executive Council took place. The number of Indian Members (Ministers) was increased to 11, a non-official European (Sir Edward Benthall) being for the first time given a seat. This, with the Viceroy and Commander-in-Chief (General Wavell), gave the



GENERALISSIMO CHIANG KAI-SHEK MEETS MR. GANDHI

The main purpose of Chiang Kai-shek's visit, which began on February 10, 1942, and lasted a fortnight, was to consult with General Sir Alan Hartley, C.-in-C. India. He saw a number of the Indian leaders, including Mr. Jinnah and Pandit Jawaharlal Nehru, and had a five-hour talk with Mr. Gandhi (above, right).

Photo, Keystone



LIMITED ALLIED OFFENSIVE IN BURMA

Towards the end of December 1942 British troops crossed into Burma. By the 29th they had penetrated to the Chindwin Valley and later occupied the Maungdaw-Buthidaung area, 60 miles N. of Akyab (see map). A few days earlier General Sir Archibald Wavell, C.-in-C. India, had inspected our forward positions. He is seen above (right) with Lieut.-Gen. N. M. S. Irwin, Commander of India's Eastern Army. (After a difficult campaign with fluctuating fortunes in most trying terrain British forces were withdrawn in May 1943.)

Photo, Indian Official

Council a racial composition of 11 Indians and five British. The portfolios were thus assigned: War, General Wavell; Defence, Sir Feroz Khan Noon; Finance, Sir Jeremy Raisman; Home, Sir Reginald Maxwell; Supply, Sir Hormusji Mody; Civil Defence, Sir Jwala Srivastava; Law, Sir Sultan Ahmed; Labour, Dr. B. R. Ambedkar; Transport, Sir Edward Benthall; Overseas, Mr. M. S. Aney; Commerce, Mr. N. R. Sarker; Information, Sir C. P. Ramaswami Aiyar; Education (including Health), Sir Jogendra Singh; Posts and Air, Sir Muhammad Usman (without portfolio).

Pertinent to this increased "Indianization" is mention of the important decision which gave India additional

Diplomatic Representa- tion Granted

recognition of her approach to Dominion status. In 1941 Sir Girja Shankar Bajpai was appointed the first Agent-General to the Government of India at Washington and Mr. Thomas Wilson became the United States Minister at Delhi. Mr. Wilson's place was taken in December 1942 by Mr. William Phillips, a leading member of the United States diplomatic service. In 1942 also Sir Mahomed Zafrullah Khan went to Chungking as India's first Agent-General in China, and Mr. Shen Shih-hua became China's first representative at Delhi.

The great advance in India's financial development, thanks to the turning of

the balance of trade with the United Kingdom in her favour, was shown by her dramatic repatriation of her sterling payments. In March 1936 her sterling debt stood at about £376 million. By March 1942 the figure had been reduced to £90 million. It was expected to fall to £66 million at the beginning of 1943. Thus British investment in loans floated for the development of Indian railways, canals and other productive public works had been liquidated. India now owns practically all her own railways and manages them as well. In privately owned industry there has been a marked advance of Indian capital. Cotton, iron, steel, sugar, cement, and many other industries are in Indian hands. In the jute and coal industries formerly in British hands Indian capital is replacing British. Lord Catto told the House of Lords that in 1942 75 per cent of the jute industry was in the hands of Indian investors. To this development the expansion of Indian industries during the war has made notable contribution. The British taxpayer has disbursed something like £300 million for the modernization of India's defence services.

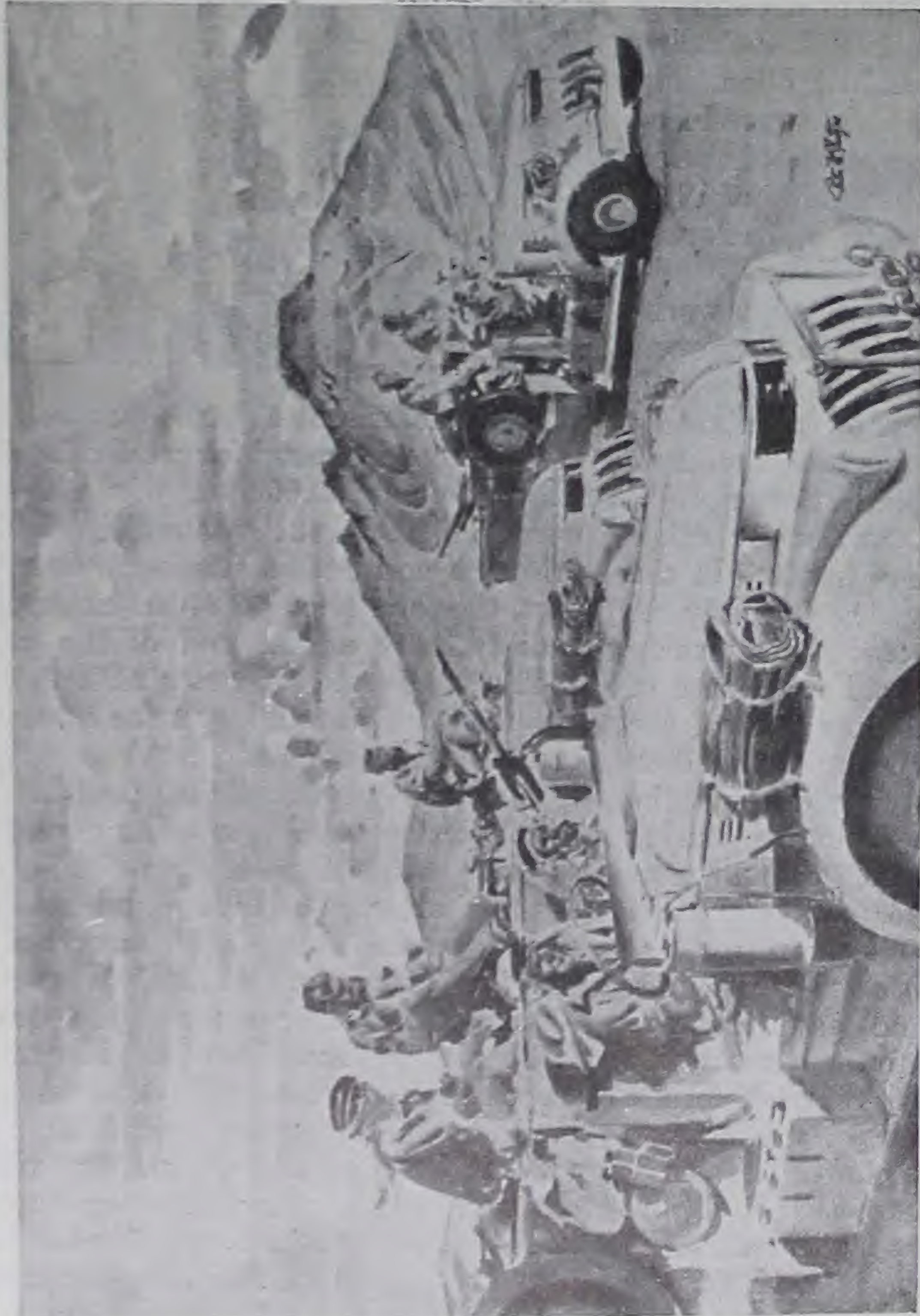
These financial and administrative changes afford a clue to the success with which the Government of India, despite the sharp political crises, was able to lead the country's war effort. The steady influx of Indians into the civil and defence services in the higher ranks was another portent. During 1942, for the

first time in its history, the I.C.S. (the premier Civil Service) had more Indians than British members (617 to 585), and it was disclosed that one-fifth of the cadre of officers of the Indian Army (King's Commissions) were Indian.

To sum up the situation in India at the end of 1942: after playing a great part in Africa, the Far East and Burma, Indian troops with their American, British and Chinese comrades-in-arms stood four-square first in resistance to the Axis aggressors and, as the tide began to turn, in preparation for the recovery of lost territory and the punishment of the wrongdoers. India's industrial machine had been worked up to a fine pitch of efficiency in support of this effort. India held firm as the vital link in the chain of the United Nations stretching from the Caspian to the China Sea.



By September 1942 India's casualties in the Second Great War were officially stated to be 100,000, of whom 2,096 were killed, 8,521 wounded, 2,938 prisoners and 84,833 missing. Despite that, the total strength of the expanded Indian Army at the end of the year 1942 was assessed at nearly 2,000,000—free men freely enrolling in the common cause. This stood out as the essential fact, behind which political hesitations merely served to bring into sharper relief the fine spirit of gallantry which, once again, the genius of Indian and British teamwork had been able to mobilize for the dedication of India's young nationhood to the victory of the forces of liberty. It showed that the increased responsibilities which had been thrown on India in the generation which had passed had enhanced rather than dimmed the readiness of her sons to uphold the great martial traditions of the past at the call of the King-Emperor.



DESERT PATROLS IN THE LIBYAN CAMPAIGN

Organized by Major R. A. Bagnold and staffed by picked New Zealanders, the mobile motor columns of the Long Range Desert Group travelled thousands of miles far into the enemy's country, over un-mapped desert. They secured vital information, shot up forts, laid mines, attacked oases, and stopped normal traffic along many desert routes. Here are vivid impressions of some aspects of their work. Top, left, On Patrol; right, Grim Escarpment. Lower left, Eroded Rock; right, Beyond the Sand Sea.

From drawings by Capt. Peter McIntyre (Official N.Z. Artist); reproduced by courtesy of the New Zealand Government

LIBYAN CAMPAIGN: ROMMEL'S ADVANCE TO EL ALAMEIN

Few battlegrounds—using the term in its wide application—can have witnessed such swift reversals of fortune as the deserts of Libya and the stretch of territory westward to Tripoli. Here is the story of Rommel's offensive, beginning in mid-January, 1942, which carried the Afrika Korps by July to the threshold of the great cities of Egypt, where, at the El Alamein line, the enemy was held up by the bravery and determination of the British Eighth Army

SOMEWHERE in the neighbourhood of El Agheila on the Gulf of Sirte Rommel's Afrika Korps and Auchinleck's 8th or Desert Army achieved a state of uneasy equilibrium. It was mid-January, 1942, and the seesaw that had carried the British so many hundreds of miles in triumph was about to reverse its swing. Rommel was desperately in need of a breather, and now he was in occupation of a readily defensible position—an area of marsh, flanked by the sea on one side and the limitless desert on the other, and with a front which the German engineers speedily converted into one vast minefield. Auchinleck's supply line was stretched almost to breaking-point. Fuel, food and water were none too plentiful, and before long the troops in the front line were living on bully beef, biscuits, and tea. Practically all the supplies had to be brought along the single road that stretched back like an immense snake to the railhead somewhere west of the Egyptian frontier. If Benghazi could have been used as a port much might have been brought by sea; but Benghazi was bombed and its waters mined day and night by German planes operating from airfields in Sicily, and submarines lay in wait outside the harbour, which was filled with tangled wreckage. Even if transport planes had been available (which they were not) they would have been unable to find suitable landing-grounds. For by now the rains had come, and everywhere road and beach and desert were a mass of wellnigh impassable mud. It was a miserable time, spent in a miserable setting; the men in their flimsy bivouacs huddled together for warmth

Reinforcements for Rommel

and company, soaked to the skin and with little or nothing wherewith to make a fire.

Then once again the military machines, clogged though their wheels were with the desert mud, began to turn again, slowly at first and ponderously, but soon with increased momentum. It was the enemy's turn to advance, and it was soon apparent that Rommel had made good use of the period of martial

ALLIED UNITS IN DESERT CAMPAIGN, January–October, 1942

British. 3rd, 5th, 7th, 8th, 42nd, and 44th Royal Tank Regiments: the Queen's Bays, King's Dragoon Guards, 1st Royal Dragoons, 8th Hussars, 10th Hussars, 9th Lancers, 12th Lancers, City of London Yeomanry, Royal Gloucester Hussars, Royal Northumberland Fusiliers: Durham Light Infantry, Coldstream Guards, Scots Guards, Worcesters, Cheshires, East Yorks, Green Howards, King's Royal Rifle Corps, Rifle Brigade: 3rd and 4th Regiments Royal Horse Artillery, and the Honourable Artillery Company (11th Regiment, R.H.A.), Royal Artillery, field regiments, and heavy and light anti-aircraft regiments.

Indian Army. Regiments included Skinner's Horse, Baluchis, Punjabis, and the Frontier Force Rifles.

Fighting French. Forces included the 2nd/13th and 3rd/13th Foreign Legion, Bataillons du Pacifique, and the 1st and 2nd Marine Battalions.

inactivity. In spite of the British submarines he had managed to get a number of tanks and guns landed on the adjacent beach, and considerable

reinforcements had also made the passage from Italy. Moreover, he was in a much better position than his antagonist with regard to his supply line: behind him a good road ran all the way to his great base at Tripoli, and at the very time when the British were feeling the pinch his own dumps were being filled to overflowing.

From Cairo on January 22, 1942, came the news that on the previous day, in conditions of bad visibility, Rommel had sent out three strong tank columns on a "reconnaissance in force" east of a line running south of Mersa Brega. British light forces made contact and inflicted some casualties, but were forced to fall back. During the next few days there was confused desert fighting in the triangle made by Jedabia, Antelat and



GENERAL RITCHIE WITH HIS CORPS COMMANDERS

General Neil Methuen Ritchie (centre) was appointed to command the Eighth Army in December 1941 in succession to General Cunningham. He was relieved of his post by General Auchinleck (who himself assumed command) on June 25, 1942. Left, Lieut.-Gen. Willoughby Norrie (30th Corps); right, Lieut.-Gen. W. H. ('Strafer') Gott—13th Corps—who was killed in August when his plane was shot down.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright



SOUTH AFRICAN PATROL SHELTERS FROM MORTAR FIRE

The range was short, and debris can be seen flying. At Gazala, in which region this photograph was probably taken, the South Africans and the British 50th Division were nearly trapped by the advancing enemy on June 13, 1942. Covered by the 50th, the South Africans first made a fighting withdrawal along the coastal road. The 50th then struck westward into the Italian positions, later wheeled south and eventually reached safety, doing much damage en route.

Photo, British Official : Crown Copyright

Saunnu. By January 25 a wide area in Cyrenaica had become a battle zone, and the enemy's main force was reported to be pushing hard north and north-east of Msus. Then on the 28th Rommel assumed the offensive in real earnest. One enemy tank force which had already reached Regima, some 20 miles to the east of Benghazi, pressed on to establish itself across the coast road to the north of the town; a second force was active in the Msus area; while a third, composed of two strong armoured columns, forced the 7th Indian Infantry Brigade to give ground at Benghazi itself.

The Indians at one time were surrounded, but they managed to cut themselves out and retreated in good order along the coast for some 200 miles through enemy-infested country. In face of the strong enemy thrust Benghazi was evacuated on January 29. Following the withdrawal of the 4th Indian Division Derna was occupied by the enemy on February 3; and by the end of the first week in February practically the whole of the Cyrenaican "bulge" had been lost, and the main forces were engaged in the neighbourhood of Mekili-Tmimi and Gazala. Here the 8th Army put up a strong resistance, while sandstorms and heavy rain made operations

by land or air exceedingly difficult. Both sides threw out small patrols, and there were occasional artillery exchanges and small-scale engagements in the desert.

As March drew on there were signs of renewed movement on the enemy's part. His artillery became increasingly active; and strong columns, including tanks, pushed ahead south of Gazala. These moves met their response in the shape

of fighting columns of British troops who engaged in spirited harassing activities. Then there was a lull. March passed into April and April into May, and every week that went by served to fortify the belief that at length the British had solved a hitherto insoluble problem, that of establishing and maintaining in the desert a line that should be really stable. To quote a passage from Alan Moorehead's *A Year of Battle* (London, Hamish Hamilton):

"Ritchie and his two lieutenant-generals [W. H. ('Strafer') Gott and Willoughby Norrie] decided to drop the idea of having a continuous chain of defences at Gazala. They decided to define their position with a solid minefield stretching about 35 miles from the sea southward into the desert, but they did not man the minefield. Instead they sealed up their troops in or behind the minefield in a series of isolated forts or 'boxes.' These boxes faced four-square, ready to meet attack from any direction. It was the old idea of the British square at Waterloo, adapted to modern fast armoured fighting. Each box was completely surrounded with a ring of land-mines and barbed wire. Guns faced outwards in all directions. The boxes were only a mile or two square at the most, and were provided with water, food and ammunition to withstand a siege. Narrow lanes led in through the mines and wire so that the garrison could be supplied."

There were some half-dozen of these boxes, each of which the Nazi tanks were at liberty to by-pass or surround as they pleased—but at their peril. They might seize all the surrounding desert: but to what end? They could not push on to more valuable conquests for fear the British should sally forth from their boxes and take them in the rear. The main boxes were at Gazala, near the shore: they were manned by Maj.-Gen. Dan Pienaar's 1st South African Division. A few miles to the south men from the Tees and Tyne held



Maj.-Gen. W. H. RAMSDEN



Maj.-Gen. H. LUMSDEN



Maj.-Gen. F. W. MESSERVY

Maj.-Gen. Ramsden commanded the British 50th Division of the Eighth Army; Maj.-Gen. Lumsden, after commanding the 1st Armoured Division, with much success, was appointed in August 1942 to the 10th Army Corps. At the same period Maj.-Gen. Messervy was appointed to command the 7th Armoured Division on the death of Maj.-Gen. 'Jock' Campbell, V.C. (see illus., p. 2007).

Photos, British Official : Crown Copyright ; Associated Press.



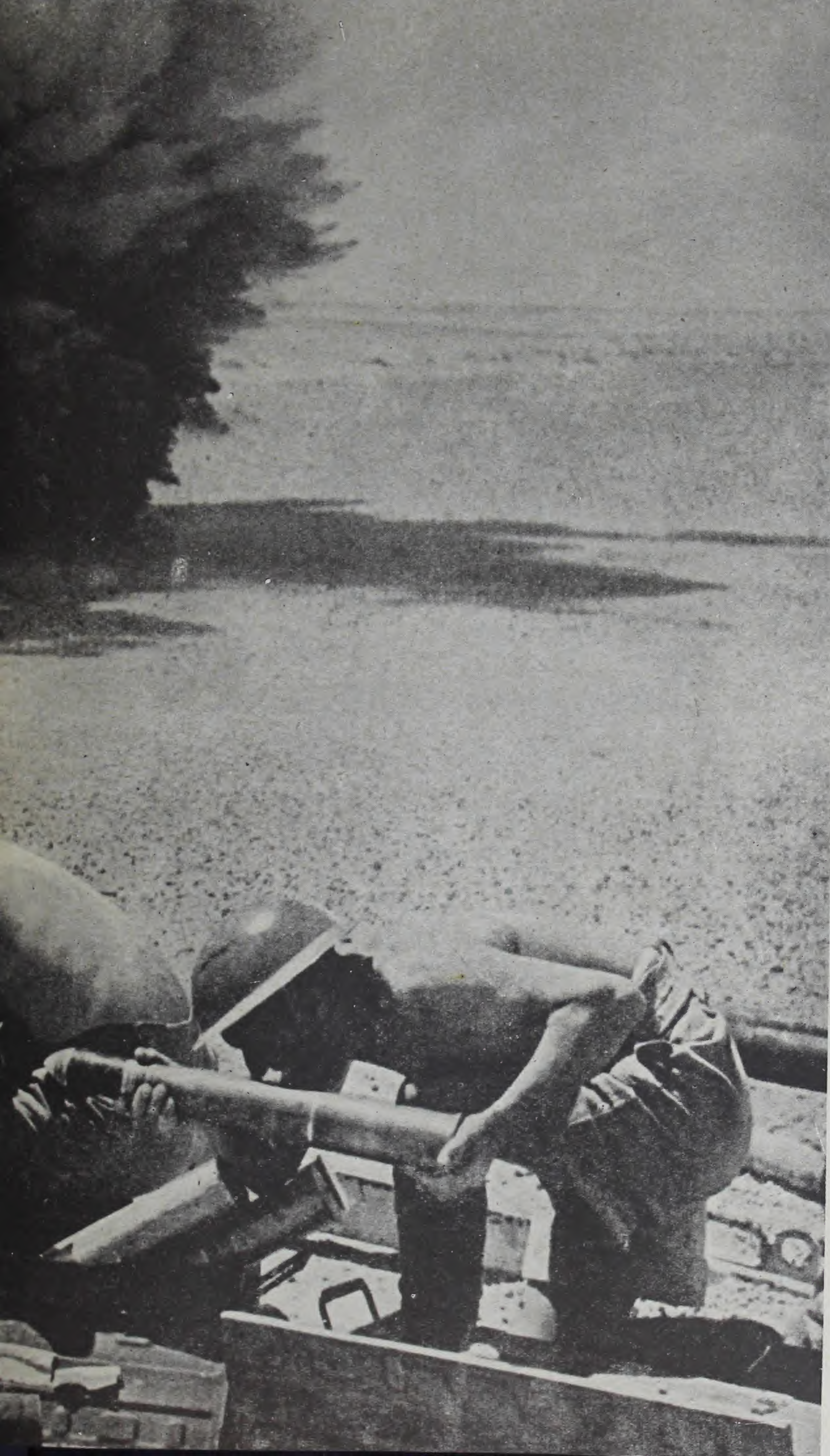
AT TEL EL EISA AND HEIMEMAT

Rommel's onrush was stopped by the beginning of July, and on the 10th the Eighth Army gained ground by an advance to the Tel el Eisa ridge. There was furious fighting around the station (top). The building was later dismantled and its wood used for headpieces and crosses on the many graves around. Right, an American-built General Stewart or 'Honey' tank, out on patrol near El Heimemat, a 200-foot hill on the edge of the Qattara Depression. The Afrika Korps attacked here at the end of August. (See map, p. 2235.)

*Photos, British Official:
Crown Copyright*







DOMINANT SIX-POUNDERS

Anti-tank artillery dominated the Libyan battlefields, and not until our guns had been silenced (by aircraft, artillery fire and infantry attacks) did the Germans send their tanks against a strong British tank force. The British six-pounder supplanted the two-pounder, and was used on tanks as well as in field batteries. It had a calibre of 2 inches and a high rate of fire—outranging the German weapon of the same type. Here is seen a British six-pounder in a long-range duel in the desert; an enemy shell lands close by.

*Photo, British Official :
Crown Copyright*



EGYPT DEFENDS THE SUEZ CANAL

Owing to the danger of mines laid by enemy aircraft in this vital waterway, special units of the Egyptian Army were posted along the banks to spot and clear them. Here the British light cruiser 'Euryalus,' en route to Port Said, is passing a mine-spotting post. Completed in June 1939, she displaced 5,450 tons and belonged to the Dido class.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



KNIGHTSBRIDGE, OR THE DEVIL'S CAULDRON

There was little but the Army's signpost (right: note the eight-figure map reference) to distinguish Knightsbridge from the desert around, but here was one of the Eighth Army's 'boxes,' held by the English Guards. The fierce battle in this region at the end of May 1942 was described by Alan Moorehead as 'Waterloo over again.' Above, British 25-pounders firing at enemy armoured fighting vehicles during the engagement.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright

the next series. Behind the centre the Guards held the Knightsbridge box established in a bare desert waste. At Bir Hacheim, the southern terminus of the front, were the Free French under General Koenig. Further in rear of the centre, at El Adem, there was a box held by Indian troops; while Tobruk, the big base box, was garrisoned by Maj.-Gen. Klopper's 2nd South African Division and British lines-of-communication men. Roaming between the boxes were three British tank brigades. Lt.-Gen. Neil Ritchie, the 8th Army's G.O.C., and Air Vice-Marshal Coningham, Chief of the Air Arm, had their H.Q. at Gambut. Altogether Ritchie had about 10 divisions, say 130,000 men, with perhaps 500 tanks. Rommel had about the same.

For weeks the tension grew: each side made ready. The Germans had the advantage here, since they could get a

New Tanks for Ritchie some four months to get a tank from America or Britain via the Cape. In the supply of aeroplanes their advantage was even greater. But all the same Ritchie was soon in possession of new tanks—American Grants (armed with a gun as big as the German 75-millimetre), and a new anti-tank gun, the 6-pounder, mounted on a Chevrolet truck. For the most part, however, he still had to

rely on British Valentine and American Honey tanks, while most of his anti-tank guns were Bofors and the 2-pounder. As for aircraft, the Germans may have had the supremacy in numbers, but Coningham's Kittyhawks, Beaufighters, Blenheims, Wellingtons, etc., were being supplemented by a few Spitfires and Hurribombers. So the stage was set for the contest.

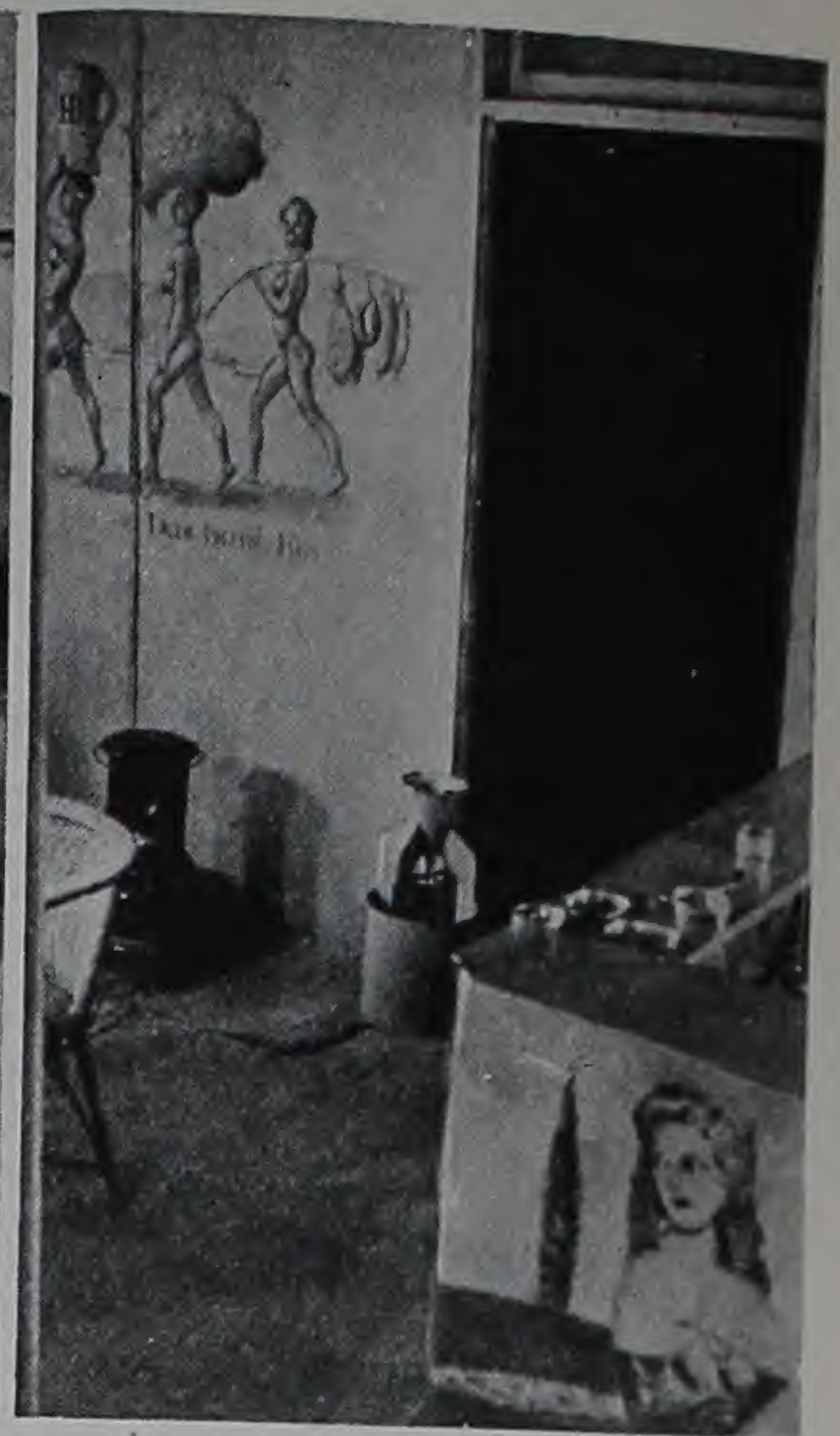
Then, to quote Alan Moorehead again:

"Early on the morning of May 26th [1942] a British tank commander saw through his glasses an unusual pillar of dust going up from the south of Bir Hacheim. Straining his eyes through the early morning haze he saw the dust cloud deepen and expand. Little black dots were spaced along the bottom of the cloud. 'Looks like a brigade of Jerry tanks coming,' he reported over his telephone to his headquarters. He looked again and added sharply, 'It's more than a brigade. It's the whole bloody Afrika Korps.' The battle had begun."

The course of the ensuing battle was described in a statement by General Auchinleck read to the House of Commons by Mr. Churchill on June 2. In an order of the day issued to all Italian and German troops in his pay Rommel had told them that they were about to carry through a decisive attack against the British forces in Libya, and that for this purpose he had made ready and equipped a force superior in numbers, with perfected armament and a powerful air force to give it support. From captured documents it was clear that



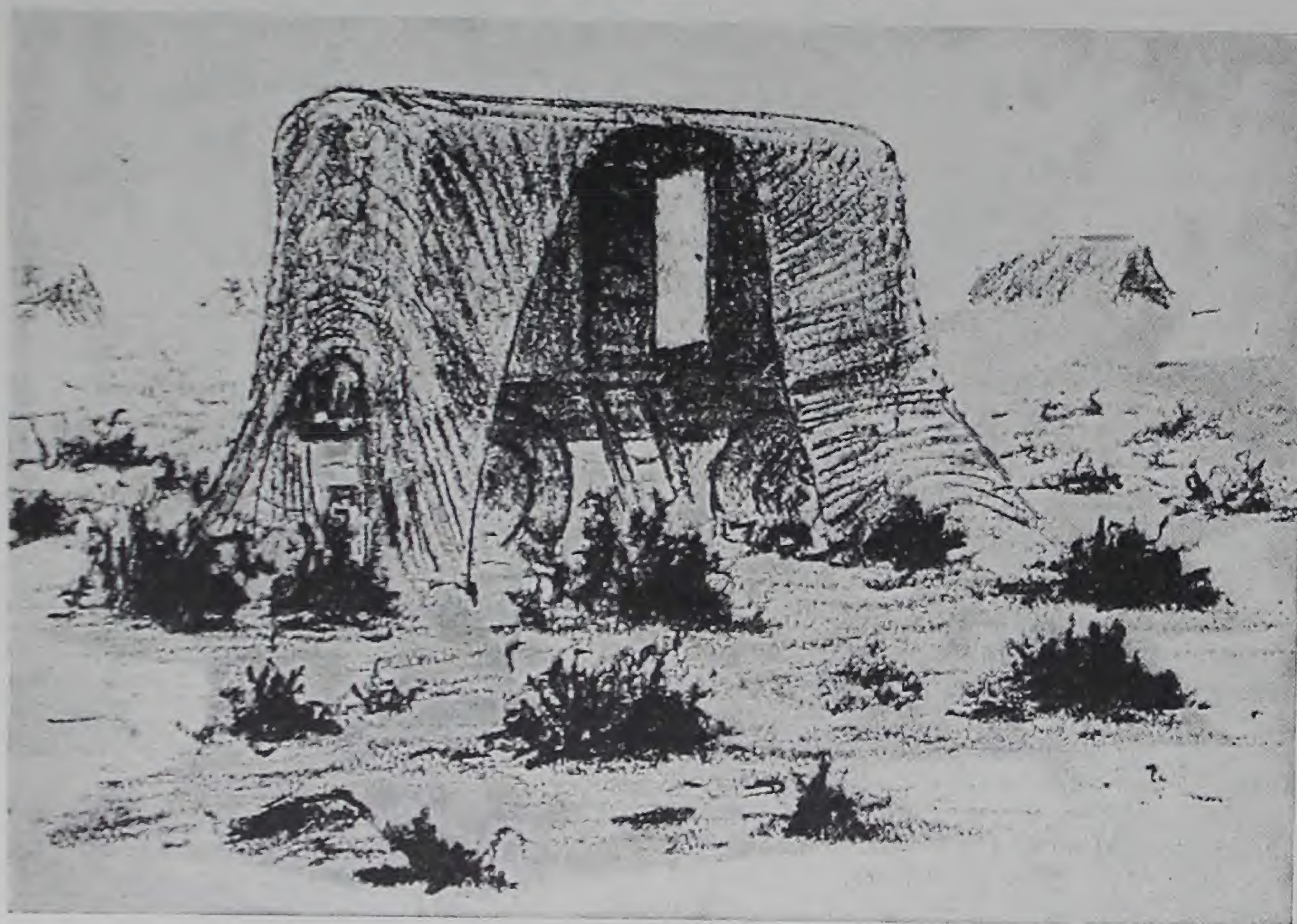
Rommel's object was to defeat our armoured forces and capture Tobruk. The main ingredients of the enemy commander's plan were (1) to capture Bir Hacheim, held by the Free French under General Koenig; (2) to pass round by the south of Bir Hacheim the German Afrika Korps, comprising the 15th (Bismarck) and 21st (Nehring) German Armoured Divisions, to be followed closely by the German 90th Light Division and the 20th Italian Mobile Corps, consisting of the 132nd Ariete Armoured Division and the 101st Trieste Motorized Division; and (3) to attack in strength our positions running south from the coast at Gazala to the Capuzzo Road—positions held by the South African and 50th (Maj.-Gen. W. H. Ramsden) British Divisions, the



CONTRAST IN LIBYAN HEADQUARTERS

Below, Air Chief Marshal Sir Arthur Tedder's sketch of the camouflaged vehicle which served as Air H.Q. and Eighth Army H.Q. at Gambut in May 1942; it was made at 7.30 one morning. Above are some of the bizarre mural decorations in the hut at El Daba occupied by Rommel when German forces were stationed there.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright



latter including battalions of the East Yorkshire Regt., Green Howards and Durham Light Infantry.

On the night of May 26-27 the Afrika Korps carried out its part of the plan; it passed to the south of Bir Hacheim, then moved north with great rapidity towards Acroma and the old battlefields of El Duda and Sidi Rezegh, which were actually reached by some of its most forward troops. They were soon driven off, however, by British armoured forces; and some Axis tanks which reached the escarpment overlooking the coast road north of

Acroma failed to interrupt communications between Tobruk and the South Africans holding our forward positions. A little fleet of hostile craft, attempting a landing from the sea at this spot, was driven off by British Naval forces on the same night.

Long before the Axis armoured and motorized troops approached El Adem or Acroma they were brought to action by the British 1st (Maj.-Gen. H. Lumsden) and 7th (Maj.-Gen. F. W. Messervy) Armoured Divisions, ably seconded by the heavy tank brigades in that area. The full brunt of the

enemy initial advance to the east of Bir Hacheim was taken by the 3rd Indian Motor Brigade Troop, which was overborne by sheer weight of metal, though not until it had inflicted heavy losses on the enemy and seriously impeded his advance. Meanwhile the Italians attacking Bir Hacheim were beaten off by the French with heavy loss.

The third part of the enemy's plan—the attack on the northern front of our main positions south of Gazala—materialized on May 27, but achieved little or nothing. An attempt to break through the defences along the coast road

Wide
Swaying
Battle

by the Gazala inlet was easily stopped by the 1st South African Division. Throughout May 28, 29 and 30 there was very heavy and continuous fighting between our armoured divisions and brigades and the German Afrika Korps, backed up by the Italian Mobile Corps. The battle swayed over a wide area from Acroma in the north to Bir Hacheim, 40 miles to the south—from El Adem, near Tobruk, to the British minefields 30 miles away to the west.

Knightsbridge, or the Devil's Cauldron as some called it—the area surrounding the box held by the English Guards—was the very heart and centre of the fiercest fighting of the battle. Moorehead described the action as being Waterloo over again. It was just the sort of action that suited the Guards: a position was given you to fortify, and you got the order to hold it to the last round and the last man.

“These odd gawky officers (writes Moorehead) with prickly mustachios, their little military affectations, their high-pitched voices, and their little jokes from the world



ROMMEL'S ULTIMATUM TO KOENIG:

'To the troops at Bir Hacheim. Further resistance would cause useless bloodshed. You would suffer the same fate as the two English brigades annihilated the day before yesterday at Got Saleb. We will cease fire if you hoist the white flag and come unarmed into our lines. (Signed) Rommel.'



Stelle:			
befördert am	19	Uhr durch	
aufgenommen am	19	Uhr durch	
erhalten am	19	Uhr	

Fern-
Sprech-
Blatt.

Spruch nr.

Bemerkung:

Abgehende Stelle:	te Meldung	Ort	Tag Monat	Stunde Minuten
	Abgegangen			
	Angelommen			
	An			

Im die Truppen
von Bir Hacheim.

Weiterer Widerstand bedeutet
nutzloses Blutvergießen. Ihr werdet
dasselbe Schicksal erleiden, wie die
beiden englischen Brigaden, die Got
Saleb, die vorgestern vernichtet wurden.

Wir stellen den Kopf ein,
wenn ihr weiße Flaggen zeigt und
ohne Waffen zu uns überkommt.

Rommel
Gammelsdorf

Recd. 6 3/6
a 9 10

MAGNIFICENT DEFENCE OF BIR HACHEIM

Bir Hacheim (see map p. 2235) was a vital 'box' at the south of Ritchie's line, held by a brigade of French troops under General Joseph Koenig. On May 27 the Italian tanks attacked, and thereafter there was no remission. By the first days of June Rommel's advance had isolated the garrison, though ammunition and medical supplies were delivered by air. Incessantly attacked, Koenig's men fought on, refusing repeated demands to surrender—third ultimatum, above, right. On the night of June 10, by order of General Ritchie, Koenig and his warriors withdrew and fought a way to the British lines. Koenig was decorated by General de Gaulle in August with the Cross of the Liberation (inset). Top, enemy dive-bombers and tanks attacking; above, left, two of the Fighting French defenders; lower left, Bir Hacheim as the Afrika Korps found it.

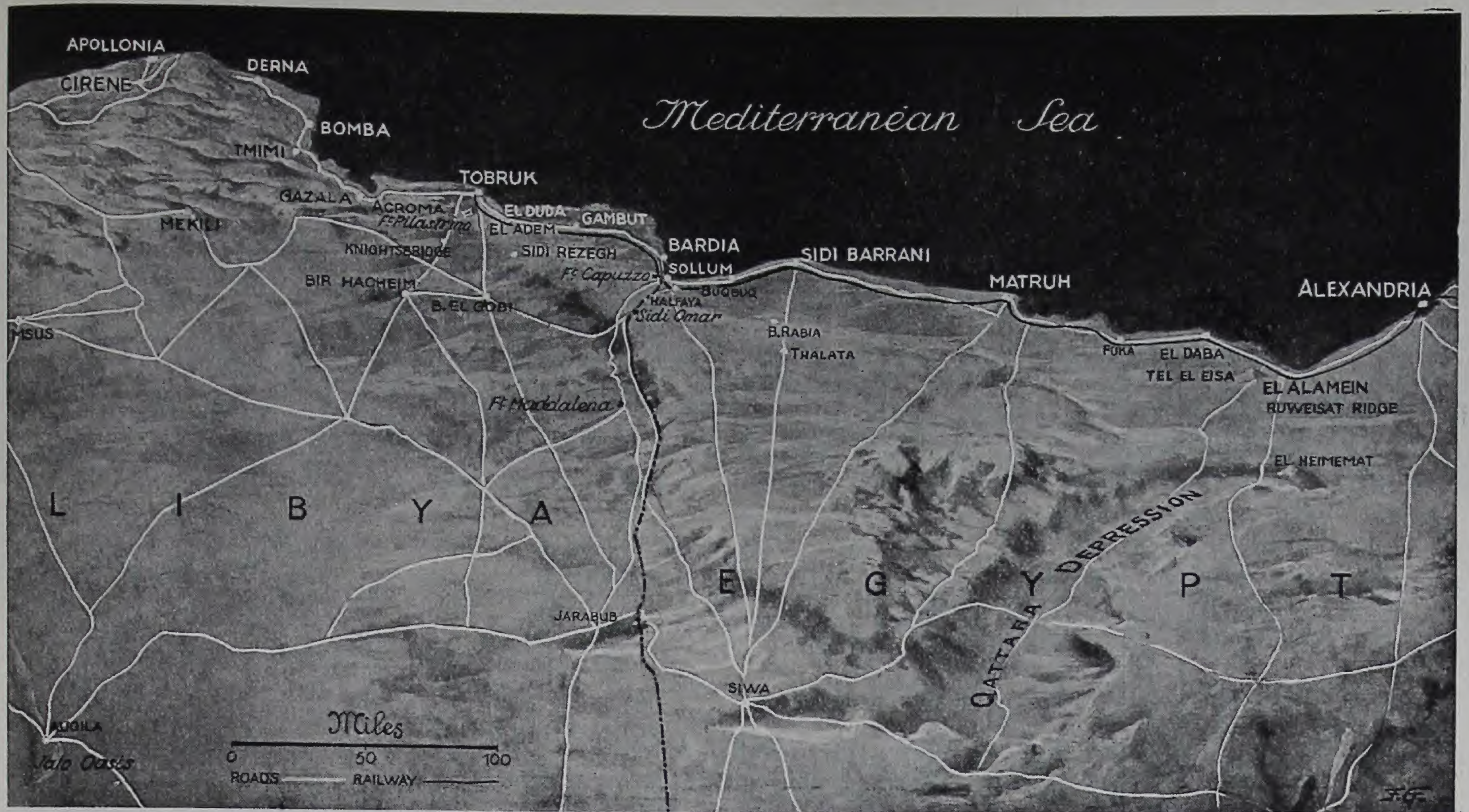


GERMAN ATTACK WHICH BROUGHT ABOUT TOBRUK'S FALL

On June 21, 1942, the Axis troops occupied Tobruk, after a desperate struggle which began on the preceding afternoon. Tobruk had been in our hands since January 21, 1941, and we regained it on November 13, after Gen. Montgomery's decisive victory. It was defended in June by the 2nd South African Division, commanded by Maj.-Gen. H. B. Klopper (inset), with a mixed British and Indian force. Top, Stukas bombing the defences; below, German assault troops supported by tank formations move up to our wire under cover of a heavy smoke screen.

Photos, Keystone; Sport & General





ROMMEL'S ADVANCE TO EL ALAMEIN, JULY 1942

Beginning his offensive in mid-January, 1942, Rommel had won back the whole of the Cyrenaican bulge by the first week in February. British 'box' defences at Gazala, Knightsbridge, Bir Hacheim, El Adem and Tobruk halted him until, at the end of May, he swept on again. The key position at Bir Hacheim had to be relinquished on June 10, and a general withdrawal followed. Tobruk fell on the 21st; Mersa Matruh was evacuated eight days later, and by the end of the month Rommel was facing the Eighth Army at El Alamein. See also maps in pp. 1590 and 2011.

Specially drawn for THE SECOND GREAT WAR by Félix Gardon

of Mayfair and Ascot, kept bringing their men up to the enemy, and the men, because they were the picked soldiers of the regular Army and native Englishmen and Scots, did exactly as they were told. Knightsbridge did not break because it could not break. It stood through this maelstrom as a rock will stand against the sea."

At length the enemy, running short of supplies and water, forced gaps in our minefields, one along the general line of the Capuzzo Road, and another 10 miles to the south, so as to retreat to the west.

These gaps lay on either side of the defended area held by a brigade of infantry from the north of England. This brigade strenuously resisted the enemy's attempts to pass his transport through their ranks, and on May 28 Air Vice-Marshal Coningham directed his whole air force on to low attacks against the enemy armour and motor transport in this region. By nightfall on May 31 the enemy had succeeded in withdrawing many of his tanks and much transport through one or other of the gaps, but a very large number remained on the wrong side of his anti-tank barriers, and these were ceaselessly harried and destroyed by our troops and the bombers and fighters of the Air Force.

Fierce fighting was still proceeding (said General Auchinleck's statement of June 2), and the battle was by no means over; but there was no shadow of doubt that Rommel's plans had gone completely awry. In a further telegram the C-in-C. paid tribute to the skill, determination and pertinacity shown by General Ritchie and his corps commanders, Lieut.-Generals Norrie and Gott. He also expressed satisfaction with the performance of the new General Grant tanks.

It was a crucial stage in the battle.

"The enemy was exhausted," said Mr. Attlee, Deputy Prime Minister, in the House of Commons on June 23, quoting from the latest dispatch from General Auchinleck, "and had literally fought himself to a standstill. Had we been able to take advantage of the enemy's condition, we might have turned the scale. In point of fact, however, we were equally exhausted, and this was impossible."

"On June 3 the enemy succeeded in over-running the 150th Brigade, and established for himself a forward post in our minefield area. In an attempt to restore the position and drive him out General Ritchie counter-attacked on June 4. On the information available at the time the chances of success at this attempt seemed good, and it was preceded by adequate and careful reconnaissance. But it is now clear that it was in fact premature. The enemy put in a fierce counter-stroke, in face of which we were forced to withdraw with considerable losses."

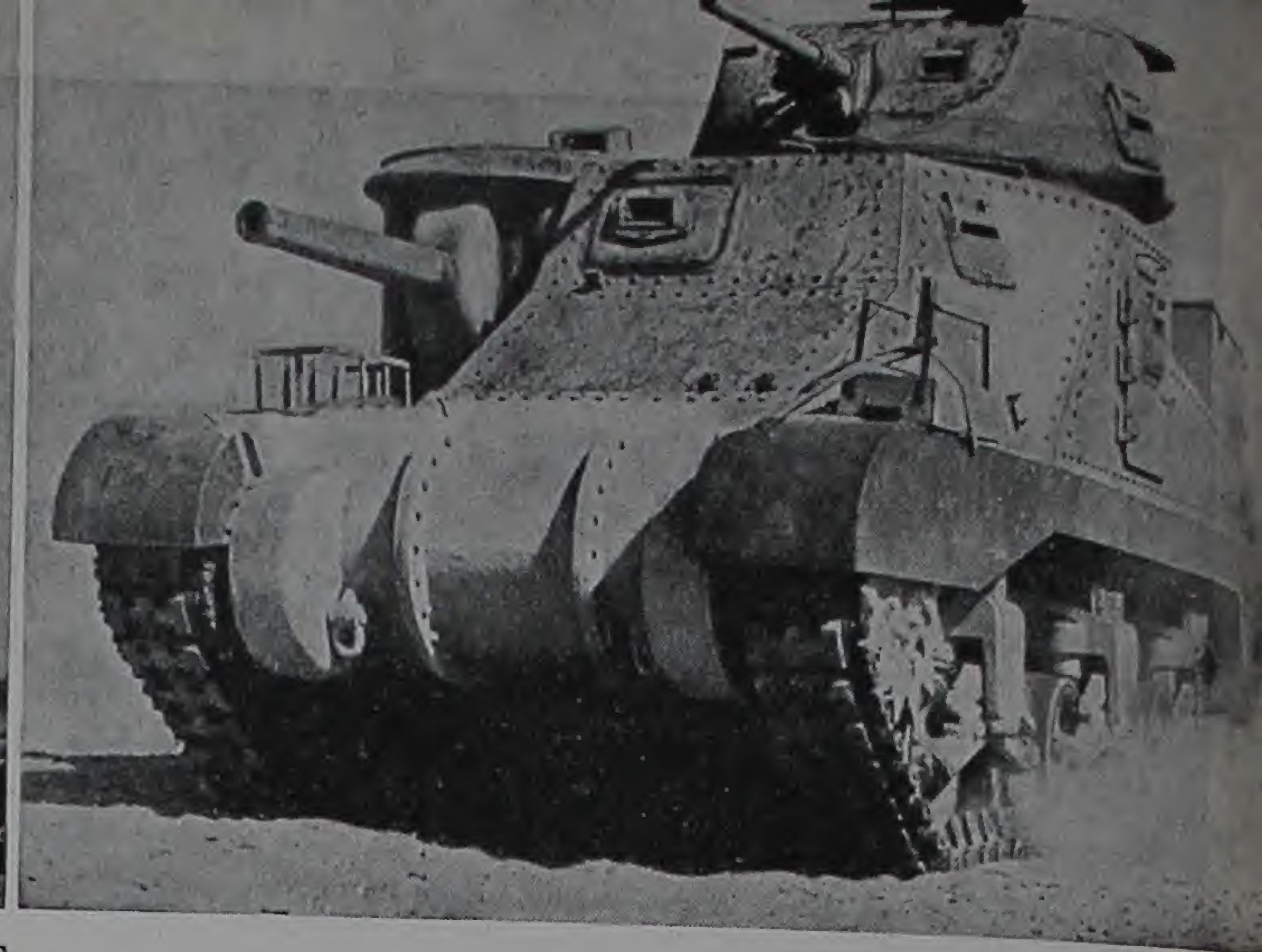
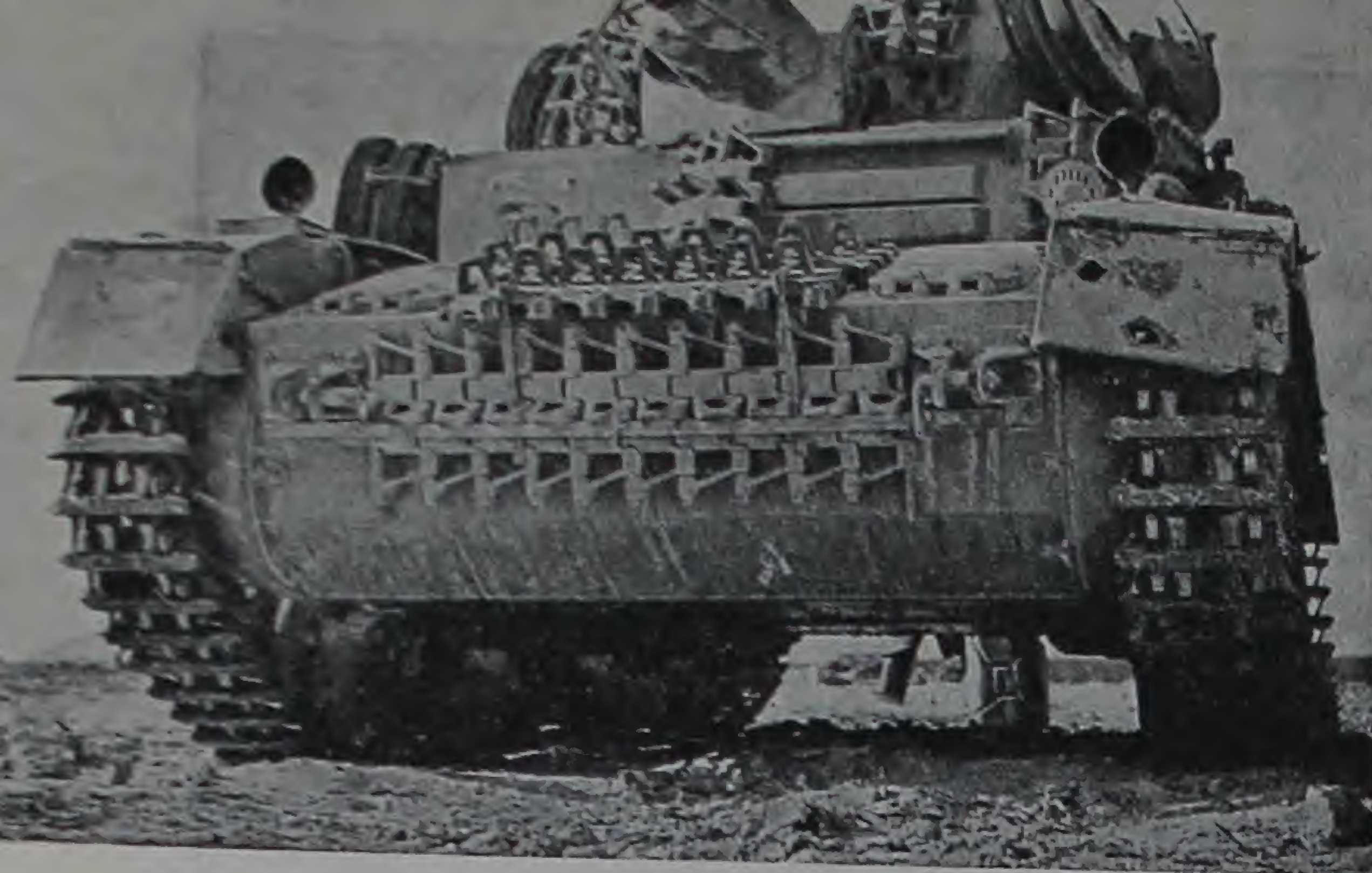
Following this success, the enemy concentrated his attention on Bir Hacheim, where Koenig's Fighting French had already been subjected to heavy pressure for a period of nine days. An Alsatian veteran of the last war, Koenig declared bluntly that "my



PRECIOUS WATER SUPPLIES

After water convoys have searched for water holes and wells in the desert, other units fill white-painted cans which are taken on lorries to the fighting units. Here some of the cans are being unloaded.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



TANK TYPES IN LIBYAN BATTLES

Left, the German Mark IV heavy tank was a formidable opponent, armed with a 4½-pounder gun. Spare tracks and other components were carried on the front. The American-built General Grant (right), used by the Eighth Army, weighed about 28 tons and carried two guns—37-mm. (in top turret) and 75-mm. It was later superseded by the General Sherman.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright

orders were to hold Bir Hacheim. I hold Bir Hacheim." For 16 days of almost continuous fighting in great heat and recurrent sandstorms his weary, powder-blackened but grimly resolute warriors held the fort against every assault. More than a thousand tanks were flung against their defences as well as countless aircraft, the fire of a great host of guns. Time after time Koenig was called upon to surrender; each time he replied with the same brief and unprintable reply. An Italian prisoner said: "we are beginning to believe that Bir Hacheim is being held by phantom Frenchmen; we cannot believe that they are still alive after the terrific pounding that we have been giving them." The Frenchmen themselves called their position the "lost inferno" as they looked out above their battered parapets at the surrounding desert littered with smashed German tanks and piles of Italian corpses. "All France looks to you in her pride," ran a message from General de Gaulle to General Koenig on June 10. That night, but only on the direct order of General Ritchie, Koenig and the survivors of his little force were withdrawn. "They have played a vital part in upsetting the enemy's plans," ran the official communiqué; "their magnificent fighting qualities have earned the admiration of the United Nations."

The fall of Bir Hacheim released considerable enemy forces, and soon the armoured squadrons clashed again in a great new battle in the desert south-west of Knightsbridge. For five days fighting proceeded round Knightsbridge and Acroma. Until June 13 (the Prime Minister told the House of Commons on July 2) the battle was equal. "Our recovery process had worked well. Both sides lost proportionately. But on

June 13 there came a change. On that morning we had about 300 tanks in action. By nightfall no more than 70 remained, and this happened without any corresponding loss having been inflicted on the enemy." Months after, it was revealed that the reverse had not been so sudden or so shattering as had been supposed. "According to the latest information," said Mr. Churchill in the House of Commons on September 8, "about 200 tanks were lost over a period of about a week. It is not possible to say exactly how many were lost on June 13, but the bulk of the losses probably took place on that and the previous day." There was no ambush, it appeared; only an attack that failed. Moorehead declares that about 30 tanks were lost on June 13, when our armour fought a head-on battle with the German panzers and massed artillery. But—and this was the all-important fact—Rommel had reserves, and we had none.

Of the result of the action there was all too little doubt. The battlefield, as Mr. Churchill said, passed into the hands of the enemy, so that his wounded tanks were repaired while ours were lost to us. Among the many dire consequences was the British decision to withdraw from the Gazala position. With most of his armour gone, what else could Ritchie do? Under cover of the 1st Armoured Division and the R.A.F., the 50th (Northumbrian) Division and Pienaar's 1st South African Division were withdrawn and succeeded in joining Gen. Ritchie to the east of Tobruk. The South Africans, covered by the 50th, got away first. Then the 50th, finding the way blocked by the enemy to the east, actually marched west, right through the Italian lines; then, wheeling round Bir Hacheim, they swerved north-east and reached the British lines

almost intact, bringing with them many prisoners. For 30 miles they fought their way, beating off enemy attacks, destroying enemy guns and tanks, overrunning hostile positions.

On June 18 Cairo reported that the British forces had been withdrawn from Sidi Rezegh and the Indians from El Adem, although mobile forces were continuing to harass the enemy in the area S.W. of Tobruk. All the boxes except Tobruk had fallen. These withdrawals, imposed on Ritchie by the now far superior strength of the enemy, brought the 8th Army to the Egyptian frontier. Two enemy columns followed the retreating British to the border, where they were held up near the Halfaya Pass. To the west only one British outpost remained, the bastion of Tobruk. And that, too, was soon to fall.

On the morning of Saturday, June 20, following a heavy air bombardment, the enemy attacked Tobruk in force, and broke through the south-east perimeter defences (manned, as it happened, by tired troops) at El Duda, forcing a gap through which tanks and lorried infantry were swiftly passed. The garrison, a mixed force of British (201st Guards Motor Brigade, 32nd Army Tank Brigade), South Africans (H.Q., 2nd S.A. Division, 4th and 6th S.A. Infantry Brigades), and Indians (11th Indian Infantry Bde.), commanded by the South African General, H. B. Klopper, put up a fierce resistance; but the tanks of the German 15th Armoured and the 90th Light Divisions, supported by the Italian Trieste and Ariete Divisions, carried everything before them. The assault was launched at 5.20 a.m.; by 9.0 a.m., according to the German account, Rommel's forces had broken through the minefields into the inner ring. Rommel himself led the tempestuous advance in his light armoured car, and by 11.30 a.m. he was eight miles inside the perimeter. By 4.45 p.m. the

main positions were in German hands, although the guns were still firing from the batteries near the coast. Fort Pilastrino surrendered early on Sunday morning; but here and there in the outer ring, and in Tobruk itself, fighting continued until late on Sunday. Klopper had hoped to fight his way out to the west, but only a lucky few, including some of the Coldstream Guards, succeeded in getting through the enemy. "At 7 a.m. this morning," said a special announcement issued in Rome that Sunday afternoon, "a British officer presented himself at the Headquarters of our 21st Army Corps to offer the surrender of the fortress of Tobruk in the name of the Commander. Axis troops had occupied fortress, town, and harbour. 25,000 prisoners, including several Generals, have surrendered."

For 517 days, from January 21, 1941, to June 21, 1942, the 8th Army had held Tobruk. Now, at last, this persistent thorn in the flesh of the German troops on the road to Egypt had been plucked out. From Berlin came the news that Gen. Rommel had been promoted Field-Marshal.

Tobruk's fall was a heavy blow, all the heavier because it had been so unexpected. Mr. Churchill received the news as he went into President Roosevelt's room in the White House. "I hope the House will realize what a bitter pang this was to me . . . " he said. It

was utterly unexpected, he made it plain later, not only by the public, but by the War Cabinet, the General Staffs, by General Auchinleck and the High Command of the Middle East. Only on the night before its capture General Auchinleck had telegraphed that the garrison was adequate, the defences in good order, and 90 days' supplies were available for the troops.

Shortly before Tobruk's fall the 8th Army was reported to be holding strong fortified positions on the Libyan-Egyptian frontier. But it soon proved that this Halfaya line was quite insufficient to hold up the enemy for 10 days or a fortnight, as had been hoped. On June 25 G.H.Q. Cairo announced that the British troops had been withdrawn from Sollum and Sidi Omar. That same day General Auchinleck assumed personal command of the 8th Army, in succession to General Ritchie. Three

days later heavy fighting was reported to be taking place near Mersa Matruh—on the line, that is, that had been the front in September 1940 before Wavell assumed the offensive.

In the fighting about Mersa Matruh a gallant part was stated to have been played by the New Zealand Division, who were rushed there from Palestine. "The Government of New Zealand agreed to the fullest use being made of their troops," said Mr. Churchill in his speech of July 2, "whom they have not withdrawn or weakened in any way. They have sent them into battle under the command of the heroic Freyberg, and they have acquitted themselves in a manner equal to all their former records."

That Mersa Matruh, for long the advanced British base, had been evacuated was announced in Cairo on June 29; the Axis claimed that it was taken by storm by the Italian 21st Army Corps, preceded by the 7th Bersaglieri Regt. and units of the German 90th Division, and that 6,000 prisoners had been taken. This was scouted in London, however, since it had never been the Allied intention to stand a siege in the town.

The enemy continued his advance along the coast, through Fuka and El Daba to El Alamein, only some 60 miles from Alexandria. Here, with his left flank resting on the Qattara Depression and his right on the Mediterranean, Auchinleck, after having issued a spirited Order of the Day, made the determined stand that he had planned.

The 50th Division was singled out by the War Office in a later communiqué for special commendation.

"Their toughness and discipline saved more than themselves. At Alamein they helped to halt the German and Italian divisions who were pushing on, flushed with success and expecting an easy conquest of Egypt. During those weeks from late June a few tired formations saved the world from disaster. Before the end of August the Eighth Army, reinforced and re-equipped, was itself again and invincible. But for many days a few thousand Indians, South Africans, Australians, and New Zealanders and what was left of the British 1st and 7th Armoured Divisions and the 50th alone barred the way to the Nile. In each phase of the struggle the 50th enhanced their reputation as dashing and determined fighters."

Rommel attacked in strength on July 2, but the British counter-attacked his flank with their armoured and mobile units, and after heavy fighting the enemy withdrew, leaving the El Alamein positions intact. Although they had suffered the loss of over 80,000 men, the 8th Army were still unbeaten. Time was to prove that this was the farthest east and the



OPPOSING COMMANDERS IN LIBYAN STRUGGLE

The top photograph, of Field-Marschals Karl Kesselring (Luftwaffe) and Erich Rommel (Afrika Korps), was taken in June 1942 when the Axis armies were at the zenith of their success—having advanced far into Egypt. The other photograph shows General Sir Claude Auchinleck watching British troops withdrawing from Mersa Matruh. After taking over from Ritchie, General Auchinleck constantly toured the battle area.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; Associated Press

nearest to the Nile Valley that the Afrika Korps and its Italian auxiliaries were to reach.

Through July the communiqués were chiefly concerned with local offensives made by the 8th Army, resulting in the capture of the Tel el Eisa ridge in the northern sector of the now rapidly stabilizing front and the Ruweisat ridge to the south.

During August there was patrol activity and artillery exchanges, but until the end of the month the lull continued. Then, at 2 a.m. on

Rommel Attacks El Heimemat August 31, the Afrika Korps attacked the 8th Army's positions in the neighbourhood

of El Heimemat, a little 200-ft.-high peak on the edge of the Qattara Depression. For several days fighting continued; but, having made no real progress, and being hard pressed by British armoured and mobile forces, Rommel started his withdrawal on September 4. Then it was given out in Germany that his offensive had been merely a reconnaissance in force. Yet, as Cairo pointed out, the entire Afrika Korps, comprising the 90th Light Division and two Panzer divisions, and a large part of the Italian 20th Motorized Corps, had been flung into the battle. That the offensive had not succeeded was largely due to the fierceness of the Allied air attack. German prisoners admitted that shortly before the offensive Rommel had told them that they would soon be in Cairo.

Some months later, in Parliament, Mr. Churchill told the story of the "American tanks, the admirable Shermans" which had gone to reinforce the 8th Army. On the dark day that the news came of the fall of Tobruk the

Premier was with President Roosevelt in the White House. The President took a large number of the Shermans—"their very best tanks, just coming out of the factories"—back from the

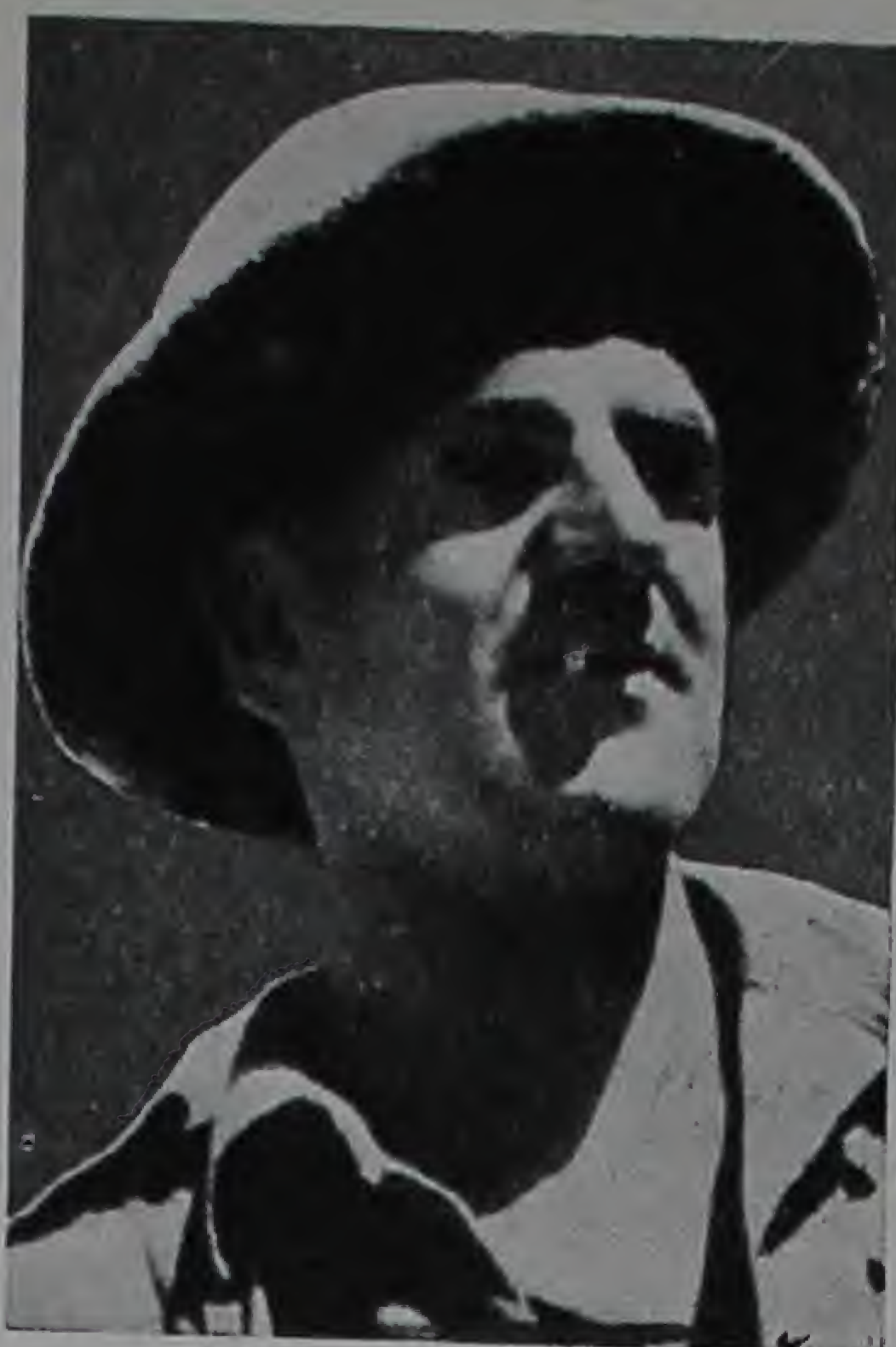
American troops to whom they had just been delivered. Placed on board ship in the early days of July, they sailed direct to

Suez under American escort. The President also sent a large number of the 105-mm. self-propelled guns. One ship in the precious

convoy was sunk, but immediately, without being asked, the United States replaced it with another ship carrying an equal number of these weapons.

Tobruk was raided on the night of September 13 by a British Combined Operations force; and on the same night desert forces of the 8th Army, having penetrated some hundreds of miles within the enemy lines, raided

Benghazi and Barce, destroying many Axis aircraft on the ground and inflicting severe casualties on enemy personnel and motor transport. Then on the night of September 15 Jalo oasis, in the desert, more than 200 miles south of Benghazi, was successfully raided. All the forces engaged in these daring thrusts returned safely to their bases. On September 30 British infantry



Sergt. KEITH ELLIOT, V.C.

Fifth New Zealander to win the V.C. in the present war. Awarded for outstanding personal courage and fearless leadership in desert fighting near Ruweisat on July 15, 1942.

He was wounded four times.



Pte. A. H. WAKENSHAW, V.C.

Near Mersa Matruh on June 27, 1942, he loaded and fired his 2-pounder anti-tank gun, although his left arm had been blown off, and disabled a German mobile gun before being killed by a direct hit.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright; G.P.U.

made a limited advance in the central sector of the Alamein front, and the local gains were consolidated. Then once again followed from Cairo a series of "No change" bulletins.

But changes, great changes, were in the offing. Since August 18 General the Hon. Sir H. R. L. G. Alexander had been Commander-in-Chief Middle East, in succession to General Auchinleck, while General Ritchie's place as Commander of the 8th Army was now taken by Lieut.-General B. L. Montgomery; these appointments were among the direct results of Mr. Churchill's visit to Cairo, itself due to his being "far from satisfied with the conditions reported to prevail in the 8th Army." It had been intended that Ritchie's successor should be Lt.-Gen. W. H. E. Gott, but he had been killed on the way to Cairo a few days before when the plane in which he was a passenger was shot down by enemy aircraft. Maj.-Gen. H. Lumsden became commander of the 10th Army Corps.

Changes in British Command

MR. WINSTON CHURCHILL SURVEYS EGYPTIAN BATTLEFRONT

In August 1942, on his way to Moscow and again on his return journey, the British Premier made a stay in Egypt, where he visited forward areas of the Eighth Army and held military conferences. Here he is seen with (left) General Sir H. R. L. G. Alexander, newly appointed C.-in-C. Middle East, and (right) General Montgomery, G.O.C. Eighth Army.

Photo British Official: Crown Copyright



New men were now at the helm, with new opportunities; vast reinforcements and vast supplies of weapons of the very latest description were being poured into Egypt. As the October days passed there was intense activity in the narrowing arm of desert that ended at Alamein. On October 23, to the tune of a terrific barrage, the 8th Army scrambled out of its trenches and set out on the long but unbrokenly successful trail which was to end in triumph a little over six months later at the gates of Tunis.

OPERATIONS IN MADAGASCAR: MAY 5 TO NOVEMBER 5, 1942

Early in 1942 it became clear that there was a considerable risk of Japanese forces taking possession of Madagascar; in consequence, the Allies decided to forestall this possibility by landing troops and establishing control of the island. Here is the story of the first operations, in May 1942, and those which subsequently became necessary in September and resulted in the complete occupation

IT was in February 1942, when Japan was overrunning Malaya, the Philippines and the East Indies and threatening Burma and India and Australia, that Britain planned an expedition to secure Madagascar. The ultimate fate of this strategically vital island if it were left under the administration of the weak and vacillating government of Vichy France, and taking into consideration Japan's territorial ambitions, was certain: it would fall to Japan.

Madagascar (see map in page 2244) is 900 miles long, 350 miles across at its widest part and, including the Comoro islands which are under the same administration, comprises an area of about 240,000 sq. miles. Larger than France itself and four times the size of England and Wales, it is the third largest island in the world. The Mozambique Channel separates it from the mainland of Africa. With its wild ruggedness, its inhospitable coasts fringed with reefs and sandbanks, its wide range of climate, it is no soldiers' paradise. Its peoples, numbering 3,798,000, and including 25,000 French and assimilated French and 14,000 foreigners, are chiefly Malagasy, the collective denomination of some 18 tribes. All come under the jurisdiction of the Governor-General, who in early 1942 was M. Annet, a personality strongly pro-Vichy.

In mid-February, 1942, Allied anxiety regarding the future status of the island was evidenced by conversations between Mr. Sumner Welles and the Vichy representative in Washington, M. Henri-Haye, following reports that the French administration in Madagascar was prepared to allow the Japanese to establish themselves there. M. Henri-Haye stated that his Government "had decided to protect the island against any incursion." A similar assurance was given by Vichy to Admiral Leahy (American Ambassador) on March 10.

Madagascar's strategic importance was obvious. It possessed in Diego Suarez one of the finest harbours in the world, and a fortified naval station.

There were also a number of deep inshore anchorages at Tamatave, Majunga, Tulear, Nossi-Bé and Mayotte (the last in the near-by Comoro Islands), and some 150 airfields and landing grounds. Madagascar lay across the United Nations' sea communications with Egypt and the Eighth and Ninth Armies, with India, China, Ceylon and Russia (via Persia). Japanese occupation, once secured, would have given the enemy a large and invaluable base from which to attack and possibly disrupt supplies travelling by these routes. Indeed, if this risk had been allowed to materialize, such attacks could conceivably have cut Allied communications altogether in this vital part of the globe. In Japanese hands Madagascar would have constituted a powerful and ever growing threat both to South Africa and to India.

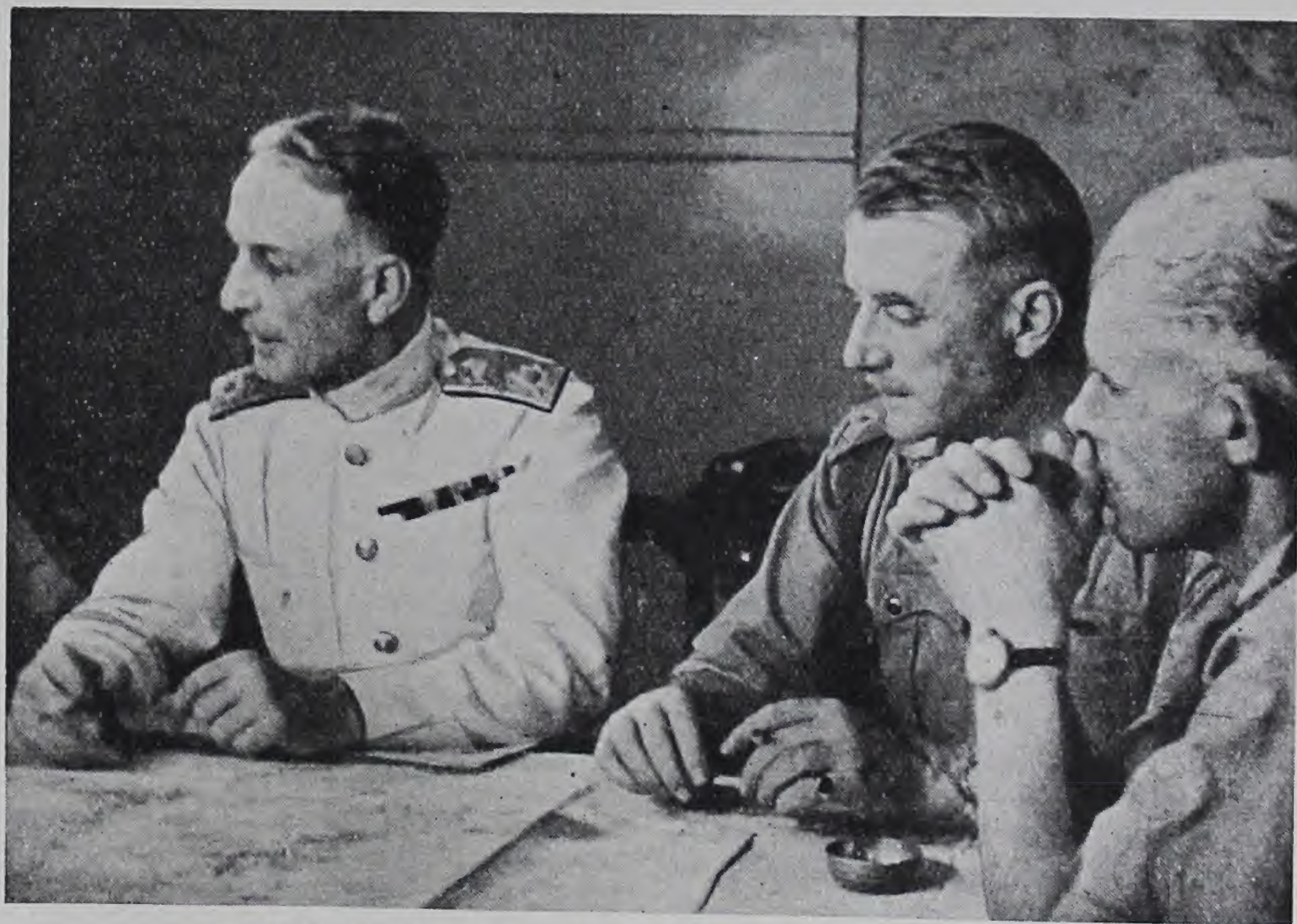
Politically as well as strategically Allied occupation of Madagascar was a necessity. So obvious was this move that even calm and imperturbable

Mr. Churchill amusingly confessed to a feeling of great anxiety about Allied intentions in his speech of May 10, 1942

"While the troops were at sea," he said, "I must tell you that I felt a shiver every time I saw the word 'Madagascar' in the newspapers. All these articles with diagrams and maps, showing how very important it was for us to take Madagascar and forestall the Japanese and be there first for once, as they say, filled me with apprehension. . . ."

As Mr. Churchill also stated in his speech, it was the feeble and dishonourable drifting or connivance by Vichy in Indo-China that had injured the Allied cause so much (permitting a land attack to be launched on Malaya via Indo-China and Thailand), a recurrence of which in Madagascar might easily have had fatal consequences for the Allies.

Here then was the strategic and political background to the British occupation of the island. The expedition comprised (according to the official announcement) a naval force of two cruisers, four destroyers, troop transports and



LEADERS OF THE MADAGASCAR EXPEDITION

Rear-Admiral E. N. Syfret, R.N. (left), commanded the British Naval forces which took part in the assault on Diego Suarez on May 5, 1942. Later in the year he was appointed Acting Vice-Admiral and advanced from C.B. to K.C.B. The leader of our land forces was Maj.-General R. G. Sturgess, Royal Marines (centre), who was created C.B. in 1942.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright



CAPTURE OF DIEGO SUAREZ, MAY 5-7, 1942

This map shows the points of landing on the west coast on May 5, and the surprise attack by 50 Royal Marines from the battleship 'Ramillies' at 8 p.m. on the 6th, which took the French defences in the rear. Antsirane surrendered at 1 a.m. on May 7, and the harbour forts an hour later; in the afternoon the batteries at Orangea followed suit. The French submarine 'Le Héros' and the sloop 'D'Entrecasteaux' were sunk in Diego Suarez harbour. Distance between Ambararata and Diego Suarez is about 13 miles; from Raihabe to Antsirane about 17 miles.

Drawn by E. G. Lambert; by courtesy of "The Sphere"

invasion craft, with air support from the aircraft-carriers "Illustrious" and "Indomitable," all under the command of Rear-Admiral E. N. Syfret, and a military force commanded by Major-Gen. R. G. Sturges, C.B. (Royal Marines). Later the Admiralty allowed it to be stated that the battleship "Ramillies" took part. The force arrived at Courrier Bay in the extreme north of the island in the early hours of May 5, 1942. At 4.30 a.m. the assault began according to plan. The first news of this landing was given in a joint Admiralty and War Office communiqué on the same morning, and stated that the Governor-General of Madagascar, M. Annet, had rejected a British seven-hour ultimatum and had announced his intention to fight to the end.

Vichy and Axis reaction followed familiar lines. Berlin audaciously described it as a "breach of international law." Tokyo naïvely asserted that Japan had never had any intention of occupying Madagascar; while Pétain, denouncing this latest example of "British aggression," sent a message to M. Annet urging resistance in Madagascar's "tragic hour." Admiral Darlan also sent a message to the Vichy forces in the island, declaring that once again the British, instead of fighting their

enemies, sought the easiest path of attacking a French colony. "Fight to the limit of your possibilities," he said, "and make the British pay dearly for their act of highway robbery. . . ."

The same day (May 5, 1942) America signified her approval of Britain's action in a statement by the U.S. State Dept., and declared that the United States and Great Britain were in accord that Madagascar would be restored to France after the war or at any time that the occupation of the island was no longer essential to the common cause of the United Nations. Three days later the British Foreign Office issued the following statement:

"Simultaneously with the first landing of British troops at Courrier Bay, and long before any active resistance was encountered the British force commanders, on the instructions of H.M. Government, made the following proposals to the French authorities in Madagascar in return for their cooperation and in order to avoid bloodshed.

They informed the authorities that Madagascar would remain French and, after the war, be restored to French sovereignty. They further stated that if members of the civil and military organizations declared their intentions to cooperate with the United Nations, their salaries and pensions would be provided from funds to be made available for that specific purpose.

A guarantee of repatriation was given to

civil and military personnel who did not wish to cooperate with the United Nations and could claim the right to reside in Metropolitan France. Repatriation would take place when ships were available.

The force commanders also announced the intention of the United Nations not only to restore their trade with the island, but to extend to Madagascar every economic benefit accorded to French territories which had already opted for the Allies.

A condition laid down by the commanders was that no destruction of civil and military installations, war stores, armaments, and other supplies must be carried out by the French on the island."

In Allied countries and throughout the Empire Britain's preventive action was warmly welcomed.

The attack, as ingeniously planned as it was brilliantly carried out, envisaged a combined three-phase assault by the Army and the Naval Forces, with the support of the Fleet Air Arm. (The assault landing craft were under the command of Captain G. A. Garnons-Williams, D.S.C., R.N., of the Combined Operations Command.) The assault revealed the military value of our new tactics of "combined operations," as then hardly tested on a large scale. Having cleared the sea approaches of the anticipated mines, the ships moved in, though not without the loss of H.M. corvette "Auricula" (Lieut.-Cmdr. S. L. Maybury), with a small number of casualties. At 4.30 a.m. No. 5 Commando and a company of the East Lancashires landed at Courrier Bay. Overpowering the coast-defence battery at Windsor Castle, they

**Brilliant and
Ingenious
Attack**

proceeded with great dash and vigour to the town of Diego Suarez, which fell to them just after 4 p.m.

Meanwhile two diversionary attacks (one air and one naval) had been completed successfully. The aircraft carriers "Illustrious" and "Indomitable" carried five types of aircraft: Swordfish and Albacore torpedo-bomber-reconnaissance two-three-seater aircraft, Fulmar two-seater fighters, and Martlet and Sea Hurricane single-seat fighters. This tactically compact sea/air force provided air cover for the landing force.

The airport of Antsirane was attacked at dawn on the first day. Four aircraft that escaped this assault were later shot down by Fleet Air Arm fighter patrols.

With torpedoes, bombs, and machine-guns the British naval aircraft attacked a sloop, a submarine, and an armed merchant ship off Antsirane; the sloop escaped that day, but was set on fire and sunk next morning. The aircraft bombed a shore gun position, and dropped leaflets demanding the surrender of other shore batteries and the town of Antsirane, and made a diversionary parachute attack.

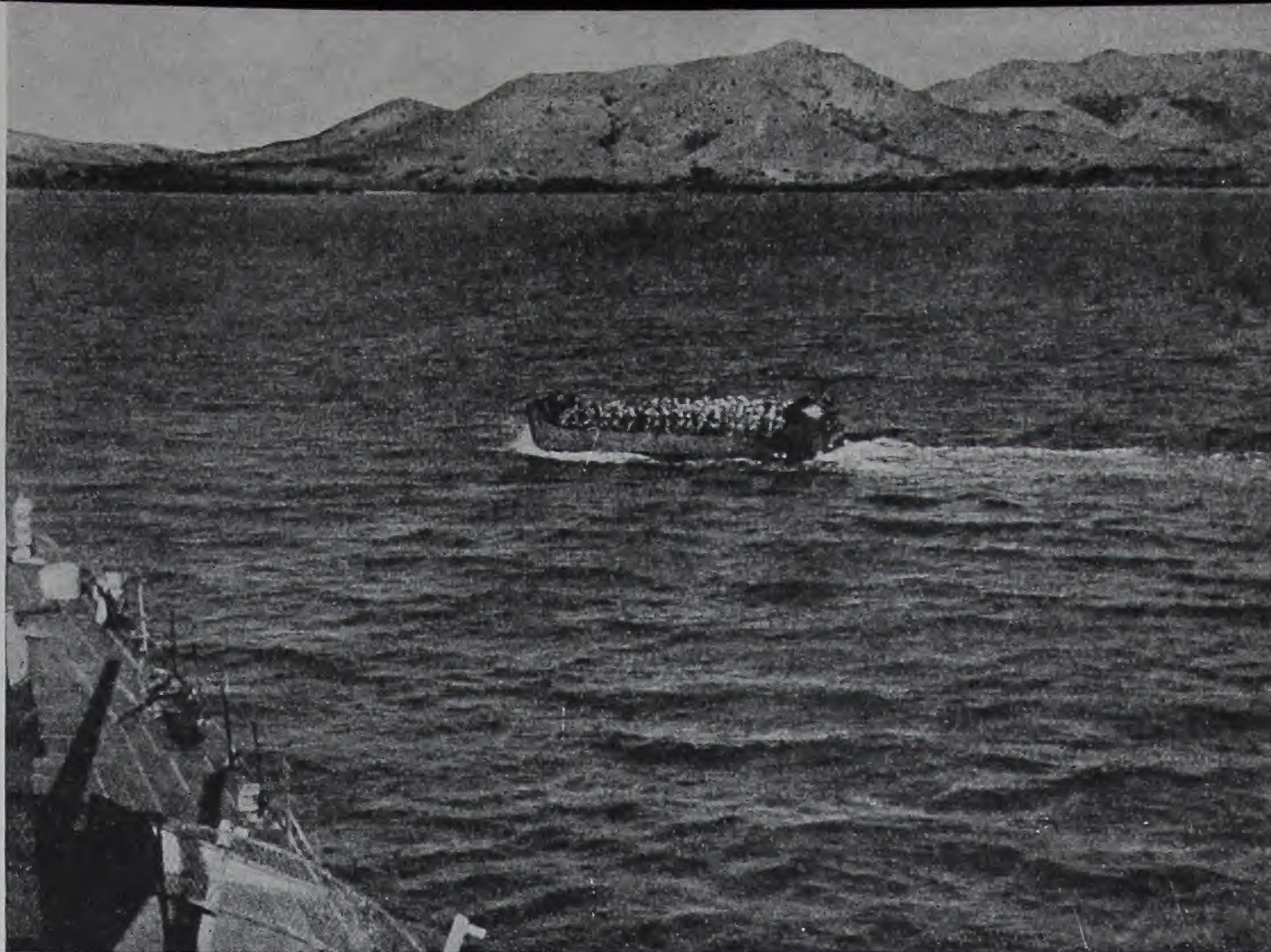
Complete air mastery was established, and this materially aided the speedy capture of the important port of Diego Suarez and the creation of the first bridgehead on the island of Madagascar—for Antsirane, facing Diego Suarez across a narrow channel, was the decisive strategic key to the area concerned.

The Naval diversion had started at about 4.40 a.m. by the firing of smoke and star shells at the most probable landing place on the E. coast, which was Ambodivahibe Bay, S.E. of Antsirane.

South of Courrier Bay the main forces had by this time effected a successful landing (in Ambararata Bay), experiencing little opposition. These forces—the assault brigade—comprised the East and South Lancashire Regiments, the Royal Welch Fusiliers and the Royal Scots Fusiliers. Landing at three different points, they encountered considerable operational difficulties, caused by a heavy swell, in getting the armoured vehicles and tanks ashore.

Having secured the beaches, the assault brigade pressed forward along the road to Antsirane, some 20 miles away to the east, supported by Bren-gun

carriers and tanks and
On to dragging their stores
Antsirane and ammunition in
handcarts. Opposition encountered about 11 a.m. was overcome by two companies of infantry supported by howitzers and three tanks. Towards mid-day other drawbacks made themselves felt in the form of exhausting heat, clouds of dust, and a multitude of insects. The roads, too, were little more than blind tracks, with dense



BRITISH LANDING CRAFT APPROACHES DIEGO SUAREZ

The assault on Diego Suarez began at 4.30 a.m. on May 5, 1942. A seven-hour ultimatum was tendered to M. Annet, the Governor-General, but he elected to 'fight to the end.' Resistance ceased, however, on May 7 and Admiral Syfret was able to take his warships into the fine harbour. Top, one of the British landing parties nearing the shore; below, men of No. 5 Commando resting in a street at Diego Suarez after their overland dash to occupy the town.

Photos, Keystone; L.N.A.



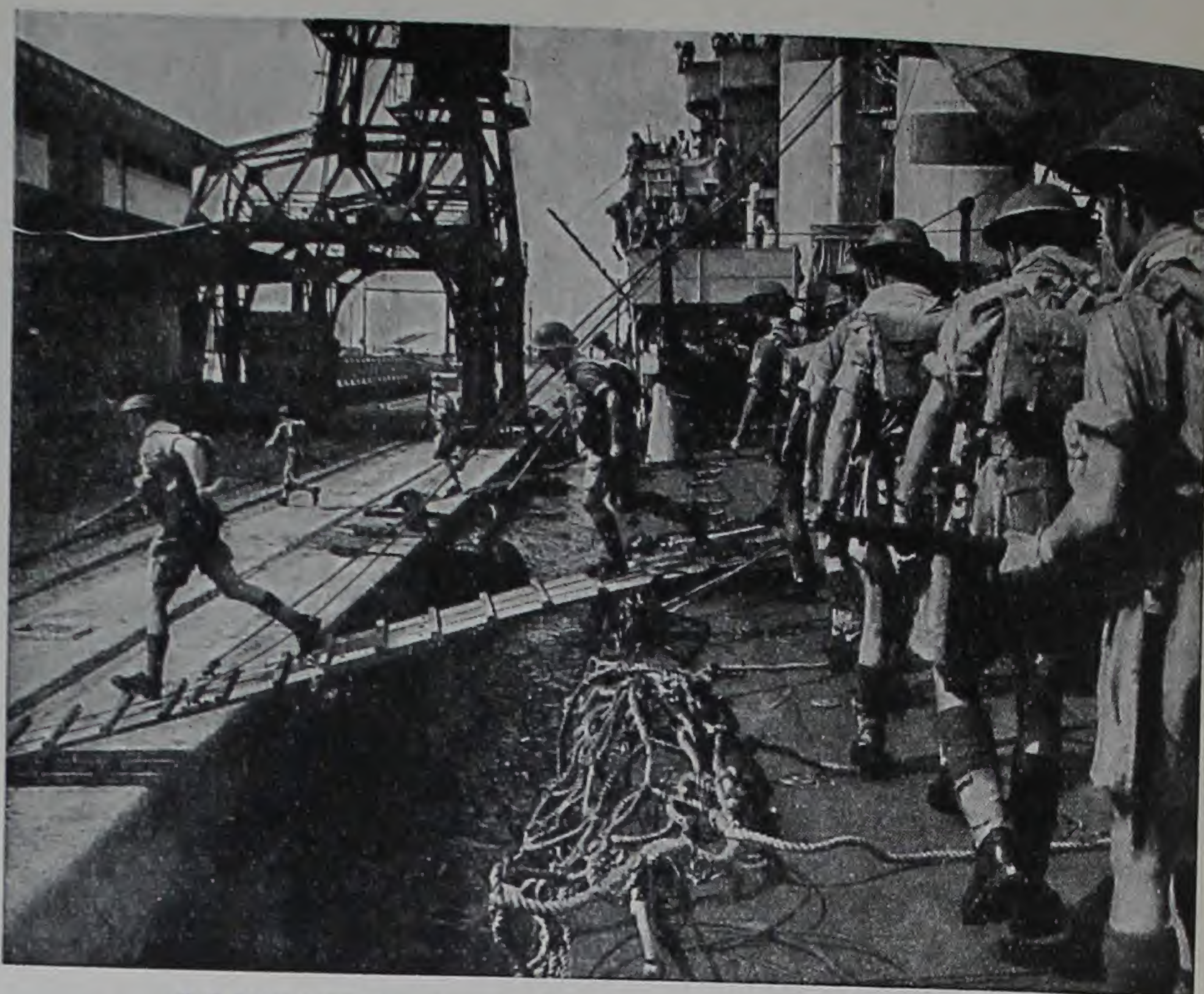
foliage each side shutting out any view of the countryside. After a few hours' rest the main advance continued. After some slight resistance, our troops found themselves under severe fire from concealed French 75s and machine-guns at the main positions of the Vichy forces, some three miles from Antsirane. This, combined with an anti-tank ditch and the approach of nightfall, compelled our troops to halt, with the issue undecided.

Dawn the next morning (May 6) saw the launching of our next attack on a three-battalion front, the aim now being the storming of the main positions and the capture of Antsirane. Resistance here was so stiff that little headway was made, although the East Lancashire Regiment gained an important tactical success which was not known at British H.Q. until it was too late to exploit it. Indeed, the total "disappearance" of this regiment gave rise for a time to the

gravest concern regarding its safety! Despite a strong frontal attack, numerous difficulties made it essential to await the arrival of the support brigade—the incomplete observation for our guns due to smoke from innumerable bush fires; the inadequacy of our fire-power to knock out enemy guns, which were excellently sited; and the heat and the dust, to which the British troops were not yet accustomed. This brigade comprised part of the Royal Scots Fusiliers, the Northamptonshire Regiment and the Seaforth Highlanders. Working under hazardous and exhausting conditions, these troops had meanwhile landed—on the same beaches—with their stores, equipment, tanks and guns, and during the day had caught up with the assault brigade.

A supplementary plan was now extemporized, in which a night assault was to begin at 8.30, preceded by artillery and air bombardment. A

diversionary attack by Marines' 50 Royal Marines from H.M.S. "Ramillies" was planned at the rear of the town. Dead on time the main attack was launched. By 11 p.m. our forces had penetrated undetected between the two forts guarding Antsirane and had reached a position some 1,800 yards beyond the tank ditch and the trench system. This success they announced by firing rockets. They were followed quickly and closely by the rest of the forces,



OCCUPATION OF TAMATAVE, SEPTEMBER 18, 1942

After a British envoy, sent ashore at Tamatave to secure a peaceful occupation of this, Madagascar's principal port, was fired upon, our Naval forces directed a few shells at the main defences. This brought about a speedy surrender. Above, British troops disembarking from a destroyer afterwards.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

which pressed forward to reach the main harbour, meeting little opposition. By 1 a.m. (May 7) Antsirane had fallen.

Much of the credit for this brilliant operation must go to the 50 "sea-soldiers" detailed to make the diversionary attack. With them on board

the destroyer "Anthony" made the circuit of the northern tip of Madagascar, and then dashed into Antsirane harbour at 8 o'clock, in pitch darkness, and under extremely heavy gunfire which she returned. Arriving alongside a wharf, the Marines tumbled ashore. Within half an hour they were in possession of many strategic points, including the strongly held barracks and the magazine. They sustained one casualty. The Marines are said to have created a "disturbance in the town out of all proportion to their numbers." Their swift success prevented heavy street fighting which might have caused serious damage and heavy losses.

Faced with the collapse of Antsirane, Fort Caimans and Fort Bellevue surrendered at 2 p.m., followed in the afternoon by the coast-defence batteries on the Orangea peninsula (see map, p. 2240). It was a triumphant moment when, a little

Capture of Diego Suarez

later, Admiral Syfret's warships steamed majestically into Diego Suarez harbour. Thus, at an expense of only 500 casualties (fewer than 100 of whom were killed), one corvette and a few naval planes, Britain secured Diego Suarez and all the peninsula which strategically goes with the naval base. French losses in manpower, according to Colonel Cerbon, Vichy officer commanding the French forces in this area, were 650 casualties, of which 150 represented men killed.



AFTER THE SURRENDER OF MAJUNGA

In September it became clear that nothing but the complete occupation of Madagascar would put a stop to opposition and intrigues inspired by Vichy. So on the 10th British forces landed at three points on the west coast. No opposition was met with at Morondava. At Majunga, after some resistance, the town surrendered; a French officer is seen driving round the streets with the white flag.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

The Allies' hope that their successful occupation of the naval base of Diego Suarez would bring about the cessation of French resistance elsewhere on Madagascar was foredoomed to failure. That the task of occupying the entire island was forced reluctantly on the Allies was made clear by a British Government announcement on September 10, 1942. This stated that since the Vichy attitude made it clear that

Further Measures Necessary their essential requirements could not be achieved by peaceful means, further military operations would have to be undertaken on the island. It also reiterated many of the statements made by the Foreign Office on May 8. This new policy received the instant approval of the United States.

Following the storming of Diego Suarez there had been a comparative lull in military operations for some weeks, British action taking mainly the form of air reconnaissance and the consolidation of positions. On July 9 Mayotte, the principal island of the Comoro group some 200 miles west of Diego Suarez, was secured by British Commandos supported by detachments of the Royal Marines and East African Rifles. Mayotte guarded the north end of the Mozambique Channel, through which passed Allied convoys to the Middle East and Persia (for Russia).

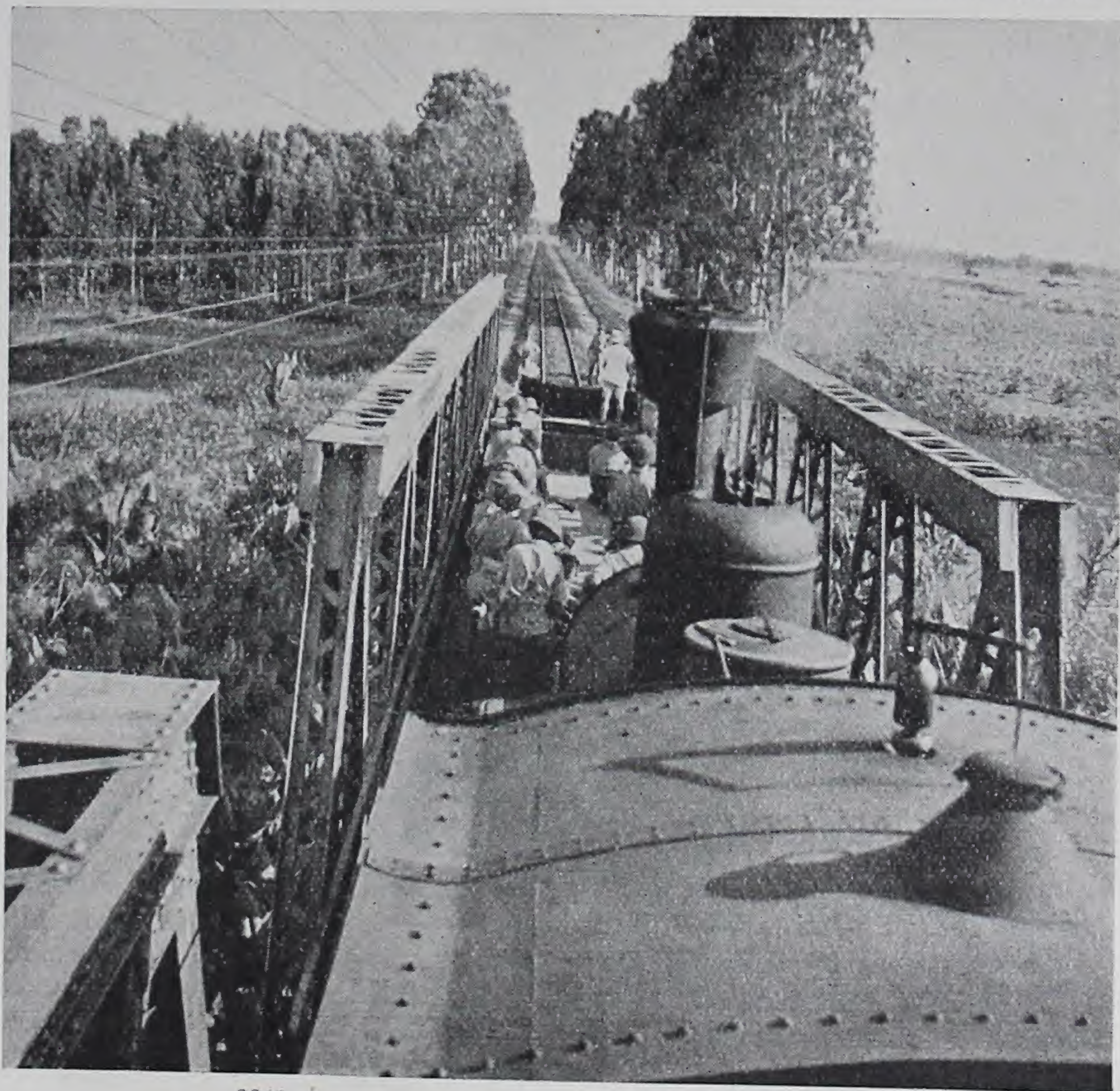
An examination of the next phase of British strategy (designed to secure the occupation of all the island) reveals that its fundamental conceptions were based on a model not dissimilar to the Japanese methods which had achieved so much for the enemy in Malaya. In broad outline British strategy took the form of a two-pronged advance down the coasts from Diego Suarez, intended primarily to cover the flanks of bigger operations farther south. Amphibious operations, again including the use of Commando units, were planned to seize all important ports, and then to thrust inland to occupy towns and points of strategical value. On September 10, 1942, this phase of the offensive began with widespread landings on the west coast. The forces, comprising British, South and East African troops under the command of Gen. Sir William Platt, and supported by the South African Air Force, took the island of Nossi-Bé in the north, occupied Majunga, made an unopposed landing at Morondava (some 690 miles south of Diego Suarez), and thence began an advance inland towards Mahabo, on the Morondava-Ambositra road. Simultaneously troops at Diego Suarez moved southward towards Ambanja

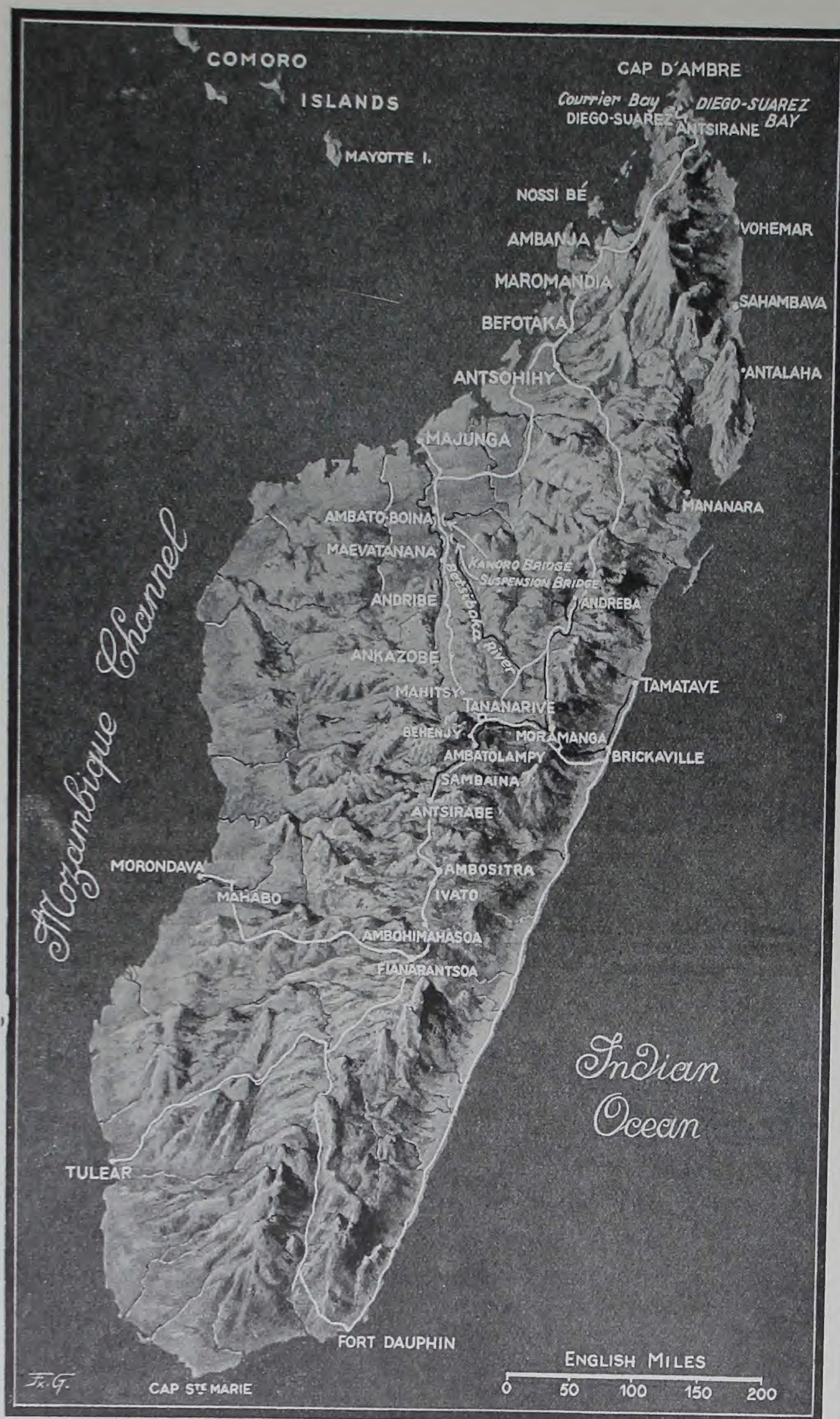


BRITISH SAPPERS RESTORE COMMUNICATIONS

The advance of our columns from Tamatave to Tananarive, the capital of Madagascar, was much hampered by demolitions and road blocks. Top, near Brickaville, a blown-up railway bridge over the Vohitra river meant the use of a ferry till the crossing was restored; a light engine being taken across. Below, sappers in the leading truck examine another bridge between Tamatave and Brickaville.

Photos, British Official : Crown Copyright





BRITISH OPERATIONS AGAINST MADAGASCAR, MAY-SEPT., 1942

On May 5 a combined force attacked Diego Suarez (see special map in p. 2240), which was occupied on the 7th. In September it became necessary to control the entire island, and British forces landed at Majunga and Morondava (Sept. 10). Another British force landed at Tamatave on the 18th. Tananarive, the capital, was taken by troops from Majunga on the 23rd. South Africans landed at Tulear, in the south, on Sept. 29 and drove north-eastwards. On November 5, at the request of the Governor-General, M. Annet, an armistice was signed.

Specially drawn for THE SECOND GREAT WAR by Félix Gardon

on the west coast, and to Vohemar on the east coast.

By September 12 the troops advancing down the west coast had occupied Ambanja, despite bridge demolitions and minor opposition. A

successful landing in the Maromandia area a few days later, combined with a further advance by the troops against stiffer opposition, sufficed to end all resistance between these places. Hemmed in, the Vichy forces sur-

rendered. From here, however, the advance was slowed up by extensive demolitions and road blocks, but nevertheless the British forces had entered Befotaka by September 21. Next day saw the completion of the major task assigned to them when, occupying Antsohihy, they linked up with a column which had proceeded north from Majunga, thereby controlling the Diego Suarez-Majunga road.

On the east coast British troops within two days had occupied Vohemar, and were advancing southward. Although opposition was relatively slight the enemy's delaying actions, the heavy rains, and topographical difficulties restricted the speed of our troops, so that Sahambava, some 150 miles south of Diego Suarez, was not occupied until September 21, and Antalaha on the 23rd.

The landing at Morondava—the speed and effectiveness of which took the enemy completely by surprise—was mainly designed as a diversionary attack. No opposition was encountered and not a shot was fired. Pushing inland, within a few days Mahabo, on the road to Ambositra, had been occupied by South African troops.

Meanwhile further troops were being speedily landed at Majunga, which No. 5 Commando had taken within an hour. Within a few hours of the



SERGEANT WALASI, M.M.

At a parade in Tananarive Lieut.-General Sir William Platt (left), G.O.C. British Forces, decorated three African askaris with the Military Medal for gallantry during the advance on the Madagascan capital. Here Sergeant Walasi, of the Nyasaland Battalion, is receiving the medal.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

capture of the port—the second largest in Madagascar—armoured cars were racing inland along the metalled road towards the capital, Tananarive. Kanoro Bridge, nearly 100 miles south of Majunga, was reached the same evening (September 10). But the first real objective was the 1,600-foot suspension bridge over the Betsiboka river, about 114 miles from the capital. Finding that the central span had been dropped into the water by cutting the cables, our forces immediately joined battle with the defenders, killing ten and capturing 47 against British casualties of only four wounded; the bridge was taken. On September 13 Maevatanana fell. Three days later the Governor-General, M. Annet, announced that he was sending plenipotentiaries to the British Commander to “find means by which we can cease fighting with honour,” and to arrange for negotiations leading to an armistice. Owing, it was thought, to the intervention of Vichy at German dictation, the British terms for an armistice were rejected as “unacceptable” the next day (September 17). The occupation of Andribe, on the Majunga–Tananarive road, took place the same day.

From this point events moved rapidly. Following the rejection of the British terms, on September 18 a strong British force arrived off Tamatave, Madagascar’s largest port and connected with the capital by rail and road. Its capture, described by James Cooper, Daily Express correspondent on the spot, as a “conversation piece,” took only three minutes. At



DESTROYERS COVERED THE SEPTEMBER LANDINGS

Early in September 1942, British, South African and East African forces landed at a number of points on the west coast of Madagascar to secure control of the island. Here is the scene on one of the British destroyers as her 4.7-inch guns fire at a shore target during the operations.

Photo, Central Press

5 a.m. the invading force had rounded the great reef near the port. A “conversation” (i.e., an exchange of messages) then took place, during which it rapidly became evident that the Governor of the town, M. Lenne, was merely playing for time. The end of the “conversation” ran thus:

Naval Commander (6.40 a.m.): “If you compel me to bombard, hoist a white flag on Government House and on Tanio Point lighthouse when you feel you can surrender with honour.”

M. Lenne: No reply.

Naval Commander (6.58 a.m.): “Do you require extension of time limit? Otherwise will open fire at 7.30.”

M. Lenne (7.5 a.m.): “Yes, we require extension of time.”

Naval Commander (7.15 a.m.): “I am sending naval envoy in boat. If you fire on him I shall bombard.”

Here the story is completed by the correspondent referred to above:

“The test came at 7.35, when the envoy boat left. Four hundred yards from the shore they found trouble. I saw tracer bullets splash near the boat, which was unarmed. The captain and the crew ducked and turned the boat round. The naval commander shouted, ‘Here we go!’ That was at 7.48. We gave the motor-launch time to get to safety, and at 7.52 we opened fire. Inside three minutes white flags were hoisted, and at 8.2 women were cycling along the promenade again.”

By 9.4 the Union Jack flew from the Tanio flagstaff, Tamatave was taken, and a new and formidable threat to Tananarive was shaping itself.

In Tamatave the British troops were received with great friendliness and, thanks to the speed with which the town was captured, found the docks, airport and railway intact. Taking full advantage

**Advance
to the
Capital**

of this diversion, the British troops on the Majunga–Tananarive road continued their advance towards the capital. Fighting a successful engagement with Vichy forces south of Andribe, by September 21 they had occupied Ankazobe. The fall of this important town coincided with that of Brickaville, the road and rail junction between Tamatave and the capital. All the 18 bridges between Tamatave and Brickaville had to be rebuilt before our men could advance. On the 23rd the village of Mahitsy, 15 miles from Tananarive, was taken by the Imperial troops advancing from the north.

The next stage, the capture of



ROYAL AIR FORCE LYSANDERS OVER MADAGASCAR

Much of the success of the British campaign was due to tireless and many-sided operations of a flight of R.A.F. Lysanders. In the initial stages they carried out reconnaissance and anti-submarine patrols; later, during the southern advance, they gave close-bombing support.

Photo, British Official: Crown Copyright

Tananarive, was not expected to be accomplished easily. On a 4,000-foot plateau, to which the road rises through difficult country in 26 miles, Tananarive was situated in the best defended area of the island. Nevertheless, despite strong resistance, it was taken on September 23, our troops (the Majunga contingent) entering the city to the cheers of the people. Few important Vichy officials were captured, the majority of them, including M. Annet, having fled before the arrival of our troops. Immediately on his arrival Gen. Platt issued a seven-point proclamation:

east from the capital made contact with the column advancing from Brickaville, thus securing control of the Tananarive-Tamatave railway. Another force advancing south-west occupied Behenjy. In the morning of the same day amphibious South African forces had landed at Tulear, in the south-west of the island. It was taken without firing a shot. The biggest battle of the whole campaign, however, had yet to be fought. Our troops, advancing from Behenjy, had occupied both Sambaina and Antsirabe meeting negligible resistance. Farther south these troops had linked up with others who

movements during the hours of darkness. In the early hours of October 19, despite heavy rain, our men were guarding all roads and positions round the defenders.

Zero hour came, and with it a mist which blanketed the whole countryside.

In the ensuing confusion of our attack the Vichy forces fled, but many found themselves surrounded and surrendered. Some 800 prisoners were taken here, including a brigade commander and his staff. The end was now near. There remained Fianarantsoa as the only important town left in Vichy hands. On October 29 this, too, was taken, though not before a hard battle had been fought in which our troops took some 440 prisoners. M. Annet and General Guillemet, commander of the Vichy forces, who had been using Fianarantsoa as their H.Q., fled southwards. At 2 p.m. on November 5, an armistice—requested by M. Annet—was signed between the British and the Vichy military authorities.

It had been a strange campaign. Frequently it had been a war of spades rather than of rifles, with the local natives working hard for both sides—first for the Vichy forces and then for the British—destroying bridges, felling trees as road blocks, and then changing their allegiance as the enemy retreated and the British advanced. In different phases the campaign had been characterized by stages of unopposed progress or of mere token resistance, by brief and unexpected battles, by sudden and dramatic capitulations. Continual drawbacks were the poor communications, the pest of flies, tropic heat and soaking morning dews, and the ever-present threat of malaria.

It remained to restore to Madagascar the freedom and protection that was her right. On November 11 it was announced that General Paul Legentilhomme, Fighting French Commissioner for War, had been appointed High Commissioner for Madagascar. On December 14 an agreement was concluded in London between the British Government and the French National Committee whereby the provisional military administration of Madagascar set up after the British occupation was to come to an end upon the arrival there of the High Commissioner, when the necessary arrangements had been made for the re-establishment of the exercise of French sovereignty under his authority. In a statement at this time, General de Gaulle said that the agreement obliterated the consequences of "sad events which recently occurred in that territory."



FRENCH NATIONAL COMMITTEE TAKES OVER

On December 14, 1942, Britain signed an agreement with the French National Committee in London regarding the administration of Madagascar. The British occupation was to come to an end as soon as possible after the arrival there of General Legentilhomme (left), appointed High Commissioner on November 11. Centre, General de Gaulle signs the agreement; right, Mr. Anthony Eden, British Foreign Secretary.

Photo, Barra's

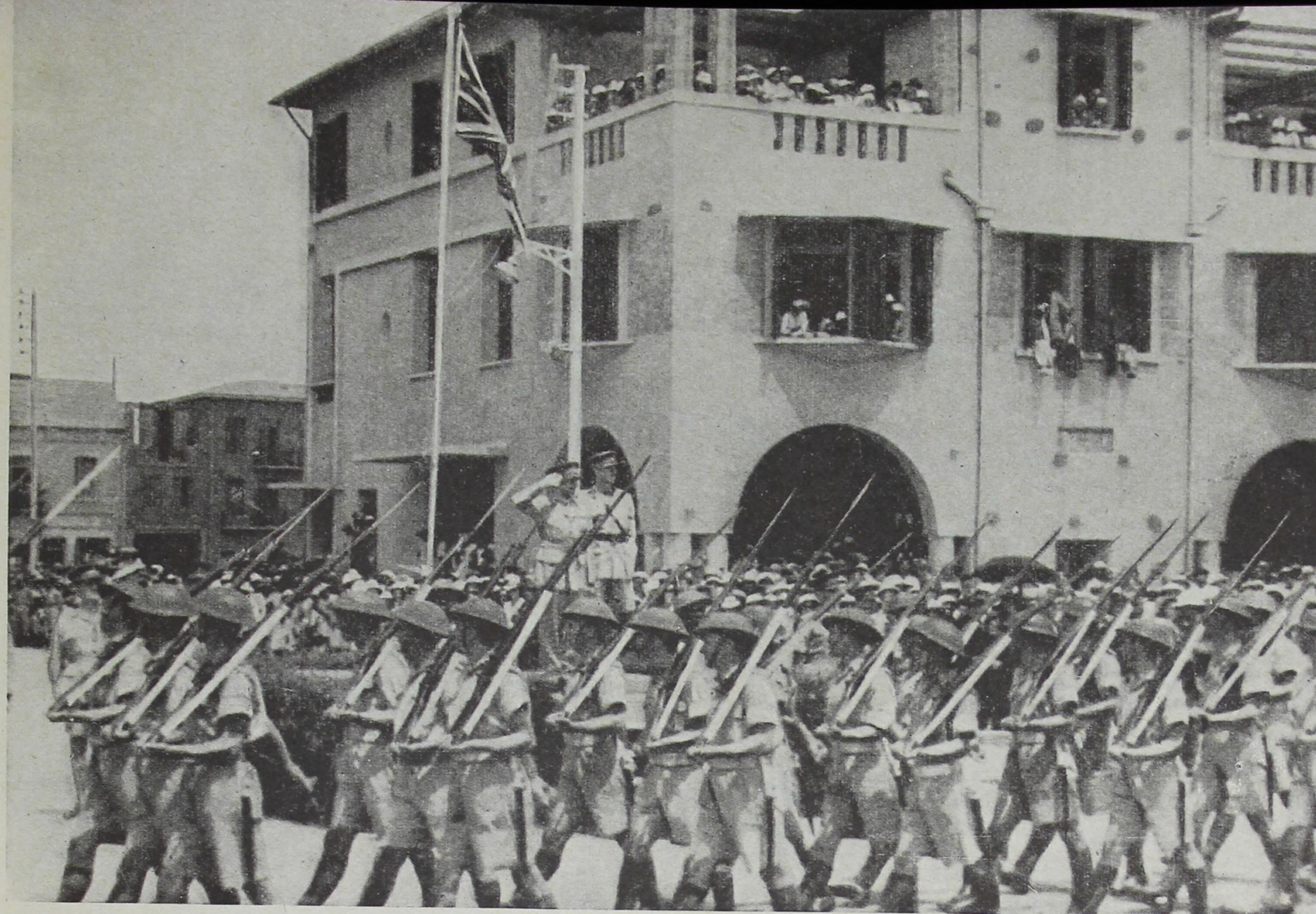
1. The establishment of military jurisdiction.
2. The British Command to be responsible for the maintenance of law and order and to respect local customs.
3. Local officials to remain at their posts under orders of the military authorities.
4. Crimes to be punished by military tribunals.
5. Local civil jurisdiction to continue, though temporarily suspended.
6. People to return to their normal occupations.
7. The French flag to continue to be flown in Tananarive.

On September 25 the Foreign Office in London announced that, though subject temporarily to military jurisdiction, French sovereignty over Madagascar would remain unaffected.

But the fight was not over. On September 29 British columns moving

had advanced 230 miles from Tamatave, thereby bringing nearly all the Madagascar railway system (over 450 miles) under British control. October 14 had seen the fall of Ambositra, after a stiff fight in which some 170 prisoners had been captured.

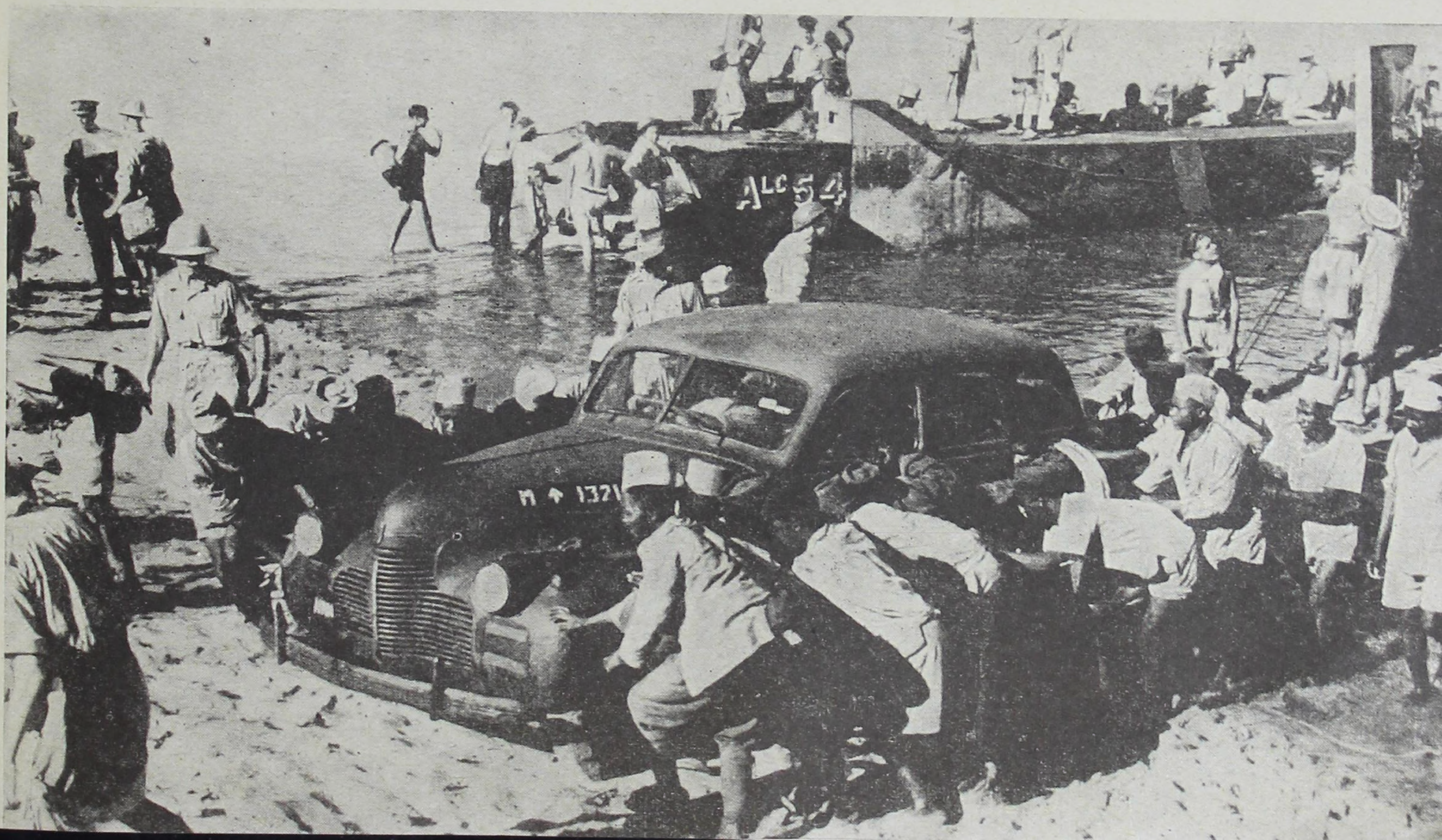
Then came the epic of the Ivato crossroads. The battlefield was a six-mile valley through a 5,000-foot plateau running from south of Ambositra to Ivato. Its rocky ridges and ravines were indeed a defenders' paradise. The usual spearhead tactics—that of following the road and using armoured cars flanked by infantry to nose out enemy-held positions—were deemed unsatisfactory here. While British artillery shelled the valley for two days other troops made encircling



BRITISH OCCUPATION OF MADAGASCAR'S CAPITAL

East African troops, supported by South African armoured cars and British artillery, entered Tananarive at 5 p.m. on September 23. At a parade later the G.O.C., Lieut.-General Sir William Platt, K.C.B., D.S.O., decorated three African askaris (see illus., p. 2244). He is seen above taking the salute. Below, landing transport at Majunga, occupied by British troops on September 10.

Photos, British Official: Crown Copyright





BRITISH COMMANDOS LAND AT MAJUNGA AND TAMATAVE

British forces landed at Majunga and Morondava, and also captured the island of Nossi Bé, on September 10, 1942. Below, men of No. 5 Commando leave a transport in assault craft for the attack on Majunga, which fell within an hour. Eight days later came the call to Tamatave to surrender. The British envoy was fired upon, but after a few shells from our warships there was little further opposition ; Commandos are seen at top rushing the beaches there.

Photos, British Official : Crown Copyright

